



Gc  
974.8  
C81h  
1359775

**GENEALOGY COLLECTION**





3 1833 01145 2452









Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015





Yours Truly, &c.  
Wm. M. Cornell



# THE HISTORY OF PENNSYLVANIA

*From the Earliest Discovery to the Present Time.*

INCLUDING

AN ACCOUNT OF THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS BY THE DUTCH, SWEDES, AND  
ENGLISH, AND OF THE COLONY OF WILLIAM PENN, HIS TREATY  
AND PACIFIC MEASURES WITH THE INDIANS;

AND THE

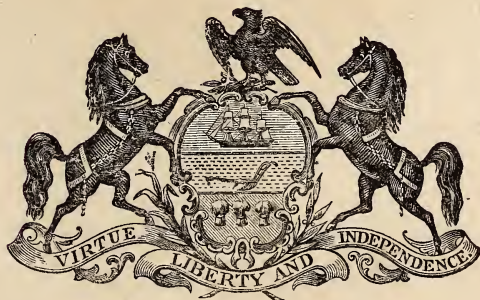
GRADUAL ADVANCEMENT OF THE STATE TO ITS PRESENT ASPECT  
OF OPULENCE, CULTURE, AND REFINEMENT.

BY

WILLIAM MASON CORNELL, D.D., LL.D.,

LATE MEMBER OF THE BOSTON SOCIETY OF NATURAL HISTORY; OF THE PENNSYLVANIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY; MEMBER AND LATE SECRETARY OF THE  
NEW-ENGLAND HISTORIC-GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY, ETC.

AUTHOR OF "LIFE OF ROBERT RAIKES," "LIFE OF HORACE GREELEY,"  
"MEMOIR OF CHARLES SUMNER," ETC.



NEW YORK:  
PUBLISHED BY CHARLES DREW,

NO. 9 MURRAY STREET.

1879.

COPYRIGHT, 1876,  
BY B. B. RUSSELL.

PRESS OF  
RAND, AVERY, AND COMPANY,  
117 FRANKLIN STREET,  
BOSTON.

## PREFACE.

—•— 1359775

It is a Herculean task to write a good history; and the value of such a one cannot be overestimated. By history we learn what mankind have been and done in all past ages. By history the best men in every age and century of the world are set before us for our imitation, and the worst for our detestation. By history we learn how nations, empires, kingdoms, have arisen, flourished, decayed, and passed away. By history we become acquainted with the genius, laws, and customs of men who shone as stars in their generation; and behold, as in a mirror, the disposition, character, and talents which produced their virtue or their vice, and entitled them to the respect, veneration, and grateful remembrance of their successors, or made them a reproach to the end of the world. By history, too, we get a knowledge of how the arts and sciences arose, and how inventions were first arrived at, cultivated, and improved; and finally, as "history" but "repeats itself" in every age of the world, we see the finger of an Almighty Ruler presiding over the destiny of men, and ordering all things and events, so that, it must be visible to all, that He ruleth among the children of men, and showing that "the race is not always to the swift, nor the battle to the strong, nor yet riches to men of understanding."

From these characteristics of general history, the transition is natural and easy to the particular one before us. Having resided many years in Philadelphia, and become familiar with



the biography of the early settlers of Pennsylvania, and the events that have taken place since, through their historians; and believing that no State in the Union offers richer material for a valuable history; and, moreover, being drawn to the task from a love of research into past times, — the author, with much pleasure, has compiled the following pages. It will be universally acknowledged that our resources of wealth in coal, iron, oil, &c., are unsurpassed by any State of this great republic.

Pennsylvania has abundant cause of gratitude to God, that she was settled by a Christian people, and, especially, that she received her name from one of the wisest, noblest, and best of men; and, as exhibited in this history, for many generations, even down to this period of our grand centennial, she has honored her early settlers, in her appreciation of that education, virtue, religious principle, and civil freedom, which were vouchsafed unto her by such men as William Penn and his coadjutors. It will be shown that she has well developed her material resources; but in nothing has she been more conspicuous than in the character of her men and women.

With the hope and belief that the reader will be amused, entertained, and instructed, his mind enlarged, affection elevated, by the perusal of what is gathered from the authors named in the work, from whose resources I have richly drawn, and from the more recent statistics of the Commonwealth, I commit the work to the intelligent sons and daughters of Pennsylvania.

W. M. C.

PHILADELPHIA, 1876.

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### EARLY DISCOVERERS OF AMERICA, AND THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS UPON THE DELAWARE.

PAGE.

Supposition that Ancient Ophir was America — Swedes' and Goths' Discovery of America — Discovery by Madoc, an Englishman — Discovery by Christopher Columbus — By Americus Vespucius — By Sebastian Cabot — Virginia visited by Sir Francis Drake and Sir Walter Raleigh — Whence its Name — Discovery of Delaware Bay — Whence its Name — London and Bristol Companies — Advent of the Hollanders — Their First Fort — Settlement by the Swedes — Their Religion — Houses — Furniture — Food — Drinks — First Indian Speech to Europeans . . .	15
---	----

## CHAPTER II.

### RISE, PROGRESS, AND PRINCIPLES OF THE DENOMINATION CALLED QUAKERS, OR FRIENDS.

George Fox — His Followers take the Name of Friends: his Enemies call them Quakers — Statement of their Principles published by Themselves — Admiral Sir William Penn — His Offices and Exploits — Birth of William Penn — His Early Education — Meeting with Thomas Loe — Embraces Loe's Views — Incurs his Father's Displeasure — Is sent to France — Then to Ireland — Again meets Loe — Returns Home — Driven from his Father's House — Colloquy between the Admiral and his Wife — Penn's Books — His Father's Reconciliation — Admiral's Death . . . . .	23
--	----

## CHAPTER III.

### FURTHER PROGRESS OF WILLIAM PENN AND HIS QUAKERS.

Reasons for founding a Colony: to get his Dues from the Crown — To escape Persecution — Accounts from New Jersey Colonies — Penn's Persecution — Imprisonment — Trial — Defence — Appeal to the Jury — Prejudices of his Judges — Penn's Acquittal — Petition for a Charter — Opposition — Granting of Charter . . . . .	44
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

## PENN'S CHARTER OF PENNSYLVANIA FROM KING CHARLES II.

PAGE

Boundaries — Privileges — William Penn made Proprietary — Power to govern, and make Laws — May appoint Officers — Grant Pardons — A Proviso — Laws of England in Force till Others are made in the Province — Approval of Laws — Encouragement of Emigration, also to Trade — May lay out Towns, Cities, &c. — Commercial Advantages — Seaports, Creeks, and Harbors — Customs may be imposed by the Province — Agent to reside in London — Government may be resumed by England — Not to correspond with Kings, &c., at War with England — May pursue and punish Enemies — May dispose of Lands — May erect Manors — Frank Pledge — King not to lay Taxes without Consent of Proprietary or Parliament — Control of the Bishop of London — Interpretation . 61

## CHAPTER V.

## PROCEEDINGS OF PENN AFTER THE GRANT OF HIS CHARTER.

Penn's Joy — His Visit to the King — Surprise at the Name — Offers Twenty Guineas — Solicits the King — Refusal of the King — Letter to Robert Turner — Penn's Publication — Farewell to the King — Interesting Colloquy with the King — Letter to his Family . . . . 75

## CHAPTER VI.

## WILLIAM PENN'S FIRST VISIT TO AMERICA.

Sends Commissioners — Letter to the Indians — Death of his Mother — Frame of Government — Agreement with the Duke of York — Penn's Embarkation — An Epistle — Letter to Stephen Crisp — Welcome from the Dutch, Swedes, and Quakers — Toleration and Civil Freedom — First General Assembly — Chester named — Lands bought — Great Treaty — Measurement by Walks — John Penn — Bounties offered — Site for a City — Penn's House — Pennsbury Manor — City named — Division of Province and Territories — Letter to One of his Detractors — Leaves for England . . . . . 92

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE INDIANS.

William Penn's Letter — Persons of the Indians — Their Language — Customs and Manners — Religion — Government — Origin — Dr. Rush's Account — Of their Children — Food — Customs of Women — Employment of Men — Common Customs — Diseases — Small-Pox and Venereal Imported — Remedies — Indian Speeches . . . . . 111

## CHAPTER VIII.

## PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1684 TO 1690.

The Provincial Council — Officers commissioned by William Penn — Letter to Friends — Population of the Province — Appoints Secretary — Troubles



PAGE.

in the Province—Letter to the Magistrates and Others—Nicholas Moore—New Commission—Thomas Lloyd retires—Appointed Deputy—Great Scare—Gov. Blackwell—First Public School—George Keith—Schism among the Quakers—Penn's Power revoked—Fletcher made Governor—Divisions—Fletcher retires—Appoints Markham—Government restored to Penn—Appoints Markham—Penn's Return—Gives Laws—Improves Philadelphia—House of Lords—Fears for his Government—Return to England . . . . .	128
---	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

## PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1701 TO 1765.

Penn's Interest in the Colony—Of his Family—Reception of New Charter—Charter to the City—Andrew Hamilton—James Logan—Bill in Parliament—King William's Death—Princess Anne—Dissensions—Gov. Evans—William Penn, jun.—More Dissensions—Evils from Penn's Absence—Mortgages the Province—Attacked by Apoplexy—His Death—His Will—Gov. Gordon—Benjamin Franklin—Thomas and John Penn—Indian Troubles—Gov. Thomas—George Whitefield—The French War—Plain Truth—Gov. Hamilton—Taxation of Proprietors—Public Institutions—Braddock's Defeat—George Washington—Indian Treaties—Re-appointment of James Hamilton—Boundary settled—Indian Massacre—White Savages—John Penn—Indians sue for Peace—Quotation from Day—Penn's Character by Gordon . . . . .	144
--	-----

## CHAPTER X.

## PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1765 TO 1775.

Great Britain lays a Tax upon the Colonies—Stamp Act—Stamp Officer appointed—Manufacturing prohibited—Repeal of the Stamp Act—Duties on British Goods—Tax on Tea—Colonists oppose all Taxes—Mass Meeting—Provincial Congress—Continental Congress—Petition to King George—Congress adjourns—Re-assembles—George Washington appointed—Washington's Speech . . . . .	160
--	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

## ACTS OF CONGRESS AND OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Washington commissioned—Bloodshed—The Colonies declared Independent of Great Britain—Incidents in Independence Hall—Doings of the Assembly of Pennsylvania—Gov. Penn's Advice—The Assembly's Reply—Second Provincial Convention—Their Acts—Committee of Public Safety—The Quakers—Pennsylvania raises Troops—Whigs and Tories disagree on changing the Government—The Whigs prevail—They call a Convention—A Constitution formed for Pennsylvania . . . . .	177
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

RECAPITULATION OF EVENTS IN PENNSYLVANIA DOWN TO THE  
CLOSE OF THE PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT.

	PAGE.
The Government modelled after England — The People Democratic — Exportation prohibited — Of the Courts — Sale of Lands — Division of Classes among the People — William Penn — Provincial Laws repealed — Early Churches — Free Toleration to All — Influx of Sects — Contrast of Public Expenditures — Literature — Printing-Press — Newspapers — Magazines — Benjamin Franklin — His Printing-Press . . . . .	194

## CHAPTER XIII.

## THE STATE CONSTITUTION OF 1776.

What Government should be — Declaration of Rights — Right of Worship — Internal Government — Benefit to All — Free Elections — Of Prosecutions — Of Warrants — Freedom of Speech — Plan of Government — Electors — House of Representatives — Form of Oath or Affirmation — Delegates to Congress — Title of the Laws — County Districts — Of Commissions — Of Judges — Supreme Court — Of Debtors — Justices of the Peace — Sheriffs and Coroners — Of Fees — Register's Office — Printing-Presses — Of Professions — Penal Laws — Taxes — Of Schools — Council of Censors . . . . .	211
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

## PENNSYLVANIA DURING THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

Emblems of Royalty burned — Lord Howe — Letters to Washington and Franklin — Franklin's Reply — Washington's Letter — Gen. Sullivan's Message — Committee appointed to confer with Howe — Battle at Trenton — Battle of Princeton — Arrival of Lafayette — Defeat at Brandywine — Removal of Congress — British in Philadelphia — They spare the Old Elm — Washington's Enemies — Commissioners from Great Britain — France acknowledges American Independence — Sir Henry Clinton succeeds Sir William Howe — British evacuate Philadelphia — Victory of Monmouth — Benedict Arnold — Indian Warfare — Continental Money — Treaty of Peace . . . . .	229
---	-----

## CHAPTER XV.

## PENNSYLVANIA IN THE WARS SUCCEEDING THE REVOLUTION.

Warfare with the Western Indians — Whiskey Rebellion — War of 1812 — Defenceless State of the Northern Borders — Commodore Perry's Victory — British War-Ships in the Delaware — The Governor's Call — Patriotic Response — Burning of the Capitol — War with the Florida Indians — Efforts to quiet the South — Southern Trade — Patriotism of her People — Gov. Curtin — Anecdotes of Quakers — James Buchanan — Secession Ordinance — Lincoln's Election — Attack on Fort Sumter — Call for Troops — Ready Response — Simon Cameron — Thaddeus Stevens — Reserve Corps — Rebel Invasion — Gen. Meade — Battle of Gettysburg . . . . .	245
--	-----

## CHAPTER XVI.

## THE SURFACE AND PRODUCTIONS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

PAGE.

Face of the Country — Geology — Lakes and Rivers — Climate — Soil and Productions — Anthracite Coal — Where found — Mining-Operations — Mouth of a Coal Mine — Coal Shute, Dumper, and Breaker — Face of a Coal-Breaker — Picking Slate at a Screen — Total Product of Anthracite — Bituminous Coal — Where found — Mines — Product of Bituminous Coal . . . . .	261
--	-----

## XVII.

## PRODUCTION OF IRON AND OIL IN PENNSYLVANIA.

Pennsylvania compared with Other States — Cornwall Hills — Counties, where found — Chester County — Prohibitory Law — Forges in Bucks County — Lebanon — Manufacturing Baptists — Maria Forge — Henry William Steigel — Valley Forge — William Denning — Various Forges — Anthracite Coal for Smelting — Jacobs' Creek — Dunbar Creek — Fairchance Furnace — Red Stone — Charcoal Furnaces — Bituminous Coal — Pig Iron — Total Product — Geology of Petroleum — Naphtha — Venango County — Devonian Rocks — Daddow — Indians burn Oil — Excitement on Discovery of Oil — Oil Companies — Prospecting — Oil Creek — A Derrick . . . . .	279
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD AND POINTS OF INTEREST ALONG ITS ROUTE TO THE CAPITAL.

Mr. Sipes's Book — Richard Trevithick — George Stephenson — Road in Massachusetts — Honesdale — Columbia Railroad — Portage Road — Act for Pennsylvania Railroad — Road opened — Branches of New Jersey Division — Of Pennsylvania Railroad — Of Philadelphia and Erie Road — Mileage — Merion — Wynnewood — Eagle — Paoli — Malvern — Downingtown — Coatesville — Christiana — Gap — Kinzers — Lancaster — Mount Joy — Middletown — Columbia — Marietta — Harrisburg . . . . .	295
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIX.

## PLACES ON THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD FROM HARRISBURG TO THE TUNNEL OF THE ALLEGHANY.

Rockville — Marysville — Duncannon — Aqueduct — Newport — Millers-town — Mifflin — Lewistown — Newton Hamilton — Mount Union — Huntingdon — Tyrone — Altoona — Kittanning Point — Resting-Place — View from the Mountain . . . . .	314
--	-----

## CHAPTER XX.

## PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD FROM THE TUNNEL TO PITTSBURG, ITS TERMINUS.

Tunnel — Gallitzin — Cresson — Sonman — Portage — Johnstown — Cone-maugh Furnace — Nineveh — Blairsville Intersection — Hillside — Latrobe — Greensburg — Penn — Manor — Irwin — Braddock's — Wilkinsburg — Liberty — Pittsburg . . . . .	329
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXI.

CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE BRANCHES OF THE PENNSYLVANIA  
RAILROAD.

PAGE.

East Brandywine and Waynesburg Branch — Glen Moore — Barneston — Waynesburg — Wrightsville — York — Mifflin and Centre County Branch — Logan — Mann's — Reedsville — Milroy — Bedford and Bridgeport Railroad — Mount Dallas — Bedford — Wolfsburg — Mann's Choice — Bald Eagle Valley Branch — Vail — Bald Eagle — Martha — Unionville Milesburg — Unionville — Bellefonte — Curtin — Howard — Eagleville — Beach Creek — Mill Hall — Tyrone and Clearfield Branch — Sandy Ridge — Osceola — Phillipsburg — Wallacetown — Clearfield — Holli- daysburg and Morrison's Cove Branch — Y Switches — Hollidaysburg — McKee's — Rodman — Roaring Spring — Martinsburg — Henrietta — Williamsburg Branch — Frankstown — Flowing Spring — Williamsburg — Ebensburg Branch — Munster — Ebensburg — Indiana Branch — Black Lick — Homer — Indiana . . . . .	346
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXII.

CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE BRANCHES OF THE PENNSYLVANIA  
RAILROAD, CONCLUDED.

Western Pennsylvania Railroad — Blairsville — Tunnel — Saltsburg — Apollo — Leechburg — Alleghany Junction — Freeport — Natrona — Tarentum — Hites' — Claremont — Sharpsburg — Etna — Alleghany City — Butler Branch — Saxonburg — Butler — South-west Pennsylvania Branch — Scottdale — Everson — Connellsville — Philadelphia and Erie Railroad — Sunbury — Northumberland — Milton — Watsonstown — Dewart — Montgomery — Muncy — Williamsport — Jersey Shore — Wayne — Lock Haven — Farrandsville — Hyner — Renovo — Keating — Round Island — Sinnemahoning — Drift-wood — Stirling — Cameron — Emporium — St. Mary's — Daguscahonda — Ridgeway — Wilcox — Ser- geant — Kane — Warren — Irvinetown — Corry — Union — Waterford — Jackson's — Erie — Lewisburg Centre and Spruce Creek Branch — Lewisburg — Mifflinburg — Danville and Hazleton Branch — Philadel- phia and Erie Junction — Danville — Catawissa — Tomhicken — Bristol	362
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE READING AND OTHER RAILROADS.

Network of Railroads — Afford Facilities for Historical Description — Reading Road — Conshohocken — Norristown — Valley Forge — Reading — Phoenixville — Port Clinton — Pottstown — Auburn — Schuylkill Haven — Pottsville — Mount Carbon — Ravino Gap — Lebanon — Ma- hanoy Plane — Northern Pennsylvania — Gwynedd — Lansdale — Sel- lersville — Landis Ridge — Hellertown — Lehigh Valley Railroad — Bethlehem — Allentown — Catasauqua — Hokendauqua — Slatington — Lehighon — Weinport — Packertown — Mauch Chunk — Mount Pisgah — Summit Hill — Burning-Mine — Glen Onoko — Chameleon Falls —
---



PAGE.

Onoko Falls—Terrace Falls—Nesquehoning Bridge—Penn Haven—  
Stony Creek—Rockport—Tannoy—White Haven—Freemansburg  
—Redington—Glendon—Easton—Delaware, Lackawanna, and West-  
ern Railroad—Delaware Water Gap—Philadelphia, Wilmington, and  
Baltimore Railroad—Chester—West Chester Railroad—West Chester 381

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## HOSPITALS, AND OTHER INSTITUTIONS.

Pennsylvania Hospital—Insane Department—Stephen Girard—Sick Sea-  
men—Lying-in Department—Dispensary—Hospital Property taxed—  
Penn's Bust—Kirkbride Hospital—Hospital of the University of Penn-  
sylvania—Lunatic Hospital, Harrisburg—Insane Hospital, Danville—  
Insane Hospital, Warren—Insane Hospital, Dixmont—German Hos-  
pital—Lackawanna Hospital—Wilkesbarre Hospital—Anthracite Hos-  
pital—Reform School—Pennsylvania Training School—Deaf-Mutes—  
Sheltering Arms—Western Penitentiary . . . . . 409

## CHAPTER XXV.

## UNIVERSITIES, COLLEGES, AND OTHER LITERARY INSTITUTIONS.

University of Pennsylvania—Western University of Pennsylvania—La-  
fayette College—Other Colleges in the State—Normal Schools—High  
Schools—Private Schools—Business Colleges—Provisions of the New  
Constitution—City School Systems—Of Philadelphia—Of Pittsburg  
—Of Alleghany . . . . . 427

## CHAPTER XXVI.

## HISTORICAL SOCIETY, ETC., AND GOVERNORS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Why so long delayed—Variety of Nations—Mr. Burke's Statement—  
Municipalities—Organization of the Society—Original Members—  
First Officers—Place of Meeting—Various Committees—Progress—  
Library—Bradford's Prayer-Book—Freedom of the Press—Other  
Societies—United States Hospitals in the City—Union League—Pol-  
itics of the Commonwealth—Names of Governors of the Province and  
State of Pennsylvania . . . . . 456

## CHAPTER XXVII.

## ARTISTS AND FINE ARTS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Benjamin West—Charles Wilson Peale—Rembrandt Peale—Thomas  
Sully—James Hamilton—Thomas Buchanan Read—Adolph Ulric  
Wertmuller—Paul Weber—John Neagle—Peter F. Rothermel—Mar-  
garet M. George—Thomas A. Scott—School of Design for Women—  
The Academy of Fine Arts . . . . . 471

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## MEDICAL SCHOOLS AND WRITERS, JOURNALS AND JOURNALISTS.

PAGE.

William Shippen — Adam Kuhn — Benjamin Rush — Thomas Bond — American Metropolis of Education — Medical School united with the University — New Edifice — Jefferson Medical College — The Pennsylvania Medical College — Philadelphia College of Medicine — Homœopathic College, &c. — Female Medical College — Philadelphia College of Pharmacy — College of Physicians and Surgeons — Medical Writers — Journals and Journalists . . . . .	484
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXIX.

## STEPHEN GIRARD AND HIS ORPHAN COLLEGE.

Birthplace of Girard — Cabin-Boy — Capt. Randall — Begins to speculate — Comes to Philadelphia — Marriage — Removes to Mount Holly — Returns to Philadelphia — Partnership with his Brother — Dissolution — Wife's Insanity — Massacre in St. Domingo — Death of his Brother — His Nieces — Names of his Ships — Smoking — Service in the Yellow-Fever — Softens with Age — Capt. Guligar — One Cent — His Dress — Dr. Staughton — Gives to the Methodists — Cancels Donation — Widow's Visit — Girard Bank — Hardware Merchant — Rope-Maker — Iron Work — Plan of his College — His Will — Note from Dr. Allen . . . . .	503
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXX.

## PHILADELPHIA.

Advantages of Philadelphia — Building and Loan Associations — Consolidation of the City — Topography of the City — Its Buildings — Manufactures — London Coffee-House — Carpenter's Hall — State House — Independence Square — United States Mint — Eastern State Penitentiary — County Prison — Houses of Refuge — Wills Hospital — Deaf-and-Dumb Institution — Institution for the Blind — Blockley Almshouse — Wagner Institute — Polytechnic College — Franklin Institute — Guaranty Trust and Safe Deposit Company — Hotels — Masonic Temple — Academy of Natural Sciences — City Hall — Callow-hill Street Bridge — Water-Works — Laurel Hill Cemetery — The Park . . . . .	520
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXXI.

## THE CENTENNIAL.

Our Republic — Small in the Beginning — How it increased — Planted by Noble Men — Slavery a Rotten Plank in the Constitution — Its Fate — The Old "Thirteen" — Increase of Territory — Productions — Men and Women — Literature — Century — Pennsylvania and Philadelphia — Sister States and Cities — Foreign Nations — One Regret — The Change as to Knowledge and Discoveries — The Future of the Nation — History proclaims a Moral Governor — The Centennial Grounds and Buildings . . . . .	551
---	-----

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

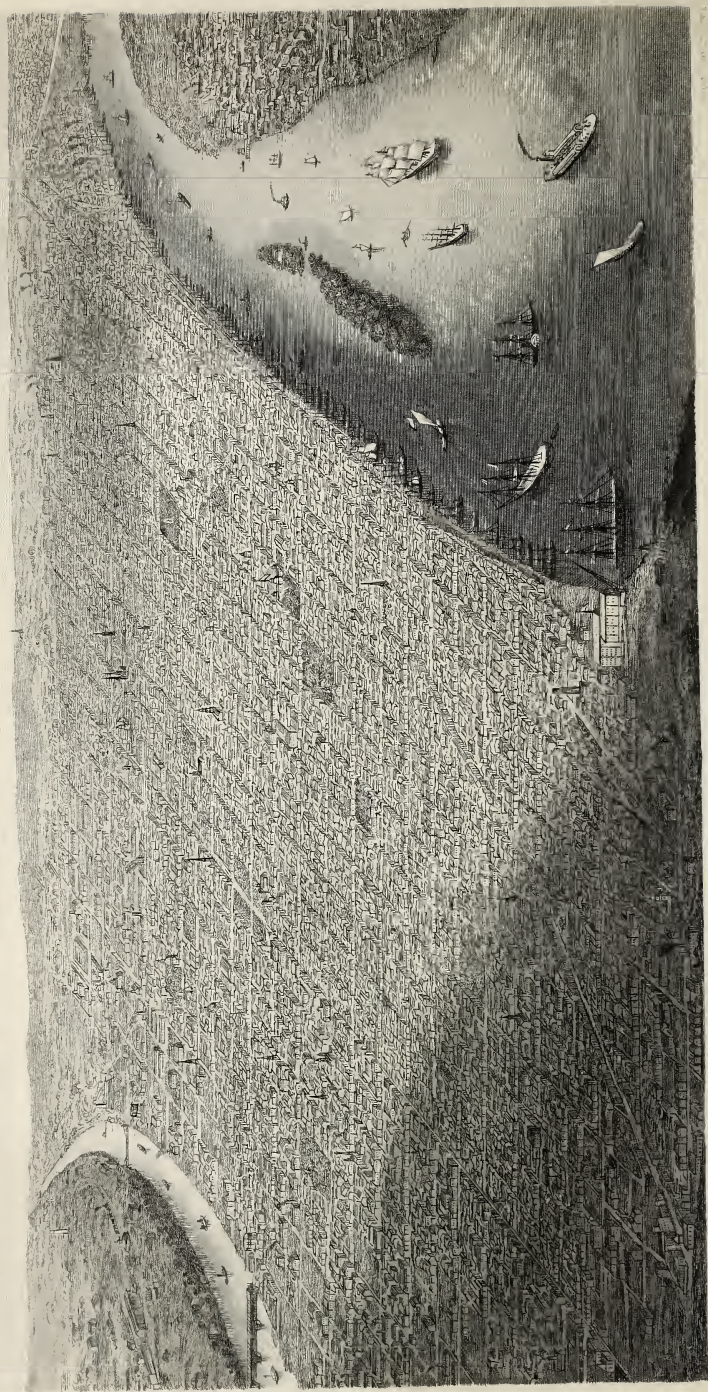
Portrait of the Author . . . . .	FRONTISPIECE.
	PAGE.
Bird's-Eye View of Philadelphia . . . . .	15
Penn's Treaty with the Indians . . . . .	98
Penn's House . . . . .	108
Soldiers' Monument, Gettysburg . . . . .	261
Mouth of Coal Mine . . . . .	271
Coal Shute, Dumper, and Breaker . . . . .	273
Face of Coal Breaker . . . . .	274
Picking out Slate . . . . .	275
Towing Flat-Boats up Oil Creek <sup>1</sup> . . . . .	291
Oil en Route for Pittsburg <sup>1</sup> . . . . .	293
Paoli . . . . .	300
Coatesville Bridge . . . . .	302
Residence of James Buchanan . . . . .	306
Susquehanna near Harrisburg . . . . .	312
Horseshoe Curve . . . . .	327
Alleghany Mountain Tunnel . . . . .	330
Mountain House, Cresson . . . . .	331
Portage Road . . . . .	333
City of Pittsburg . . . . .	341
State Normal School, Indiana . . . . .	361
Valley Forge . . . . .	384
Schuylkill below Reading . . . . .	385
Schuylkill above Port Clinton . . . . .	386
Mount Carbon and Sharp Mountain . . . . .	387
Ravino Gap, near Pottsville . . . . .	388
Mahanoy Plane, looking up . . . . .	389
Bethlehem . . . . .	391
Lehigh Gap . . . . .	392
Mauch Chunk . . . . .	394
Mount Pisgah Plane . . . . .	395
The "Flagstaff," Mauch Chunk . . . . .	396
View North from the Trestling, Mount Pisgah . . . . .	398
Chameleon Falls . . . . .	399

<sup>1</sup> These cuts represent the oil regions as they were in 1861.

	PAGE.
Onoko Falls . . . . .	400
Terrace Falls, Glen Onoko . . . . .	401
Nesquehoning Bridge . . . . .	402
View on Stony Creek . . . . .	403
Prospect Rock and the Nescopec Valley . . . . .	404
Cloud Point . . . . .	405
The Gem of the Valley . . . . .	406
Delaware Water Gap . . . . .	407
Hospital of the University of Pennsylvania . . . . .	417
University of Pennsylvania, Department of Arts and Sciences . . . . .	429
Pardee Hall . . . . .	431
Beaver College, Beaver . . . . .	433
Pennsylvania College, Gettysburg . . . . .	437
Plates of Lewisburg . . . . .	439, 440, 441
Washington and Jefferson . . . . .	443
State Normal School, West Chester . . . . .	446
Cumberland Valley State Normal School, Shippensburg . . . . .	448
Union League . . . . .	465
New Academy of Fine Arts . . . . .	482
University of Pennsylvania, Medical Department . . . . .	485
Public Ledger . . . . .	496
Girard College . . . . .	519
London Coffee House . . . . .	524
Carpenter's Hall . . . . .	525
Independence Hall . . . . .	526
Liberty Bell . . . . .	527
Franklin's Grave . . . . .	528
Insane Asylum . . . . .	533
Guaranty Safe Trust and Deposit Company . . . . .	536
Mutual Life Insurance Company of New York . . . . .	537
Exchange . . . . .	538
Masonic Temple . . . . .	539
Continental Hotel . . . . .	540
New Academy of Natural Sciences . . . . .	541
New City Hall . . . . .	543
Chestnut Street Bridge . . . . .	544
Callow Hill Street Bridge . . . . .	545
Fairmount . . . . .	547
Fairmount Park from Pennsylvania Bridge . . . . .	548
Girard Avenue Bridge, Fairmount Park . . . . .	549
Centennial Buildings	
Main Exhibition Building . . . . .	560
Art Gallery . . . . .	560
Machinery Hall . . . . .	560
Horticultural Building . . . . .	563
Agricultural Building . . . . .	564
Fac-Similes of Centennial Medals . . . . .	566







BIRD'S EYE VIEW OF THE CITY OF PHILADELPHIA WITH ENVIRONS

# HISTORY OF PENNSYLVANIA.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### EARLY DISCOVERERS OF AMERICA, AND THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS UPON THE DELAWARE.

Supposition that Ancient Ophir was America — Swedes' and Goths' Discovery of America — Discovery by Madoc, an Englishman — Discovery by Christopher Columbus — By Americus Vespucius — By Sebastian Cabot — Virginia visited by Sir Francis Drake and Sir Walter Raleigh — Whence its Name — Discovery of Delaware Bay — Whence its Name — London and Bristol Companies — Advent of the Hollanders — Their First Fort — Settlement by the Swedes — Their Religion — Houses — Furniture — Food — Drinks — First Indian Speech to Europeans.

VARIOUS opinions have long prevailed respecting when, and by whom, America was first discovered. Some believe that America, though not known by that name, was a place of trade in the days of King Solomon, and that the Ophir to which he sent his ships on three-years' voyages, "which returned with silver, ivory, apes, and peacocks, and four hundred and fifty talents of gold,"<sup>1</sup> was on some part of what is now called the American Continent. This opinion is supported by some plausible arguments like the following: the place to which they sailed must have been at a great distance, as it required so much time to complete the voyage, which would not have been the case, had they gone to the East Indies, they being not far from Solomon's dominions. They traded at some rich country, evidently; and no part of the world abounded in

<sup>1</sup> 2 Chron. viii., ix.



gold, silver, apes, peacocks, and other precious treasure, more than some portions of the American Continent. If this supposition were true, it might suggest the method by which "the ten tribes" became the first inhabitants of America, according to the opinion of Gov. Boudinot, of New Jersey, and others.

The Swedes and Goths visited America, A.D. 996, and called it *Vinland the Good*, and, also, *Skrællingaland*. It is therefore evident that the Northmen visited some part of North America before the Spaniards and Portuguese went to South America.<sup>1</sup>

Holm, another Swedish historian, says "That the same discoverers of 996 called it *Wineland the Good*, and *Skrælinggaland*, which was found written in six different chapters of the ancient history of Gothland under the great King Olof Tyrgwasson, or Snorre Sturleson, published by the celebrated antiquary John Peringskiöld, in the year 1697; from which, for the sake of brevity, we shall only extract the names of those who visited Wineland the Good; and afterwards we shall briefly relate what they have said respecting that country; so that one may know what was the state of America in those times.

The first who travelled into that country was called *Lief Erikson*. He was sent to Greenland by King Olof Tyrgwasson of Norway, to instruct the people of that island in the Christian religion. Afterwards he sailed for America with thirty-five men, built a house there, and staid over the winter.

The second was *Thorwald Erikson*, Lief's brother. He went to the same place with thirty men, and remained there during the winter.

The third was *Torsten Erikson*, who, after his brother Thorwald's death, went thither with his wife Gudrid and a company of fifty strong and active men chosen for that purpose.

The fourth was *Karel Semne*, who sailed for that country with his wife Gudrid and with sixty men and five women. They took with them all sorts of cattle, and settled themselves upon the land.

The fifth was Freidis, Erik's daughter, with her two brothers,

<sup>1</sup> Acrelius: translated by Reynolds, p. 17.

*Helge* and *Finboga*. They took with them thirty active men, besides women. They first sailed to Greenland, and afterwards went to the New World, to which they gave the name of *Wineland* the Good.

The circumstances which are related respecting that country are the following : —

1st, That the country was fair, covered with wood, and there was but little space between the woods and the sea.

2d, That there were many islands and inland seas, or lakes, on the shores of which there was white sand.

3d, That in the lakes and rivers there were salmon, and all other kinds of fish.

4th, That at that time there were found whales, which were cast ashore by the flood.

5th, That the country produced excellent fruit, and that corn grew spontaneously in the fields.

6th, That the dew which fell in the morning on the grass was very sweet.

7th, That the country was very fruitful, and produced grapevines, and also abundance of fish and other riches.

8th, That there was no hard frost in the country ; so that the grass suffered very little in the winter, and the cattle did not want food.

9th, That the days were longer than in Greenland and Iceland, and the sun rose at breakfast-time when the days were shortest.

10th, That the inhabitants made use of bows and arrows for their weapons, with which they made war, and fought against the Norwegians.

11th, That they crossed the water with canoes made of the bark of trees.

12th, That they took with them burdens and packages, consisting of squirrel and sable skins, and all other kinds of peltry, which they offered to the Norwegians in the way of trade.

13th, That at first they desired to have arms in exchange for their goods ; but, after they had tasted milk, they would not have any thing else.

14th, That they were much frightened by the bellowing of

the bulls which the Norwegians brought with them, and, when they heard them, they would run away.

15th, That they wondered much at the arms of the Norwegians, and were afraid of them, &c.

That the said Wineland the Good can be no other than America, is also maintained by the learned professor, O. Wereilius, as may be seen in his notes to Hervor's History, p. 27. It is probable that the part of Greenland whence those men sailed over to America is very near to that continent, as may be seen, as well in the place above quoted from the said Sturleson, as in Jöns Larssons Wolff's "*Norrigia Illustrata*," published in Danish, at Copenhagen, in the year 1651, which was communicated to me, amongst other things, by the celebrated professor of antiquities, E. Brenner. It is there mentioned that some travellers were permitted by King Frederick the Second, and Christian the Fourth of Denmark, to go to Greenland; but they went to America, believing it to be Greenland, as may be seen in the same work, p. 273. That part of Greenland is at present unknown, so that no man at present can find it; because, according to some, a great quantity of ice was driven, by some storm, out of the Sea of Tartary, which has intercepted the passage. It is supposed that the people who lived there abandoned their habitations, and, as the learned Grotius believes, travelled farther into the country, until, at last, they reached America, a part of whose inhabitants is, without doubt, descended from them."

Some Englishmen believe that America was discovered, 1190, by Madoc, son of Owen Gwynneth, Prince of Wales, and that he made two voyages to this country, and that he built a fortress in Florida or Virginia, others say in Mexico; and they adduce, as proof of this, a number of British words found in use among the Mexicans.<sup>1</sup>

Christopher Columbus, a native of Genoa, discovered America in 1492, the first land which he made being Guanahani, one of the Lucayos, to which he gave the name of San Salvador. On this same voyage, he discovered Cuba and Hispaniola: on the latter he built a fort, and left it in the possession of

<sup>1</sup> Holm: translated by Du Ponceau, p. 23.

thirty-eight armed Spaniards. He sailed again in 1498, with seventeen ships and fifteen hundred men. When he arrived, he found that the Spaniards, whom he had left to protect the fort, had all been murdered by the natives. He built two cities, and called them Isabella and St. Domingo. He also took possession of Cuba and Jamaica, and discovered the American Continent.

The next discoverer of America was Americus Vespucius, a native of Florence. His first voyage was made in 1502, by order of Emanuel, King of Portugal. Unjustly, the country was named for him.

Virginia was discovered in 1497 by Sebastian Cabot, a Portuguese by birth, but then captain of an English ship. It was next visited by Sir Francis Drake and Sir Walter Raleigh. The latter called the land Virginia, in honor of Queen Elizabeth of England, who was never married. Under this title was included all the country from Florida to the St. Lawrence River.

Capt. De la Ware was the first who discovered the bay into which ran the river, called by the Indians Poutaxat; to which river he gave his own name, calling it Delaware. This was in the year 1600.

These countries were again visited, in 1603, by Sir Walter Raleigh, and Capt. George Popham and James Davis, who erected some small forts, which the savages soon destroyed. In 1606, two colonies of emigrants were sent to the northern regions by two companies, called the London and the Bristol Companies: the former of these settled around Chesapeake Bay.

About this time, 1606, the Hollanders began to visit America. They liked the shores of the bay, called by the Indians, *Menhaden*, and the River Mehaan, which had been discovered by Henry Hudson, an Englishman, while he was in the service of the Dutch East India Company. In 1608, this company sold its right to this country, which was based upon first discovery, to the Hollanders. Having obtained from the States-General of Holland an exclusive right to the country, they (the purchasers of this right) took the name of the West India Com-



pany of Amsterdam. They commenced trade with the Indians in 1610, and in 1613 built a trading-fort at what is now called Albany. Samuel Argall, the first governor of Virginia, drove them out in 1618; but King James I. gave them permission to remain. The West India Company obtained their charter June 3, 1621, which, in 1623, was amended and extended. Their trade, at that time, was conducted mainly on shipboard; and they made no attempt to build a fortress until 1629. About this time, wishing to extend their powers to the Delaware, they erected some small forts on its banks, the most prominent one of which was Fort Nassau. There is much diversity of opinion as to the precise place where this fort was located; the more general opinion of historians seeming to indicate that it was on the east side of the Delaware, near the present town of Gloucester: others, however, contend that it occupied a portion of the site where Philadelphia now stands; and others still, maintain that it was farther down the river than Gloucester.

An unsuccessful attack was made upon this fort by the English, in 1635. It appears, however, to have been occupied by the Dutch until about 1651, when they destroyed it, and removed to Fort Casimir, which had been built in the mean time farther down the river, upon land which was then in possession of the Swedes, who, despite the protest of William Kieft, the Director-General of New Netherlands, residing on the island of Manhattan, in Fort Amsterdam, had taken possession of it.

The Dutch claimed (as we have said) this territory by right of discovery; but, upon the arrival of the Swedes, they contested their claim, and took possession of the land, as will soon appear; for it was about this period that a Dutchman, William Usselinx, or Usseling, who, as early as 1604, had endeavored to start a company in Holland, and failed, presented himself to Gustavus Adolphus, the reigning King of Sweden, and laid before him a proposition for a trading-company to America and other places; and he was so far successful, that, in the Diet of 1627, the work was completed, and the estates of the realm gave their assent, and confirmed the measure.

“ But when these arrangements were now in full progress,



and duly provided for, the German War and the king's death occurred, which caused this most important work to be laid aside. The trading-company was dissolved, its subscriptions nullified; and the whole project seemed about to die with the king. But, just as it appeared to be at its end, it received new life. Another Hollander, by the name of Peter Menewe, sometimes called Menuet (an autograph letter found in the royal archives of Stockholm gives the name as commonly written in English MINUIT), made his appearance in Sweden. He had been in the service of Holland in America, where he became involved in difficulties with the officers of the West India Company, in consequence of which he was recalled home, and dismissed from their service. But he was not discouraged by this, and went over to Sweden, where he renewed the representations which Usselinx had formerly made in regard to the excellence of the country, and the advantages that Sweden might derive from it."<sup>1</sup>

Of the first settlements of the Swedes, very contradictory accounts are given; as a specimen of which we present those of Peter Minuit as given by the documents of the Hollanders, and from a modern history of the settlement of the Delaware. Of this Minuit, the Hollanders' document thus speaks:—

“This river (Delaware) was in the quiet and peaceful possession of the company (West India) for a number of years, until at last a certain person, Peter Minuit, forgetting the benefits bestowed on him by the company, he having been its director in the New Netherlands, kept his eye on it, but, not knowing under what pretence he could go there, proceeded to Sweden, where (it is said) he obtained a commission from the government, which had him transported from there immediately, with one or two vessels and some Swedes, mostly bandits, to the before-mentioned Delaware, where he arrived in the year 1638, and thus twelve years after the company had arrived there, where he had a fort built, called Christina, about five or six miles below the company's Fort Nassau, notwithstanding they, as the first discoverers and possessors of the before-mentioned

<sup>1</sup> See Acrelius: Reynolds's Translation, p. 21.

river, protested against this several times by their ministers, as appears from different letters from its director, William Kieft.”<sup>1</sup>

The account as contained in the last-mentioned history runs thus : —

“ *Peter Minuit*, who conducted to our shore the first Swedish colony, had been commercial agent and director-general of the Dutch West India Company, and Governor of New Netherlands. Although the materials relating to his official character and term of service at New Amsterdam are not such as to satisfy the exact historian, or to gratify a reasonable curiosity respecting so conspicuous an agent in planting the first *permanent* colony on the banks of the Delaware, yet sufficient is known of him to show that he was the first governor under the company’s charter granted in 1621 ; that he, probably, filled that station as early as 1623 or 1624 ; and that he was succeeded by Wouter Van Twiller in 1633. About this time, as is evident from De Vries and other writers, there was great want of unity and harmony between the company and its officers, as well as among the directors individually. The scheme for this colonizing their territory had induced men of wealth to emigrate to the New Netherlands ; and large tracts of land were granted them, under the charter to encourage colonization. The emigrants had become feudal lords of the soil ; and, having seated themselves on the best locations for trade, their interests became opposed to the interests of the grantors. The monopoly of the company was adverse to the desire of the patroons to carry on a trade for their own private interests ; and dissensions between them and the company’s agents were the natural result. The position of Minuit as the guardian of the company’s interests was one in which it was impossible to please both parties. His integrity as an officer was calculated to raise up against him a host of powerful enemies. Means were insidiously used to undermine his credit with the company. Their information, derived through *interested* channels, was deceptive. His enemies prevailed ; and Minuit was dismissed from his office as Governor of the New Netherlands.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Hollanders’ Documents, as given by Samuel Hazard’s Annals, p. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Ferris’s Original Settlements on the Delaware, p. 32.

Thus, while the former represents him as ignoring all the benefits he received from the Dutch West India Company, and going over to the Swedes, the latter claims, that, by his good management of the company's interests, he displeased the "patroons," or grantees. From these conflicting accounts, it would seem impossible that he should discharge the duties of governor to the satisfaction of both parties, and that, while really acting for the best interests of the company, they discharged him, being led to that act through the influence of "interested" parties. Upon the whole, it seems that he was a very good governor.

The subject being thus revived, and the young Queen Christina, daughter of Gustavus, having come to the throne, favoring the project, the first colony from Sweden was sent off in 1637, under Peter Menewe, or Minuit, who, from his past experience under the Dutch West India Company, was deemed the most suitable person to conduct such an enterprise. They arrived in 1638, making "their first landing on the bay or entrance to the River Poutaxat, which they called the River of New Sweden; and the place where they landed they called *Paradise Point*"<sup>1</sup> (in the neighborhood of what is now Lewes, in the State of Delaware).

"The first abode of the newly arrived emigrants was at a place called by the Indians Hopokohacking. There, in the year 1638, Peter Minuit built a fortress, naming it Fort Christina, after the reigning Queen of Sweden." Here appears another discrepancy; for the same author says of it, "This is the first fort which the Swedes built when they came to this country in 1631;"<sup>2</sup> thus making it appear, that in a former visit, which was not long enough to effect a settlement permanently, they built a fort, probably as a means of protection.

The second colony from Sweden sailed under Lieut-Col. John Printz, who was appointed Governor of New Sweden.

"The ship on which they sailed was called 'The Fama.' It went from Stockholm to Göteborg, and there took in its freight. Along with this went two other ships-of-the-line,

<sup>1</sup> Acrelius: translated by Reynolds, p. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Campanius Holm: Du Ponceau's Translation, p. 79.

'The Swan' and 'The Charitas,' laden with people and other necessities. Under Gov. Printz, ships came to the colony in three distinct voyages. The first ship was 'The Black Cat,' with ammunition and merchandise for the Indians; next the ship 'Swan,' on a second voyage, with emigrants, in the year 1647; afterwards two other ships, called 'The Key' and 'The Lamp.' During these times the clergymen, Mr. Lawrence Charles Lockenius and Mr. Israel Holgh, were sent out to the colony."<sup>1</sup>

The Swedes were a very religious people. Their first church was dedicated Sept. 4, 1646, by Magister John Campanius Holm, the government chaplain; and the oldest church in Philadelphia was erected on the same site where the Gloria Dei, or Swede's Church, now stands.

We learn further from Acrelius the following facts respecting their religious progress in later years. The Hollanders had built no church during their whole time; but by intermarrying, and living together, the Swedes and Hollanders coalesced into one church association.

"The church at Christina usually held its services in Christina Fort; but, for greater convenience, a small wooden church was, in 1667, erected at Tranhook, at the distance of one-fourth of a Swedish mile (one and three-quarters of a mile English) from the fort on the creek: this was more suitable for the Hollanders who dwelt at Sandhook. On the strand at Wicacoa stood a blockhouse which, some years after, was changed into a church; so that service was held here and at Tenakong alternately. A block-house, answered the purpose very well; for the churches generally were of the same material. The Indians were not always to be depended upon, that they would not make an incursion, fall upon the Christians, and capture their whole flock. It was, therefore, necessary for them to have their religious houses as a place of defence for the body as well as for the soul. The churches were so built, that after a suitable elevation, like any other house, a projection was made some courses higher, out of which they could shoot; so that, if the heathen fell upon them, which could not be done

<sup>1</sup> Reynolds's Translation of Acrelius, p. 29.



without their coming up to the house, then the Swedes could shoot down upon them continually ; and the heathen, who used only bows and arrows, could do them little or no injury."

Thus the Swedes in Pennsylvania verified the lines of the facetious poet Trumbull, in the days of the Pilgrim Fathers of New England : —

“ As once, for fear of Indian beating,  
Our grandsires bore their guns to meeting,  
Each man equipped on Sunday morn  
With psalm-book, shot, and powder-horn.”

Of the manners and customs of this people, we subjoin the following from the same author : —

“ The houses are built of brick, after the English fashion, without coating, every brick glazed ; or they are of sandstone, granite, &c., as is mostly the case in the country. Sometimes, also, they build of oak planks five inches thick. To build of wood is not regarded as economy after every thing is paid for. The roof is of cedar shingles. Within, the walls and ceilings are plastered, and whitewashed once a year. Straw carpets have lately been introduced in the town. But the inconvenience of this is, that they must soon be cleansed from fly-spots and a multitude of vermin, (which harbor in such things), and from the kitchen smoke, which is universal. The windows are large, divided into two pieces, — the upper and the lower : the latter is opened by raising, and shut by lowering. The wood-work is painted, or it does not last long.

“ The furniture of the house is usually made of the woods of the country, and consists of a dining-table, tea-table, supper-table, bureaus, cabinets, and chairs, which are made of walnut, mahogany, maple, wild cherry, or sweet gum. All these trees are the growth of the country, except mahogany, which is brought from South America.

“ The articles of dress are very little different among city and country people, except that the former procure them from the merchants' shops, and the latter make them for themselves, and usually of coarser stuff. Wool, weaving, and fulling mills

are not used for manufacturing broadcloth, camelot, and other woollen cloths, which might be finer, if more carefully attended to. The coloring of certain stuffs is very inferior. Silks are rare, even in the town. Plush is general; and satin is used all over the country. Calicoes and cottons are used for women's dresses. Handsome linen is the finest stuff sought by men, as the heat is great, and of long continuance. By their dress, most people are known, — whether of Irish or German birth."

Although they were plain men and frugal, yet, according to this historian, they were what we should call good liver. He says, —

"Ham, beef, tongue, roast beef, fowls, with cabbage set round about, make one meal. Roast mutton or veal, with potatoes or turnips, form another. Another still is formed by a pasty of chickens, or partridges, or lamb. Beef-steak, veal-cutlets, mutton-chops, or turkey, goose or fowls with potatoes set around, with stewed green peas, or Turkish beans, or some other beans, are another meal. Pies of apples, peaches, cherries, or cranberries, &c., form another course. When cheese and butter are added, one has an ordinary meal.

"The breakfast is tea or coffee. Along with these are eaten long and thin slices of bread, with thin slices of smoked beef in summer. In winter bread roasted, soaked in milk and butter, and called toast; or pancakes of buckwheat, so light that one can scarcely hold them between his fingers, are also used. The afternoon meal ('four-o'clock piece'), taken at four o'clock, is usually the same. Suppers are not much in use."

They were undoubtedly wise in pursuing the course of not ordinarily taking any meal after four o'clock. It would seem, also, they were free from the practice of putting lard, called "shortening," into pie-crust; for he adds in a note, "A pie is a tart made of the fruits named in the text. Apple-pie is used through the whole year, and, when fresh apples are no longer to be had, dried ones are used. It is the evening meal of children. House-pie in country places is made of apples neither peeled, nor freed from their cores; and its crust is not broken if

a wagon-wheel goes over it." Nor had they adopted the present course of temperance societies, by wholly abstaining from spirituous and fermented liquors ; for, speaking of their drinks, he enumerates the following : —

“ French wine, Frontignac, Pontac, Port-a-Port, Lisbon wine, Phial wine, Sherry, Madeira wine, Sangaree, cherry wine, currant wine, or black raspberry, apple wine (cider), cider royal, rum or sugar brandy, raw dram or raw rum, egg-dram or egg-nog, cherry-bounce, bilberry-dram, punch (made of fresh spring water, sugar, lemon-juice, and Jamaica spirits), mämm (made of water, sugar, and rum), manathan (made of small-beer with rum and sugar), tiff, or flipp (made of small-beer, rum, and sugar, with a slice of bread toasted and buttered), hot rum warmed (with sugar and grains of allspice), mulled rum, warmed (with egg-yolks and allspice), hotch-pot (warmed beer with rum in it), Sampson (warmed cider with rum in it), grog (water and rum), sling, or long-sup (half water and half rum, with sugar in it), mint-water, distilled from mint (mixed in the rum), egg-punch (of yolks of eggs, rum, sugar, and warm water), milk-punch (of milk, rum, sugar, and grated nutmeg), sillabub (of milkwarm milk, wine, and sugar). Brandy was then distilled from peaches or apples ; and whiskey was brandy made of grain.”

The Dutch, the Swedes, and some Englishmen from New England, mingling together, sometimes the one taking precedence, and then the others, making larger or smaller purchases of the Indians, as the case might be, held possession of the Delaware until 1682, when William Penn with his great charter, which he received from Charles II., came over and settled on the Delaware, — about seventy years from the first settlement by the Dutch.



## CHAPTER II.

### RISE, PROGRESS, AND PRINCIPLES OF THE DENOMINATION CALLED QUAKERS, OR FRIENDS.

George Fox—His Followers take the Name of Friends: His Enemies call them Quakers—Statement of their Principles published by Themselves—Admiral Sir William Penn—His Offices and Exploits—Birth of William Penn—His Early Education—Meeting with Thomas Loe—Embraces Loe's Views—Incurs his Father's Displeasure—Is sent to France—Then to Ireland—Again meets Loe—Returns Home—Driven from his Father's House—Colloquy between the Admiral and his Wife—Penn's Books—His Father's Reconciliation—Admiral's Death.

GEORGE FOX, the founder of this sect, was born at Drayton-in-the-Clay, Leicestershire, 1624. The occupation of shoemaker and grazier not meeting the needs of a highly religious nature, he forsook them, and began a wandering life in 1643, sometimes living in solitude, at others frequenting the company of religious and devout persons, finally settling into a public preacher of the Quakers in 1647 or 1648. So boldly did he advance the peculiar doctrines of this people, that he became the object of persecution, which was carried so far, that he was imprisoned at Nottingham in 1649; and, during his whole life, he suffered the like treatment eight times, being often subjected to great severity. To perpetuate his views, he visited not only England, Ireland, and Scotland, but extended his travels to Holland and Germany, to the American colonies, and the West India Islands. He died in London, 1690.

He and his followers called themselves by the name of Friends: others gave them the name of Quakers, some say, "for directing their enemies to tremble at the word of the Lord;" others, "in consequence of the odd contortions of their bodies."

We quote the following record of their principles, as published by their leading men in London, one hundred and fifty years after George Fox first preached them in England; it being always fair and just to allow every denomination to state their own principles and belief:—

“We agree, with other professors of the Christian name, in the belief of one eternal God, the Creator and Preserver of the universe, and in Jesus Christ, his Son, the Messiah, and Mediator of the new covenant.

“When we speak of the gracious display of the love of God to mankind, in the miraculous conception, birth, life, miracles, death, resurrection, and ascension of our Saviour, we prefer the use of such terms as we find in Scripture; and, contented with that knowledge which Divine Wisdom hath seen meet to reveal, we attempt not to explain those mysteries which remain under the veil: nevertheless, we acknowledge and assert the divinity of Christ, who is the wisdom and power of God unto salvation.

“To Christ alone, we give the title of the Word of God, and not to the Scriptures, although we highly esteem these sacred writings in subordination to the Spirit, from which they were given forth; and we hold, with the apostle Paul, that they are able to make wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

“We reverence those most excellent precepts which are recorded in Scripture to have been delivered by our great Lord; and we firmly believe that they are practicable, and binding on every Christian, and that, in the life to come, every man will be rewarded according to his works. And, further, it is our belief, that, in order to enable mankind to put in practice these sacred precepts, many of which are contradictory to the unregenerate will of man, every man coming into the world is endued with a measure of the light, grace, or good spirit of Christ, by which, as it is attended to, he is enabled to distinguish good from evil, and to correct the disorderly passions and corrupt propensities of his nature, which mere reason is altogether insufficient to overcome. For all that belongs to man is fallible, and within the reach of temptation; but this

divine grace, which comes by Him who hath overcome the world, is, to those who humbly and sincerely seek it, an all-sufficient and present help in time of need. By this the snares of the enemy are detected, his allurements avoided, and deliverance is experienced, through faith in its effectual operation, whereby the soul is translated out of the kingdom of darkness, and from under the power of Satan, into the marvellous light and kingdom of the Son of God.

“Being thus persuaded that man, without the spirit of Christ inwardly revealed, can do nothing to the glory of God, or to effect his own salvation, we think this influence especially necessary to the performance of the highest art of which the human mind is capable, even the worship of the Father of lights and of spirits in spirit and in truth: therefore we consider as obstruction to pure worship all forms which divert the attention of the mind from the secret influence of this unction from the Holy One. Yet, although true worship is not confined to time and place, we think it incumbent on Christians to meet often together, in testimony of their dependence on the heavenly Father, and for a renewal of their spiritual strength: nevertheless, in the performance of worship, we dare not depend for our acceptance with him on a formal repetition of the words and experiences of others; but we believe it to be our duty to lay aside the activity of the imagination, and to wait in silence to have a true sight of our condition bestowed upon us, believing even a single sight, arising from such a sense of our infirmities, and of the need we have of divine help, to be more acceptable to God than any performances, however specious, which originate in the will of man.

“From what has been said respecting worship, it follows that the ministry we approve must have its origin from the same source; for that which is needful for man’s own direction, and for his acceptance with God, must be eminently so to enable him to be helpful to others. Accordingly, we believe that the renewed assistance of the light and power of Christ is indispensably necessary for all true ministry, and that this holy influence is not at our command, or to be procured by study,

but is the free gift of God to chosen and devoted servants. Hence arises our testimony against preaching for hire, in contradiction to Christ's positive command, 'Freely ye have received, freely give;' and hence our conscientious refusal to support such ministry by tithes or other means.

"As we dare not encourage any ministry but that which we believe to spring from the influence of the Holy Spirit, so neither dare we attempt to restrain this influence to persons of any condition in life, or to the male sex alone; but, as male and female are one in Christ, we allow such of the female sex as we believe to be endued with a right qualification for the ministry to exercise their gifts for the general edification of the church; and this liberty we esteem a peculiar mark of the gospel dispensation, as foretold by the prophet Joel, and noticed by the apostle Peter.

"There are two ceremonies in use among most professors of the Christian name, — water baptism, and what is termed the Lord's Supper. The first of these is generally esteemed the essential means of initiation into the church, and the latter of maintaining communication with him. But as we have been convinced that nothing short of his redeeming power, inwardly revealed, can set the soul free from the thralldom of sin, by this power alone we believe salvation to be effected. We hold, that, as there is one Lord and one faith, so his baptism is one in nature and operation; that nothing short of it can make us members of his mystical body; and that the baptism with water, administered by his forerunner, John, belonged, as the latter confessed, to an inferior and decreasing dispensation.

"With respect to the other rite, we believe that communion between Christ and his church is not maintained by that, nor any other external performance, but only by a real participation of his divine nature, through faith; that this is the supper alluded to in Revelation, 'Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me;' and that, where the substance is attained, it is unnecessary to attend to the shadow, which doth not confer grace, and con-



cerning which, opinions so different, and animosities so violent, have arisen.

“Now, as we thus believe that the grace of God, which comes by Jesus Christ, is alone sufficient for salvation, we can neither admit that it is conferred on a few only, whilst others are left without it; nor, thus asserting its universality, can we limit its operation to a partial cleansing of the soul from sin, even in this life. We entertain worthier notions, both of the power and goodness of our heavenly Father, and believe that he doth vouchsafe to assist the obedient to experience a total surrender of the natural will to the guidance of his pure, unerring spirit, through whose renewed assistance they are enabled to bring forth fruits unto holiness, and to stand perfect in their present rank.

“There are not many of our tenets more generally known than our testimony against oaths, and against war. With respect to the former of these, we abide literally by Christ’s positive injunction, delivered in his Sermon on the Mount, ‘Swear not at all.’ From the same sacred collection of the most excellent precepts of moral and religious duty, from the example of our Lord himself, and from the correspondent convictions of his spirit in our hearts, we are confirmed in the belief that wars and fightings are, in their origin and effects, utterly repugnant to the gospel, which still breathes peace and good-will to men. We, also, are clearly of the judgment, that, if the benevolence of the gospel were generally prevalent in the minds of men, it would effectually prevent them from oppressing, much more enslaving, their brethren (of whatever color or complexion), for whom, as for themselves, Christ died; and would even influence their conduct in their treatment of the brute creation, which would no longer groan, the victims of their avarice, or of their false ideas of pleasure.

“Some of our tenets have, in former times, as hath been shown, subjected our friends to much suffering from government, though to the salutary purposes of government our principles are a security. They inculcate submission to the laws in all cases where conscience is not violated. But we hold, that, as Christ’s kingdom is not of this world, it is not the

business of the civil magistrate to interfere in matters of religion, but to maintain the external peace and good order of the community. We, therefore, think persecution, even in the smallest degree, unwarrantable. We are careful in requiring our members not to be concerned in illicit trade, nor in any manner to defraud the revenue.

“It is well known that the society, from its first appearance, has disused those names of the months and days, which, having been given in honor of the heroes or false gods of the heathen, originated in their flattery or superstition, and the custom of speaking to a single person in the plural number, as having arisen also from motives of adulation. Compliments, superfluity of apparel and furniture, outward shows of rejoicing and mourning, and the observation of days and times, we esteem to be incompatible with the simplicity and sincerity of a Christian life; and public diversions, gaming, and other amusements of the world, we cannot but condemn. They are a waste of that time which is given us for nobler purposes, and divert the attention of the mind from the sober duties of life and from the reproofs of instruction by which we are guided to an everlasting inheritance.

“To conclude: although we have exhibited the several tenets which distinguish our religious society as objects of our belief, yet we are sensible that a true and living faith is not produced in the mind of man by his own effort, but is the free gift of God in Christ Jesus, nourished and increased by the progressive operation of his spirit in our hearts, and our proportionate obedience. Therefore, although for the preservation of the testimonies given us to bear, and for the peace and good order of the society, we deem it necessary that those who are admitted into membership with us should be previously convinced of those doctrines which we esteem essential, yet we require no formal subscription to any articles, either as a condition of membership, or a qualification for the service of the church. We prefer the judging of men by their fruits, and depending on the aid of Him, who, by his prophet, hath promised to be ‘a spirit of judgment to him that sitteth in judgment.’ Without this there is a danger of receiving members

into outward communion, without any addition to that spiritual sheepfold, whereof our blessed Lord declared himself to be both the door and the shepherd; that is, such as know his voice, and follow him in the paths of obedience. (See Heb. xii. 24; 1 Cor. i. 24; John i. 1; 2 Pet. i. 21; 2 Tim. iii. 15; Matt. xvi. 27; John i. 9-16, 33; 1 John ii. 20, 27; Heb. x. 25; Rom. viii. 26; Jer. xxiii. 30-32; Matt. x. 8; Joel ii. 28, 29; Acts ii. 16, 17; Eph. iv. 5; John iii. 30; 2 Pet. i. 4; Rev. iii. 20; Matt. v. 48; Eph. iv. 13; Col. iv. 12; Matt. v. 34, 39, 44, &c., xxvi. 52, 53; Luke xxii. 51; John xviii. 11; Eph. ii. 8; John vii. 27; Isa. xxviii. 6; John x. 7, 11.)”

Such were the principles of this peculiar people denominated Quakers, to which William Penn, the founder of the colony of Pennsylvania, attached himself, and for which he suffered many things, as will hereafter be seen from the sketch of his life. Before, however, speaking of him, it may be appropriate to give some account of his father, Admiral Sir William Penn, who was descended from an ancient and honorable family, born in Bristol, in the year 1621.

He was appointed to the highest maritime offices, in quick succession, — “made captain at twenty-one years of age, rear-admiral of Ireland at twenty-three, vice-admiral of Ireland at twenty-five, admiral to the Straits at twenty-nine, vice-admiral of England at thirty-one; and general in the first *Dutch* war at thirty-two; whence returning, anno 1655, he was a parliament man for the town of *Weymouth*; in 1660, he was made commissioner of the admiralty and navy, governor of the town and fort of *Kingsail*, vice-admiral of *Munster*, and a member of that provincial council; and, anno 1664, he was chosen great captain commander under the Duke of York, in that signal and most evidently successful fight with the *Dutch* fleet.” He died in 1670 at Wanstead in the county of Essex. Such were the services of Admiral Sir William Penn, for which the crown was greatly indebted to him, as also for the vast sums of money advanced by him for the relief of the exchequer.

William Penn, son of the admiral, was born in London, on the fourteenth day of October, 1644. “If ever a son of Adam and Eve had cause to glory in the flesh, that son was HONEST,



BROAD-BRIMMED, William Penn. ‘A generation there is,’ says Solomon, ‘oh, how they can lift up their eyebrows, and how they can roll their eyes,’ swelling and strutting like the star-tailed birds of the dunghill, because their fathers before them were *knights* or *baronets*, though all beyond were shoeblacks or rat-catchers. But not so the noble founder of Pennsylvania. He was of the ‘well-born’ in the worthiest sense of the word. For fifteen generations, the best and bravest blood in England had flowed in the veins of his family, unstained by a single act that history should blush to record. No scoundrel sycophants were made *drunk* at their *tables*, while the poor tenant’s children cried for bread; nor the needy hireling pined for his pay, while their proud drawing-rooms were filled with costly carpets and sideboards. No unsuspecting stranger, after sharing their splendid hospitalities, was fleeced of his purse by their *gambling* arts, and then turned out of doors to curse the polished robbers. No! such stains of pride and villany were never known to sully the Penn coat-of-arms.”<sup>1</sup> 1359775

Napoleon Bonaparte said, “Great men have great mothers, and what France needs is mothers.” William Penn seems to have been particularly blessed in his mother; and to her he is largely indebted for his early religious impressions. This colloquy, occurring between him and his mother when he was five years old, will show the means she took to lead his infant mind to a knowledge of God.

“Well, William, I want to see if you can answer mother one *great* question.”

“Well, mother,” replied William, his eyes sparkling, “come, tell me what it is.”

“Well, William,” said she, “can you tell mother who made you?”

“Yes, to be sure; that I can, easy enough. God did make me, didn’t he?”

“How do you know that, my son?”

“Heigh, mother, didn’t you tell me so a matter of a hundred times, and more?”

“But suppose, William, I had not told you that God made you, do you think you could have found it out?”

<sup>1</sup> Weems’s Life of William Penn, p. 5.

Here William paused, at length replied, "Indeed, mother, I don't know."

"Why not, my son? It seems very easy."

"Well, then, mother; come, tell me."

"Well, now, my son, you see that stone that lies there at your feet, don't you?"

"Yes, mother, to be sure I do. And what of that stone, mother?"

"That stone is *something*; isn't it, my son?"

"Yes, to be sure: it is something."

"But how do you know it is *something*, William?"

"Heigh, mother, don't I *see* it? and don't I *feel* it, that it is *something*?—and a mighty *hard* and *big* and *heavy* something, too."

Here, good reader, let us pause, and note how soon the divine light of reason darts on the minds of children. What master of the mathematics could give a better definition of *matter*, or, as the text has it, of *something*, than little William here does? "Don't I *see* it, mother?" says he: "don't I *feel* it, that it is *something*?—and a mighty *hard* and *big* and *heavy* *something* too."

"Well—but, William," continued his mother, "how came it to be this *something*?"

"Indeed, mother, I don't know."

"Well; but does it not strike you, my son, that, since it is something, it must have been *made* so, or *made itself* so?" William paused as if quite at a loss, but at length said, "I don't see, mother, how it could have made *itself*."

"Why not, my son?"

"What, this stone made itself!" replied he, like one suddenly struck, as at the idea of something quite absurd and ridiculous; "this stone made itself! Why, dear me, mother, 'tis such a *dead* thing! It can't *see*; it can't *hear*; it can't *stir*. I don't see any *sense* it had to make itself a stone, or any thing else."

"No, indeed, William! Nor can the greatest philosopher of them all see it, either; for, in that case, it must have had a great deal of sense, which I am sure it has not. Well, now,

William, since it is plain that this stone did not make itself, who do you think could have made it?"

"Indeed, mother, I don't know, unless it was father. As he sails the great ships, perhaps he did make it. When he comes home, we will ask him; won't we, mother?"

"Oh, no!" said Mrs. Penn, shaking her head, and smiling; "oh, no, William! your father did not make it, my son; nor could all the men in the world, put together, make it, nor even a single grain of sand."

William appeared much at a loss at this. But, after some silence, he went on again with his questions. "Well, then, mother, who did make that stone?"

"Why, my son," answered Mrs. Penn, "since it is plain that it had no *sense* to make itself, and since all the men in the world put together could not have made it, it follows that it must have *been made* by some mighty one, who had wisdom and power to make all things."

"Ay, that's God; isn't it, mother?"

"Why, yes, to be sure, my son, it is God. It is he made this stone, and all the stones, and all the trees, and all the cattle, and the birds, and the fishes, and all the people, and the mountains, and the skies, and every thing."

"And did not God make *me too*, mother?" asked William.

"Yes, to be sure, he did, my son."

"But yet, mother, I'm your little boy, ain't I?"

"Yes, that you are, William, and a dear little boy too. But still God did make you, for all that. Since all the men in the world, as I said just now, could not make one grain of sand, then, oh! how could I make such a beautiful little boy like you?"

He first attended the grammar school at Chigwell, in Essex. This school was but a short distance from his father's country residence at that time. He was then only eleven; and while here, alone in his chamber, he was suddenly surprised with a great inward comfort, and apparent external glory in the room, which caused religious emotions, and a strong conviction of the existence of a God, and that man was capable of receiving

communications from him. As the result of this, his mind became seriously impressed with the subject of religion.

He left Chigwell at twelve years of age, and then attended a private school at Tower Hill, near his father's London residence. His father also procured for him a private tutor in his own house. Such was his progress in his studies, that at fifteen he entered, a gentleman-commoner, at Christ Church, Oxford. Although he was a hard student, yet he allowed himself time for all necessary recreation. His intimate friends at the university were Robert Spencer, afterwards Earl of Sunderland, also the eminent John Locke.

Although possessed of a very lively genius, and indulging in manly sports and exercises, yet he appears never to have forgotten the religious impressions received at Chigwell. These impressions were greatly strengthened by one Thomas Loe, a Quaker. Loe had belonged to the university of Oxford, but had left, and commenced preaching, although a layman.

Soon after hearing Loe, he, with some other students who entertained religious sentiments similar to his own, began to withdraw from the established worship, and to hold meetings among themselves. This gave offence to the professors of the college; and they fined all of them for non-attendance upon the regular service. This first persecution for conscience' sake took place in 1660. Like all persecution for religion, this fine, instead of deterring from the practice, caused them to go still further.

About this time, an order came from Charles II., that the surplice should be worn, as it had been in ancient times. The sight of this old relic of Popery, which had long been laid aside, was so disagreeable to William Penn (who conceived that the introduction of any outward form or ceremony detracted from the spirituality of the Christian religion), that he could not endure it. Therefore, having engaged his friend Robert Spencer, and several other young men, to join him, they fell upon the students appearing in surplices, and tore them to pieces over their heads. This outrage was of such a nature, that the university immediately took it up, and expelled William and several of his associates. Thus expelled, William returned home.



His father received him with great coldness, on account of the public disgrace which he had thus incurred. He was still more vexed with the change in his habits, such as abandoning the fashionable world, and mingling only with serious and religious people. The admiral feared that all the prospects in life which he had formed for his son would now fail. He first resorted to argument; this failing, he proceeded to blows; and, this also proving ineffectual, he turned him out of doors.

But the admiral soon felt he had proceeded too far. He was of an excellent disposition, although of a hasty temper. His wife, also, a very amiable woman, interceded for their son; and this affectionate disposition, united with the entreaties of his wife, prevailed, and he forgave William. He wished, however, to provide against the future; and, seeing no other way to do it, he sent William to France in 1662, hoping that removing him from his old companions, and the gayety of the French court, might dissipate the increasing gravity of his mind.

"The place where William first resided was Paris. While here, but one incident concerning him is recorded. It happened that he was attacked one evening in the street by a person who drew his sword upon him in consequence of a supposed affront. A conflict immediately ensued. William disarmed his antagonist, but proceeded no further, sparing his life, when, by the confession of all those who relate the fact, he could have taken it; thus exhibiting, says Gerard Croese, a testimony, not only of his courage, but of his forbearance."<sup>1</sup>

William's trip to France did not wholly disappoint the admiral; for the mildness of the climate, the variety and beauty of its scenery, its silvery waters, verdant meadows, and white castles, did much to dissipate gloom from his mind; and no people on earth could more have fascinated his youthful imagination than the French, who please themselves by pleasing others. With a nature formed for benevolence, William soon fell in love with them. He learned their language, caught their manners, forgot his proud English stiffness, adopted many of their habits, and became, in a good degree, an elegant and accomplished Frenchman.

<sup>1</sup> Clarkson's *Life of Penn*, vol. i. p. 2.



After twelve months' absence, he returned to Pennwood, and presented himself to his father, who received him with pride and pleasure, as he saw the marvellous change which had taken place in his appearance and manners. He introduced him at court, took him to visit his illustrious friends, and, lest he should fall again into what he considered his gloomy habits, sent him immediately to Dublin. With his pockets well filled with money, and letters from his friends at court, he presented himself to the Lord-Lieutenant, and other eminent persons in Dublin. He applied himself with great diligence to settling his father's estate, visiting friends, and was everywhere received with great courtesy, as an amiable young man, son and heir of Sir William Penn, admiral of the British navy.

He might have become precisely what his father desired, a young man of the world, had he not accidentally (as it seemed), in casting his eye over a Dublin newspaper, caught this notice, that "one of the people called Quakers would preach in the market-house the next day." Although he had conformed very much to the world, he had never lost his interest in the Quakers. He attended the meeting.

On the preacher's rising to speak, the placid countenance of his friend Thomas Loe appeared before him. Both were greatly surprised.

Loe had previously become deeply interested in young William, on account of the sufferings he had endured at the university and in his father's house, and believed him to be a consistent Christian; and now, upon beholding him in a fashionable dress, he feared he had gone back to that world which he had foresworn; and, with a melancholy look and a deep sigh, he said, "There is a faith which overcome the world, and there is a faith overcome by the world."

William was much alarmed upon first hearing this; and as Loe proceeded, with the looks and voice of a tender father towards a truant child, exposing the cowardice and hypocrisy of those who hear the great truths of the gospel, become interested, and shed many tears, but who, after all, suffer themselves to be overcome by the world, he was completely subdued, and consecrated himself anew.

Loe, addressing him personally, said, "I hope, my young friend, thee will keep in mind the saying of the Lord Jesus: 'The servant is not greater than his master.'"

The result, in consequence of Loe's preaching, was, that all the admiral's efforts to make William what he would have him were frustrated. His Dublin friends soon learned that William had joined the Quakers; and this news was not long in coming to the knowledge of the admiral, by letters to his friends in London, in which, while speaking of William as a young man of such a high promise, they expressed their regret that he should thus throw himself away.

This information threw the admiral into a great rage, witnessing which, Mrs. Penn eagerly inquired what was the matter.

"Matter!" replied he abruptly, — "*matter enough to run a parent mad. That silly boy of ours will be the death of me, that's a clear case.*"

"Why, what has he done now?" said Mrs. Penn, much startled.

"Done!" returned the admiral: "why, he has fallen in with Tom Loe, who has made a fool of him again."

His father immediately summoned him home; and upon his return, angry words arose between them, which his father summed up in the following language: "If you are determined to go and play the fool, you must go and do it somewhere else: you shall not do it in my family. And as I have had no hand in your folly, so I will not be eternally suffering the mortification of it, that I am determined on." Thus William was again turned out of doors.

As he was taking his hat to leave, he turned to his father, and said, "Father, had I been turned out of your doors because of any crime I had done, I should be wretched indeed. But, thanks to God! I go away with a conscience unstained by any act that should cause you or my dear mother to blush for me."

After William's departure, a long colloquy took place between the admiral and his wife, which the admiral closed by saying, he had hoped to have made something of him. "Make something of him," cried Mrs. Penn. "O my God! that you

should possess one of the richest blessings in all this world, and yet not know it. I mean a *pious* child. For oh! what on all this earth can be matter of such joy and triumph to a fond parent as a *pious* child? To me it was every thing. I thought of nothing else. I prayed for nothing else. ‘*Vain, delusive riches and honors,*’ I said, ‘*come not near my son. You are not one ten thousandth part good enough for him. Only let my son love God. Only let him have this, the sweetest spur to every virtue, the strongest curb from every vice, the best cordial under every affliction, and I ask no more.*’ Well, God in his infinite mercy heard my prayer. He gave me that which I esteem above all worlds, — a *pious* son. And, lo! you turn him out of doors! He has not ambition enough, he won’t be *rich* enough, nor *great* enough, to please you.”

Although exiled from his father’s house, he was, in a measure, supported by his mother and other friends. In 1668, being then twenty-four years old, he commenced speaking in the meeting. In the same year (1668), he also began writing letters to his friends upon the subject of religion. It was also in this year that he sent forth his first work or tract, entitled “Truth Exalted.” His second book was called “The Guide Mistaken, and Temporizing Rebuked.” His most prominent Christian work was written while in prison, bearing the title, “No Cross, No Crown: a Discourse Showing the Nature and Discipline of the Holy Cross of Christ.” Among his works was a small book, entitled “The Sandy Foundation Shaken.”

The works of William Penn were published in London, 1726, in two volumes folio; then, again, his select works were published in five volumes in London, 1782.

He was at different times confined, both at Newgate and the Tower.

William Penn, having now become firmly connected with the Quakers, as one of their preachers and authors, was wholly devoted to the propagation of their principles.

His father became fully reconciled to William, and upon his decease left him heir to his vast estates. He also sent a friend to the Duke of York, afterwards King James II., making it as a death-bed request, that he would protect his son

in case of persecution, and also to ask King Charles II. to do the same.

They both returned answer that they would be William's friends. His last advice to his son was given in the following language: "Son William, if you and your friends keep to your plain way of preaching, and keep to your plain way of living, you will make an end of the proud priest to the end of the world. Bury me by mother; live all in love; shun all manner of evil. I pray God to bless you all, and he will bless you all." He then bowed his head, and died.



## CHAPTER III.

### FURTHER PROGRESS OF WILLIAM PENN AND HIS QUAKERS.

Reasons for founding a Colony: to get his Dues from the Crown — To escape Persecution — Accounts from New Jersey Colonies — Penn's Persecution — Imprisonment — Trial — Defence — Appeal to the Jury — Prejudices of his Judges — Penn's Acquittal — Petition for a Charter — Opposition — Granting of Charter.

THE admiral, Sir William Penn, having died, and left his son heir to his vast estates, as stated in the last chapter, three things combined to induce him to colonize a portion of the American continent. First, he would thereby secure the land for a colony, in payment for the debt due his father from the Crown; secondly, he would escape persecution, and find a quiet resting-place for his Quakers; third, the glowing accounts which he had received of the country had created in him a strong desire to go there. As to the first-named fact, there was due him from the Crown the vast sum of sixteen thousand pounds sterling, more than two hundred thousand dollars of our money. The admiral had made long and strong efforts to collect this debt during his life; but the king's exchequer was empty, and Parliament voted no money to pay the debt.

After his father's death, William's efforts were equally unsuccessful. He importuned the government for many years; but his prospect for obtaining his money grew more and more gloomy, until at last, despairing of ever being able to accomplish it, he proposed to King Charles II. to relinquish all claims upon the government for a grant of lands in America. Of this proposition and petition more will be said hereafter.

In the second place, he saw no hope of an end to the persecution against himself and his friends, the Quakers. "Even



at this time (1680), so lamentably ignorant of the spirit of the gospel were the bishops of the Established Church, that they not only tolerated, but even encouraged, the mad multitude in the most cruel abuses of the Quakers. Headed by the sheriffs and magistrates, the populace would snatch off their hats and bonnets in the open streets, even of Liverpool, Bristol, and London, and dash them in their faces, or tread them under foot. They would burst into their meeting-houses, even while assembled in the worship of Almighty God, and, utterly regardless of the divine presence, drive them out like dogs, break the windows, split up the benches, tear down the galleries, and then nail up the buildings as forfeited to 'His Sacred Majesty, Charles the Second, by the Grace of God, Defender of the Faith.' And yet, instead of being ashamed of themselves for such brutal acts, or being disarmed of their fury by the meekness and patience of such gentle sufferers, they became more brutal against them still, keeping a closer watch over their proceedings, dogging them from place to place, attacking them at their meetings, even in *private houses*; and after shutting them up, too, as '*CONVENTICLES forfeited to the king*,' they would then drive them, like convicts, to the jails, and without any regard to the weather, or to age or sex, turn them into dark and dirty rooms, often in such crowds as to endanger their lives for want of fresh air; the women, even the most delicate, forced to sleep on the hard planks, and the men in hammocks stretched above them; while such as were supposed to have property were fined at the most inhuman rates, even, in some instances, at twenty pounds sterling a month, for *not attending* the Established Church; and when the money could not be raised by these poor people, as was often the case, the sheriffs would distrain their property, such as cows, calves, horses, beds, household furniture and utensils, and sell them off, frequently at half-price; thus actually reducing many an innocent and hard-working family, with their unoffending children, to beggary. And all these public robberies committed under the eye of King Charles and his clergy: the former, great part of his time, revelling with his harlots and jesters; and the latter, in all the solemn pageantry of sanctified looks and lawn sleeves

devoutly lifted to heaven, returning 'thanks to Almighty God, that they were ever born in a Christian country,' and making long prayers 'for the poor Jews and heathens.'"

That the reader may have a full and clear view of the persecution which befell William Penn and his Quakers in England, and of the narrow-mindedness and prejudice of his judges, we quote the following trial. While he was preaching in Grace-church Street, he and William Mead were seized by constables, who produced warrants signed by Sir Samuel Starling.

"On the 1st of September, the trial came on. There were present on the bench as justices Sir Samuel Starling, lord-mayor; John Howel, recorder; Thomas Buldworth, William Peak, Richard Ford, John Robinson, Joseph Sheldon, aldermen; and Richard Brown, John Smith, and James Edwards, sheriffs.

"The jury who were impanelled, and whose names ought to be handed down to the love and gratitude of posterity, were Thomas Veer, Edward Bushel, John Hammond, Charles Milson, Gregory Walklet, John Brightman, William Plumstead, Henry Henley, James Damask, Henry Michel, William Lever, and John Baily."

"The indictment stated, among other falsehoods, that the prisoners had preached to an unlawful, seditious, and riotous assembly; that they had assembled, by agreement made beforehand; and that they had met together with force and arms, and this to the great terror and disturbance of many of his Majesty's liege subjects.

"Very little was done on this day. The prisoners were brought to the bar; and, having made their observations on several things as they passed, they pleaded not guilty to the indictment. The Court was then adjourned. In the afternoon they were brought to the bar again; but they were afterwards set aside, being made to wait till after the trial of other prisoners.

"On the 3d of September, the trial of those last mentioned being over, William Penn and William Mead were brought again into court. One of the officers, as they entered,

pulled off their hats. Upon this the Lord-Mayor became furious, and in a stern voice ordered him to put them on again. This being done, the Recorder fined each forty marks, observing that the circumstance of being covered there amounted to a contempt of Court.

“The witnesses were then called in, and examined. It appeared from their testimony, that, on the 15th of August, between three and four hundred persons were assembled in Grace-church Street, and that they saw William Penn speaking to the people, but could not distinguish what he said. One, and only one, swore that he heard him preach; but, on further examination, he said that he could not, on account of the noise, understand any one of the words spoken. With respect to William Mead, it was proved that he was there also, and that he was heard to say something; but nobody could tell what. This was in substance the whole of the evidence against them.

“The witnesses having finished their testimony, William Penn acknowledged that both he and his friend were present at the place and time mentioned. Their object in being there was to worship God.

“‘We are so far,’ says he, ‘from recanting, or declining to vindicate the assembling of ourselves to preach, pray, or worship the eternal, holy, just God, that we declare to all the world, that we do believe it to be our indispensable duty to meet incessantly upon so good an account; nor shall all the powers upon earth be able to divert us from reverencing and adoring our God who made us.’ These words were scarcely pronounced, when one of the sheriffs exclaimed that he was not there for worshipping God, but for breaking the law. William Penn replied, that he had broken no law, and desired to know by what law it was that they prosecuted him, and upon what law it was that they founded the indictment. The Recorder replied, the common law. William asked where that law was. The Recorder did not think it worth while, he said, to run over all those adjudged cases for so many years, which they called common law, to satisfy his curiosity. William Penn thought, if the law were common, it should not be so hard to produce. He was then desired to plead to the indictment;

but, on delivering his sentiments on this point, he was pronounced a saucy fellow. The following is a specimen of some of the questions and answers at full length, which succeeded those now mentioned:—

“*Recorder.*—The question is, whether you are guilty of this indictment.

“*W. Penn.*—The question is not, whether I am guilty of this indictment, but whether this indictment be legal. It is too general and imperfect an answer to say it is the common law, unless we know where and what it is; for, where there is no law, there is no transgression; and that law which is not in being is so far from being common, that it is no law at all.

“*Recorder.*—You are an impertinent fellow. Will you teach the Court what law is? It is *lex non scripta*, that which many have studied thirty or forty years to know, and would you have me tell you in a moment?

“*W. Penn.*—Certainly, if the common law be so hard to be understood, it is far from being very common. But if the Lord Coke, in his Institutes, be of any consideration, he tells us that common law is common right, and that common right is the Great Charter privileges confirmed.

“*Recorder.*—Sir, you are a troublesome fellow; and it is not to the honor of the Court to suffer you to go on.

“*W. Penn.*—I have asked but one question; and you have not answered me, though the rights and privileges of every Englishman are concerned in it.

“*Recorder.*—If I should suffer you to ask questions till to-morrow morning, you would never be the wiser.

“*W. Penn.*—That is according as the answers are.

“*Recorder.*—Sir, we must not stand to hear you talk all night.

“*W. Penn.*—I design no affront to the Court, but to be heard in my just plea; and I must plainly tell you, that if you deny me the *oyer* of that law which you say I have broken, you do at once deny me an acknowledged right, and evidence to the whole world your resolution to sacrifice the privileges of Englishmen to your arbitrary designs.

“*Recorder.*—Take him away. My lord, if you take not some



course with this pestilent fellow to stop his mouth, we shall not be able to do any thing to-night.

"*Mayor*.— Take him away. Take him away. Turn him into the bail-dock.

"*W. Penn*.— These are but so many vain exclamations. Is this justice, or true judgment? Must I, therefore, be taken away, because I plead for the fundamental laws of England? However, this I leave upon the consciences of you who are of the jury and my sole judges, that if these ancient fundamental laws, which relate to liberty and property, and which are not limited to particular persuasions in matters of religion, must not be indispensably maintained and observed, who can say he hath a right to the coat upon his back? Certainly our liberties are to be openly invaded, our wives to be ravished, our children slaved, our families ruined, and our estates led away in triumph by every sturdy beggar and malicious informer, as their trophies, but our (pretended) forfeits for conscience' sake. The Lord of heaven and earth will be judge between us in this matter.

"*Recorder*.— Be silent there.

"*W. Penn*.— I am not to be silent in a case where I am so much concerned, and not only myself, but many ten thousand families besides.

"Soon after this, they hurried him away, as well as William Mead, who spoke also, towards the bail-dock, a filthy, loathsome dungeon. The recorder then proceeded to charge the Jury. But William Penn, hearing a part of the charge as he was retiring, stopped suddenly, and, raising his voice, exclaimed aloud, 'I appeal to the Jury, who are my judges, and this great assembly, whether the proceedings of the Court are not most arbitrary, and void of all law, in endeavoring to give the jury their charge in the absence of the prisoners. I say it is directly opposite to and destructive of the undoubted right of every English prisoner, as Coke on the chapter of Magna Charta speaks.'

"Upon this, some conversation passed between the parties, who were still distant from each other; after which the two prisoners were forced to their loathsome dungeon.



“Being now out of all hearing, the Jury were ordered to agree upon their verdict. Four, who appeared visibly to favor the prisoners, were abused and actually threatened by the Recorder. They were then, all of them, sent out of court. On being brought in again, they delivered their verdict unanimously, which was, ‘Guilty of speaking in Grace-church Street.’

“The Magistrates upon the bench now loaded the Jury with reproaches. They refused to take their verdict, and immediately adjourned the Court, sending them away for half an hour to reconsider it.

“The time having expired, the Court sat again. The prisoners were then brought to the bar, and the Jury again called in. The latter, having taken their place, delivered the same verdict as before, but with this difference, that they then delivered it in writing with the signature of all their names.

“The Magistrates were now more than ever enraged at the conduct of the Jury; and they did not hesitate to express their indignation at it in terms the most opprobrious in open Court. The recorder then addressed them as follows, ‘Gentlemen, you shall not be dismissed till we have a verdict such as the Court will accept; and you shall be locked up without meat, drink, fire, and tobacco. You shall not think thus to abuse the Court. We will have a verdict, by the help of God, or you shall starve for it.’

“William Penn, upon hearing this address, immediately spoke as follows, ‘My Jury, who are my judges, ought not thus to be menaced: their verdict should be free, and not compelled: the Bench ought to wait upon them, and not to forestall them. I do desire that justice may be done me, and that the arbitrary resolves of the Bench may not be made the measure of my Jury’s verdict.’

“Other words passed between them; after which the Court was about to adjourn, and the jury to be sent to their chamber, and the prisoners to their loathsome hole, when William Penn observed, that the agreement of twelve men was a verdict in law; and, such a verdict having been given by the Jury, he required the Clerk of the Peace to record it, as he would answer it at his peril; and, if the Jury brought in another verdict con-

trary to this, he affirmed that they would be perjured in law. Then, turning to the Jury, he said additionally, 'You are Englishmen. Mind your privilege. Give not away your right.'

"One of the Jury now pleaded indisposition, and desired to be dismissed. This request, however, was not granted. The Court, on the other hand, swore several persons to keep the Jury all night without meat, drink, fire, tobacco, or any other accommodation whatsoever, and then adjourned till seven the next morning.

"The next morning, which was September the 4th, happened to be Sunday. The Jury were again called in; but they returned the same verdict as before. The Bench now became outrageous, and indulged in the most vulgar and brutal language, such, indeed, as would be almost incredible, if it were not upon record. The Jury were again charged, and again sent out of Court: again they returned; again they delivered the same verdict; again they were threatened. William Penn having spoken against the injustice of the Court in having menaced the Jury, who were his judges by the Great Charter of England, and in having rejected their verdict, the Lord-Mayor exclaimed, 'Stop his mouth; gaoler, bring fetters, and stake him to the ground.' William Penn replied, 'Do your pleasure: I matter not your fetters.' The Recorder observed, 'Till now I never understood the reason of the policy and prudence of the Spaniards in suffering the Inquisition among them; and certainly it will never be well with us till something like the Spanish Inquisition be in England.' Upon this, the Jury were ordered to withdraw to find another verdict; but they refused, saying they had already given it, and that they could find no other. The Sheriff then forced them away. Several persons were immediately sworn to keep them without any accommodation as before; and the Court adjourned till seven next morning.

"On the 5th of September, the Jury, who had received no refreshment for two days and two nights, were again called in, and the business resumed. The Court demanded a positive answer to these words, 'Guilty, or not guilty?' The Foreman of the Jury replied, 'Not guilty.' Every jurymen was then required to repeat this answer separately. This he did to the

satisfaction of almost all in the court. The following address and conversation then passed.

“ *Recorder.* — Gentlemen of the Jury, I am sorry you have followed your own judgments rather than the good advice which was given you. God keep my life out of your hands! But for this the Court fines you forty marks a man, and imprisonment till paid.

“ *W. Penn.* — I demand my liberty, being freed by the Jury.

“ *Mayor.* — No: you are in for your fines.

“ *W. Penn.* — Fines for what?

“ *Mayor.* — For contempt of Court.

“ *W. Penn.* I ask if it be according to the fundamental laws of England, that any Englishman should be fined, or amerced, but by the judgment of his peers, or jury, since it expressly contradicts the fourteenth and twenty-ninth chapters of the Great Charter of England, which says, ‘No freeman shall be amerced, but by the oath of good and lawful men of the vicinage.’

“ *Recorder.* — Take him away.

“ *W. Penn.* — I can never urge the fundamental laws of England, but you cry, ‘Take him away.’ But it is no wonder, since the Spanish Inquisition has so great a place in the Recorder’s heart. God, who is just, will judge you for all these things.

“ These words were no sooner uttered than William Penn and his friend, William Mead, were forced into the bail-dock, from whence they were sent to Newgate. Every one of the Jury, also, were sent to Newgate. The plea for this barbarous usage was, that both the prisoners and the Jury refused to pay the fine of forty marks which had been put upon each of them, — upon the former, because one of the mayor’s officers had put their hats upon their heads by his own command; and upon the latter, because they would not bring in a verdict contrary to their own consciences, in compliance with the wishes of the Bench.”

Lastly, the glowing accounts of the beauty and fertility of the country, which Penn received from the colonists of West Jersey, had inspired him with a strong desire to obtain the

territory west of the Delaware; and as if in answer to that desire, apparently by a special interposition of Divine Providence, Penn became connected with the Jersey colonists. Lord Berkeley and Sir John Carteret having become joint patentees, from the Duke of York, of the Province of New Jersey, in 1674 Lord Berkeley conveyed his portion of the patent to John Fenwick, in trust for himself and Edward Byllynge, both Quakers. Fenwick and Byllynge disagreed; and being Quakers, instead of going to law, they referred their difficulty to William Penn, who decided in favor of Byllynge. For a time, Fenwick refused to acquiesce in Penn's decision, but finally was so far prevailed upon by his arguments, that he agreed to the settlement; and in 1675 he and his family left England for West Jersey. Byllynge now became so embarrassed in his pecuniary matters, that he made over all his property to Penn and two of his creditors, as trustees. Penn was reluctant to assume the office; but, having taken that trust upon him, he immediately made efforts to settle the country by sending out a colony to locate there.

The form of the government established under Berkeley and Carteret embraced religious freedom, and stated there should be no taxation independent of the allowance of the settlers. Many were now anxious to emigrate; and two companies of Quakers — one from London, the other from Yorkshire — purchased a large territory; and the trustees appointed commissioners from among the emigrants to treat with the Indians for their right to the lands. Penn thus had the satisfaction of bringing his labors for the Quakers, by colonizing with them West New Jersey, to a happy result; for in 1677, three vessels — two from London, and one from Hull — sailed for West Jersey with more than four hundred Quakers. They gave to their new settlement the name of Burlington. It was thus West New Jersey became settled by a colony of Quakers.

“From those people he learned often that the Indian country on the western side of the great River Delaware was most beautiful to look upon. ‘The plains,’ said they, ‘along the winding flood are, in most places, covered with corn and natural meadows and marshes; while all on the back of this, a mighty



forest rose, tall and stately, darkening the western sky with its blue shade, and stretching itself north and south with the river far as the astonished eye can travel.' They stated, too, that sundries of the people had, at different times, gone over the great river to trade; and that all of them, on their return, had made the same very favorable reports both of the inhabitants and their country. And first of the inhabitants. '*With respect to these,*' said they, '*we were never so agreeably disappointed.*' We had expected to find a people fierce and rude as the bears and panthers of their forests; but we met a people the most friendly that we had ever seen. As we approached their towns, they would hasten forth to bid us welcome, shaking hands with us very cordially, and signifying, by the kindest smiles and nods, how glad they were to see us, and, with great vehemence and affection, addressing us in words which the interpreters said were to tell us how welcome we were to our Indian brothers. After this they would take us to their towns, and spread down skins for us to sit on; and, while the men entertained us with *smoking*, the women would bring us barbecued turkies and venison and roasting-ears to feast on.

"And as to the country, we can truly say of it that it is a land most rich, and desirable to dwell in, — a land of fountains and brooks, — a land of mighty oaks and elms, and all manner of precious trees for timber, — a land whose soil, especially on the water-courses, was a black mould, very deep and rich, in-somuch that the Indian corn, without the aid of the plough, grew there to an enormous size, with two and sometimes three large shocks on a stalk; and we have counted seven and eight hundred grains on a shock. And then for the game in these ancient forests: it was wonderful to look at, far surpassing in abundance any thing that we had ever thought of. For, in walking through the woods, we were ever and anon starting up the deer in droves, and also frequently within sight of large herds of the buffalo, all perfectly wild, and wallowing in fat, and seeming, in their course, to shake the earth with their weight. And, indeed, no wonder; for the grass, particularly in the low grounds, grew so rank and tall, that the buffalo and deer on flying into it, which they were wont to do when frightened, would disappear in a moment.



“The rabbits and partridges, too, were exceedingly numerous ; and, as to the wild turkeys, we have often seen them perched in such numbers that the branches seemed quite black with them. Nor had the Creator been less mindful of the waters in that great country ; for they were made to bring forth abundantly of fine fish of various kinds, especially the sturgeon, of which the great river was so full, that at no time could we look on it without seeing numbers of these great fishes leaping from it into the air, not without much fright to the natives, whose canoes they have many a time fallen into, and upset. And for water-fowl, such as geese and ducks, they were in such quantities, that he who should tell only one-half the truth would be counted a romancer. For, indeed, the whole surface of the mighty river seemed covered over and black with them ; and when, at any time, they were disturbed, and rose up, their rising all at once was like the sound of distant thunder ; and the day itself was darkened with their numbers. We saw, also, the wild vine in that country, the spontaneous birth of the woods, growing to an enormous size, and spreading over the trees to an astonishing extent, bending the branches with their dark-blue clusters ; most lovely to sight and taste, and capable, no doubt, of yielding a very pleasant wine. Nor were the bees forgotten in that favored land ; for we often saw them at work among the sweet-scented bells and blossoms of the wild wood-flowers. And besides, at the simple feasts spread for us by these simple heathens, we were frequently regaled with calabashes of snow-white honeycomb.

“Now, counting all these advantages of this Indian country, — the nobleness of its waters, and the richness of its lands, with that plenteousness of fowl and fish and flesh of all sorts, — how can we but say that it is a land which the Lord has blessed ; and that it only wanteth a wise people to render it, like the ancient Canaan, ‘*the glory of earth*’ ? ”<sup>1</sup>

With a view to accomplishing a settlement in this western world, promising these before-mentioned threefold things, it is not strange that Penn set himself to the work with great zest.

In the summer of 1680, Penn sent his petition to King

<sup>1</sup> Weems, p. 111.

Charles II., that letters-patent might be granted him for a tract of land in America, lying north of Maryland, bounded by Delaware River on the east, by Maryland on the west, and extending north as far as plantable.

The king was pleased to pay his debts so easily as by granting a patent to this territory. Only a fragment of the original petition is now extant; but it contained the following sentence: "Praying that, in lieu of the monies due him from the Crown, he, the king, would be pleased to grant him a sufficient portion of lands on the western side of the Delaware River in North America, for a settlement for himself and his persecuted followers, the Friends."

But, though the king himself was pleased with the petition, when it was laid before the Lords' Committee of Colonies and Commerce, it was sharply opposed and ridiculed. As soon as the Board understood that the petitioner and his followers were Quakers, they appeared greatly surprised; and one of them exclaimed, "A colony of Quakers among North-American Indians!" Sir John Worden (agent of the Duke of York) and Lord Baltimore, who already had grants of the plantations of New York and Maryland, opposed the petition. Worden said, "It was ridiculous to suppose that the interests of the British nation were to be promoted by sending out a colony of people that would *not fight*. What! a pack of noddies, that will have nothing to do with gin or gunpowder, but will gravely tell you that gin was never invented to make savages drunk, and cheat them of their lands, but only for physic to cure the colic withal; and that guns were invented, not to kill men, but hawks and wolves! God's mercy on us, my lords! What are we to expect from such colonists as these? Are they likely to extend our conquests, to spread our commerce, to exalt the glory of the British name, and, above all, to propagate our most holy religion? No, my lords! I hope it will never be so supposed by this most noble Board. And as to this crack-brained fellow, this William Penn, and his tame, 'Yea, forsooth,' followers, what can they promise themselves from settling among the fierce and blood-thirsty savages of North America, but to be tomahawked and scalped, every man, woman and child of them?"

This speech was pronounced with great power and strong emphasis, and produced such an impression upon the Lords' Committee, that they were upon the point of rejecting the petition without further consideration. Had they done this, the great and rich State of Pennsylvania, and the beautiful "City of Brotherly Love," might never have existed, and the author would have been spared the pains of writing this history. But the Supreme Being, who presides over the destiny of nations, who has "given the earth to the children of men, and fixed the bounds of their habitation," and who "setteth up and removeth kings" at his pleasure, had otherwise determined.

As William Penn was not before the Committee to plead his own cause, exercising the privilege which our courts now give to a criminal having no counsel, the Board appointed one of their own number to advocate his petition, probably not expecting the advocacy would amount to much. He, however, exhibited great ingenuity; and the result was entire success in favor of the petition. Rising, with a pale countenance and tremulous voice, as though he were about to utter some unwelcome truths, he first assured the Board that he was *no Quaker*, nor was any friend of that *silly people*. "No, my lords," continued he, raising his voice, "I am *no Quaker*; and I pray you let no gentleman in this noble house hold me in such *misprision*. But still, my lords, I am in favor of the petition for the Quakers to go off to North America. The reason, my lords, to my mind, is very plain. The *swinish multitude*, my lords (*profanum vulgus*), — my lords, the *swinish multitude*, as we properly call them, must have a government; yes, my lords, and an *iron government too*. They have not sense and *virtue enough to govern themselves*. All the boasted republics, or governments of the people, have, on trial, turned out no better than Babels of confusion and destruction to their foolish undertakers. No, my lords, there is no government on earth for the *profanum vulgus*, comparable to that of kings, priests, and nobles. Now, if this be true (and I challenge the Board to deny it), then William Penn and his Quakers ought gladly to be permitted to leave the country. Nay, I even assert, my lords, that William Penn cannot stay in this country consistently with the safety

of the government; for, if ever he should get the ear of the populace, he would bring such contempt on those glorious privileged orders of kings, priests, and nobles, that no man of spirit would have any thing to do with them. *For, my lords,*" said he, "*what nobleman is there, with a drop of English blood in his veins, but would blush for his Stars and Garters, when, as he rolls along the streets in only a fashionable coach and four, he hears on all sides the groans of these Quakers upbraiding him for being 'a lover of pleasure more than a lover of God,' and for squandering on vanities that precious gold, which, if laid out in feeding and clothing the fatherless and widow, would yield him a feast of never-failing pleasures? And as to our lords spiritual, our bishops and our archbishops, would it not make these, our holy fathers in God, ashamed of their sacred lawn sleeves and mitres, to be told every day by William Penn and his Quakers, that these are 'the marks of the beast, the vain trappings of carnal pride, seeking glory of men, and that those who use these things are none of Christ's; that his poverty can have no fellowship with their palaces, nor his staff and sandals with their gilt coaches, and horses covered with silver harness, and grooms bedecked with gold lace? But this is not the worst yet: no, my lords, let William Penn alone, and his sacred Majesty himself will soon have an uneasy seat of it on his throne. How can he otherwise, my lords, having it rung daily in his ears that 'kings are sent of God merely in his wrath as a punishment of wicked nations'?*" and that if they will but repent, and become good Quakers, following the *light within*, they shall no longer have a king to reign over them; for that God himself will be their king, and will break all other yokes from off their necks. God's mercy, my lords! who would be a king to be rated after this sort? Surely, then, my lords, you will agree with me, that it is high time for William Penn and his Quakers to be off. Yes, my lords, I repeat it: they *must be off*, or this excellent government of kings, priests, and nobles, is gone forever; and chaos and wild uproar is come again." <sup>1</sup>

This speech had such a wonderful effect upon the Lords' Com-

<sup>1</sup> Weems, p. 115.



mittee, that a unanimous vote was given in favor of granting the petition, accompanied with a note, "humbly praying that his Majesty would be graciously pleased to make unto William Penn a grant of the lands in North America which he had petitioned for."

William Penn, from the standing of his family, the service rendered to the realm by his father, the amount of money he had advanced the government, and from the weight of his own character, had vast influence with the king and parliament, or he never could have obtained it, being opposed by such men as the Duke of York and Lord Baltimore. Undoubtedly, the speech above quoted, respecting the trouble which the Quakers gave them, carried much weight with it, and had considerable influence in procuring him the charter. Still we must believe their fear of the Quakers alone would never have induced them to grant it.

It was after a long and vexatious attendance upon the Committee of Lords and Trade's Plantations, that the unanimous vote named above was passed.

The Lords' Committee referred the settlement of the boundaries of the territory, given to William Penn, to Chief Justice North, who reported as follows: "Bounded on the east by Delaware River, from the twelve miles distance northward of New Castle town, from the beginning of the fortieth degree of north latitude unto the forty-third degree of north latitude, if the said river do extend so far northward, but, if said river shall not extend so far northward, then by the said river so far as it doth extend; and from the head of said river, the eastern bounds are to be determined by a meridian line, to be drawn from the head of the said river unto the said forty-third degree of latitude, the said lands to extend westward five degrees in longitude, to be computed from the said eastern bounds; and the said lands are bounded on the north by the beginning of the forty-third degree of north latitude, and on a circle drawn at twelve miles distance from New Castle, north and westward, unto the south, by the beginning of the forty-third degree of north latitude, another by a straight line westward, to the limit

of longitude above mentioned, excepting all lands within twelve miles of the town of New Castle, that shall happen to lie within the said bounds now in possession of his royal Highness, or his tenants and assigns."

## CHAPTER IV.

### WILLIAM PENN'S CHARTER OF PENNSYLVANIA FROM KING CHARLES II.

Boundaries — Privileges — William Penn made Proprietary — Power to govern, and make Laws — May appoint Officers — Grant Pardons — A Proviso — Laws of England in Force till Others are made in the Province — Approval of Laws — Encouragement of Emigration, also to Trade — May lay out Towns, Cities, &c. — Commercial Advantages — Seaports, Creeks, and Harbors — Customs may be imposed by the Province — Agent to reside in London — Government may be resumed by England — Not to correspond with Kings, &c., at War with England — May pursue and punish Enemies — May dispose of Lands — May erect Manors — Frank Pledge — King not to lay Taxes without Consent of Proprietary or Parliament — Control of the Bishop of London — Interpretation.

WHEN Chief Justice North had drawn up the charter, and set the lines of its boundaries, as stated in the last chapter, the Committee of Lords reported favorably upon it to his Majesty Charles II.: "In obedience to your Majesty's order, signified by the Earl of Sunderland, on the 1st of June last, we had prepared the draft of a charter, constituting William Penn, Esq., absolute proprietary of a tract of land in America, therein mentioned, which we humbly present to your Majesty for your royal approbation, leaving, also, the naming of the said province to your Majesty; which is most humbly submitted."<sup>1</sup>

The charter is dated March 4, 1681, and is in the following words:—

"Charles, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting.

"Whereas our trusty and well-beloved subject, William Penn,

<sup>1</sup> Votes of Assembly.

Esquire, son and heir of Sir William Penn, deceased (out of a commendable desire to enlarge our British empire, and promote such useful commodities as may be of benefit to us and our dominions, as also to reduce the savage natives, by just and gentle manners, to the love of civil society and Christian religion), hath humbly sought leave of us to transport an ample colony unto a certain country hereinafter described, in the parts of America not yet cultivated and planted, and hath likewise so humbly besought our royal Majesty to give, grant, and confirm all the said country, with certain privileges and jurisdictions, requisite for the good government and safety of the said country and colony, to him and his heirs forever:

“I. Know ye, therefore, that we (favoring the petition and good purpose of the said William Penn, and having regard to the memory and merits of his late father in divers services, and particularly to his conduct, courage, and discretion under our dearest brother James, Duke of York, in that signal battle and victory fought and obtained against the Dutch fleet commanded by the Heer Van Opdam, in the year 1665; in consideration thereof, of our special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion) have given and granted, and by this our present charter, for us, our heirs and successors, do give and grant, unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, all that tract or part of land in America, with the islands therein contained. [For the remainder of this section see boundaries reported by Lord North, as given at the close of the last chapter.]

“II. We do also give and grant unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, the free and undisturbed use, and continuance in, and passage unto and out of all and singular ports, harbors, bays, waters, rivers, isles, and inlets belonging unto, or leading to and from, the country or islands aforesaid; and all the soils, lands, fields, woods, underwoods, mountains, hills, fens, isles, lakes, rivers, waters, rivulets, bays, and inlets situated, or being within, or belonging to, the limits or bounds aforesaid; together with the fishing of all sorts of fish, whales, sturgeon, and all royal and other fishes, in the seas, bays, inlets, waters, or rivers within the premises, and all the fish taken therein; and also all veins, mines, minerals, and quarries, as well discov-



ered as not discovered, of gold, silver, gems, and precious stones; and all other whatsoever, be it stones, metals, or any other thing or matter whatsoever, found, or to be found, within the country, isles, or limits aforesaid.

“III. And him, the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, we do by this our royal charter, for us, our heirs and successors, make, create, and constitute the true and absolute proprietary of the country aforesaid, and all other the premises; saving always to us, our heirs and successors, the faith and allegiance of the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, and of all other proprietaries, tenants, and inhabitants that are, or shall be, within the territories and precincts aforesaid; and saving, also, unto us, our heirs and successors, the sovereignty of the aforesaid country, to have, hold, possess, and enjoy the said tract of land, country, isles, inlets, and other the premises, unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, kings of England, as of our castle of Windsor, in the county of Berks, in free and common socage, by fealty only, for all services, and not *in capite*, or by knight-service; yielding and paying therefor to us, our heirs and successors, two beaver-skins, to be delivered at our castle of Windsor, on the first day of January in every year; and also the fifth part of all gold and silver ore which shall, from time to time, happen to be found within the limits aforesaid, clear of all charges. And of our further grace, certain knowledge, mere motion, we have thought fit to erect, and we do hereby erect, the aforesaid country and islands into a province and seigniory, and do call it Pensilvania, and so from henceforth will have it called.

“IV. And forasmuch as we have hereby made and ordained the aforesaid William Penn, his heirs and assigns, the true and absolute proprietaries of all the lands and dominions aforesaid, know ye, therefore, that we (reposing special trust and confidence in the fidelity, wisdom, justice, and provident circumspection of the said William Penn), for us, our heirs and successors, do grant full, free, and absolute power, by virtue of these presents, to him and his heirs, to his and their deputies and lieutenants, for the good and happy government of said

country, to ordain, make, and enact, and, under his and their seals, to publish any laws whatsoever for the raising of money for public uses of the said province, or for any other end, appertaining either unto the public state, peace, or safety of the said country, or unto the private utility of particular persons, according unto their best discretion, by and with the advice, assent, and approbation of the freemen of the said country, or the greater part of them, or of their delegates or deputies, whom, for the enacting of the said laws, when and as often as need may require, we will that the said William Penn, and his heirs, shall assemble, in such sort and form as to him and them shall seem best, and the same laws duly to execute unto and upon all people within the said country and limits thereof.

“ V. And we do likewise give and grant unto the said William Penn, and to his heirs, and their deputies and lieutenants, full power and authority to appoint and establish any judges and justices, magistrates, and other officers whatsoever (for the probates of wills, and for the granting of administration, within the precincts aforesaid), and with what power soever, and in such form, as to the said William Penn, or his heirs, shall seem most convenient ; also to remit, release, pardon, and abolish (whether before judgment or after) all crime and offences whatsoever, committed within the said country, against the laws (treason, and wilful and malicious murder, only excepted, and in those cases to grant reprieves until our pleasure may be known therein), and to do all and every other thing and things which unto the complete establishment of justice, unto courts and tribunals, forms of judicature, and manner of proceeding, do belong, although in these presents express mention be not made thereof ; and by judges, by them delegated, to award process, hold pleas, and determine, in all the said courts and tribunals, all actions, suits, and causes whatsoever, as well criminal as civil, personal, real, and mixed ; which laws, so as aforesaid to be published, our pleasure is, and so we enjoin, require, and command, shall be most absolute and available in law, and that all the liege people, and subjects of us, our heirs and successors, do observe and keep the same inviolably in those parts, so far as they concern them, under the pain therein

expressed, or to be expressed. Provided, nevertheless, that the same laws be consonant to reason, and not repugnant or contrary, but (as near as conveniently may be) agreeable to the laws and statutes and rights of this our kingdom of England ; and saving and reserving to us, our heirs and successors, the receiving, hearing, and determining of the appeal and appeals of all or any person or persons, of, in, or belonging to the territories aforesaid, or touching any judgment to be there made or given.

“VI. And forasmuch as, in the government of so great a country, sudden accidents do often happen, whereunto it will be necessary to apply remedy, before the freeholders of the said Province, or their delegates or deputies, can be assembled to the making of laws ; neither will it be convenient that instantly, upon every such occasion, so great a multitude should be called together, therefore (for the better government of the said country) we will ordain, and by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, do grant unto the said William Penn and his heirs, by themselves, or by their magistrates and officers, in that behalf duly to be ordained as aforesaid, to make and constitute fit and wholesome ordinances, from time to time, within the said country to be kept and observed, as well for the preservation of peace as for the better government of the people there inhabiting, and publicly to notify the same to all persons whom the same doth or may anywise concern. Which ordinances our will and pleasure is shall be observed inviolably within the said Province, under the pains therein to be expressed, so as the said ordinances be consonant to reason, and be not repugnant nor contrary, but (so far as conveniently may be) agreeable with the laws of our kingdom of England, and so as the said ordinances be not extended, in any sort, to bind, change, or take away the right or interest of any person or persons, for or in their life, members, freehold, goods, or chattels. And our further will and pleasure is, that the laws for regulating and governing of property within the said Province, as well for the descent and enjoyment of lands, as likewise for the enjoyment and succession of goods and chattels, and likewise as to felonies, shall be and continue the same as they shall be, for the time being, by the general course of the law in our kingdom of

England, until the said laws shall be altered by the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns, and by the freemen of the said province, their delegates or deputies, or the greater part of them.

“VII. And to the end that the said William Penn, or his heirs, or other the planters, owners, or inhabitants of the said Province may not, at any time hereafter (by misconstruction of the power aforesaid), through inadvertency or design, depart from that faith and due allegiance, which, by the laws of this our realm of England, they, and all our subjects in our dominions and territories, always owe to us, our heirs and successors, by color of any extent or largeness of powers hereby given, or pretended to be given, or by force or color, or any laws hereafter to be made in the said Province, by virtue of any such powers. Our further will and pleasure is, that a transcript or duplicate of all laws which shall be so as aforesaid made and published within the said Province, shall, within five years after the making thereof, be transmitted and delivered to the privy council, for the time being, of us our heirs and successors; and if any of the said laws, within the space of six months after that they shall be so transmitted and delivered, be declared by us, our heirs and successors, in our or their privy council, inconsistent with the sovereignty or lawful prerogative of us, our heirs and successors, or contrary to the faith and allegiance due to the legal government of this realm from the said William Penn, or his heirs, or of the planters and inhabitants of the said Province, and that thereupon any of the said laws shall be adjudged and declared to be void, by us, our heirs and successors, under our or their privy seal, that then and from thenceforth, such laws, concerning which such judgment and declaration shall be made, shall become void: otherwise the said laws, so transmitted, shall remain and stand in full force, according to the true intent and meaning thereof.

“VIII. Furthermore, that this new colony may the more happily increase by the multitude of people resorting thither, therefore we, for us, our heirs and successors, do give and grant by these presents, power, license, and liberty unto all the liege people and subjects, both present and future, of us, our heirs



and successors (excepting those who shall be especially forbidden), to transport themselves and families unto the said country, with such convenient shipping as by the laws of this our kingdom of England they ought to use, and with fitting provision, paying only the customs therefor due, and there to settle themselves, dwell and inhabit, and plant, for the public and their own private advantage.

“IX. And furthermore, that our subjects may be the rather encouraged to undertake this expedition with ready and cheerful minds, know ye, that we, of our special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, do give and grant, by virtue of these presents, as well unto the said William Penn and his heirs, as to all others who shall from time to time repair unto the said country, full license to lade and freight in any ports whatsoever of us, our heirs and successors, according to the laws made, or to be made, within our kingdom of England, and unto the said country, by them, their servants or assigns, to transport all and singular their goods, wares, and merchandises, as likewise all sorts of grain whatsoever, and all other things whatsoever, necessary for food or clothing, not prohibited, by the laws and statutes of our kingdom and dominions, to be carried out of the said kingdom, without any let or molestation of us, our heirs and successors, or of any of the officers of us, our heirs or successors, saving always to us, our heirs and successors, the legal impositions, customs, or other duties and payments for the said wares and merchandises, by any law or statute, due, or to be due, to us, our heirs and successors.

“X. And we do further, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, free and absolute power to divide the said country and islands into towns, hundreds, and counties, and to erect and incorporate towns into boroughs, and boroughs into cities, and to make and constitute fairs and markets therein, with all other convenient privileges and immunities, according to the merits of the inhabitants, and the fitness of the places, and to do all and every other thing and things touching the premises, which to him or them shall seem meet and requisite, albeit, they be such as of their own nature might otherwise require a more

special commandment and warrant than in these presents is expressed.

“XI. We will also, and by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, we do, give and grant license, by this our charter, unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, and to all the inhabitants and dwellers in the province aforesaid, both present and to come, to import or unlade, by themselves, or their servants, factors, or assigns, all merchandises and goods whatsoever, that shall arise of the fruits and commodities of the said Province, either by land or sea, into any of the ports of us, our heirs and successors, in our kingdom of England, and not into any other country whatsoever, and we give him full power to dispose of the said goods in the said ports, and, if need be, within one year next after the unlading of the same to lade the said merchandise and goods again into the same or other ships, and to transport the same into any other countries, either of our own dominions or foreign, according to law ; provided always, that they pay such customs and impositions, subsidies and duties, for the same, to us, our heirs and successors, as the rest of our subjects of our kingdom of England, for the time being, shall be bound to pay, and to observe the acts of navigation, and other laws in that behalf made.

“XII. And furthermore, of our ample and special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we do, for us, our heirs and successors, grant unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, full and absolute power and authority to make, erect, and constitute within the said Province, and the isles and inlets aforesaid, such and so many seaports, harbors, creeks, havens, quays, and other places for discharging and unlading of goods and merchandise out of the ships, boats, and other vessels, and landing them into such and so many places, and with such rights, jurisdictions, liberties, and privileges unto the said ports belonging, as to him and them shall seem most expedient ; and that all and singular the ships, boats, and other vessels which shall come for merchandise and trade into the said Province, or out of the same, shall be laden or unladen only at such ports as shall be created and constituted by the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns (any use, custom, or

thing to the contrary notwithstanding): provided, that the said William Penn, and his heirs, and the lieutenants and governors for the time being, shall admit and receive in and about all such havens, ports, creeks, and quays, all officers and their deputies, who shall from time to time be appointed for that purpose by the farmers, or commissioners of our customs for the time being.

“XIII. And we do further appoint and ordain, and by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, we do grant unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, that he, the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, may, from time to time, forever, have and enjoy the customs and subsidies in the ports, harbors, and other creeks and places aforesaid, within the Province aforesaid, payable, or due for merchandise and wares there to be laded and unladed, the said customs and subsidies to be reasonably assessed, upon any occasion, by themselves and the people there, as aforesaid, to be assembled, to whom we give power by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, upon just cause and due proportion, to assess and impose the same; saving unto us, our heirs and successors, such impositions and customs, as, by act of parliament, are and shall be appointed.

“XIV. And it is our further will and pleasure, that the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, shall, from time to time, constitute and appoint an attorney, or agent, to reside in or near our city of London, who shall make known the place where he shall dwell, or may be found, unto the clerks of our privy council, for the time being, or one of them, and shall be ready to appear in any of our courts at Westminster to answer for any misdemeanor that shall be committed, or, by any wilful default or neglect, permitted by the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns, against the laws of trade and navigation; and after it shall be ascertained in any of our courts what damages we, or our heirs and successors, shall have sustained by such default or neglect, the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns, shall pay the same within one year after such taxation, and demand thereof from such attorney, or in case there shall be no such attorney by the space of one year, or such attorney shall not make payment of such damages within the space of a year,

and answer such other forfeitures and penalties within the said time as by acts of parliament in England are and shall be provided, according to the true intent and meaning of these presents, then it shall be lawful for us, our heirs and successors, to seize and resume the government of the said Province or country, and the same to retain, until payment shall be made thereof; but notwithstanding any such seizure, or resumption of the government, nothing concerning the propriety or ownership of any lands, tenements, or other hereditaments, goods, or chattels of any of the adventurers, planters, or owners, other than the respective offenders there, shall anyways be affected or molested thereby.

“XV. Provided always, and our will and pleasure is, that neither the said William Penn, nor his heirs, nor any other the inhabitants of the said Province, shall at any time hereafter have or maintain any correspondence with any other king, prince, or state, or with any of their subjects, who shall then be in war against us, our heirs and successors; nor shall the said William Penn, or his heirs, or any other inhabitants of the said Province, make war, or any act of hostility, against any other king, prince, or state, or any of their subjects, who shall then be in league or amity with us, our heirs and successors.

“XVI. And because, in so remote a country, and situate near many barbarous nations, the incursions, as well of the savages themselves, as of other enemies, pirates, and robbers, may probably be feared, therefore we have given, and for us, our heirs and successors, do give power, by these presents, to the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, by themselves, or their captains, or other their officers, to levy, muster, and train all sorts of men, of what condition soever, or wheresoever born, in the said Province of Pensilvania, for the time being, and to make war, and to pursue the enemies and robbers aforesaid, as well by sea as by land, even without the limits of the said Province, and, by God’s assistance, to vanquish and take them, and, being taken, to put them to death, by the laws of war, or to save them, at their pleasure, and to do all and every other thing which unto the charge and office of a captain-general of



an army belongeth, or hath accustomed to belong, as fully and freely as any captain-general of an army hath ever had the same.

“XVII. And furthermore, of our special grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have given and granted, and by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, do give and grant, unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, full and absolute power, license, and authority, that he, the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, from time to time hereafter, forever, at his or their own will and pleasure, may assign, alien, grant, demise, or enfeof of the premises, so many and such parts and parcels, to him or them that shall be willing to purchase the same, as they shall think fit, to have and to hold to them, the said person or persons willing to take and purchase, their heirs and assigns, in fee-simple or fee-tail, or for the term of life, lives, or years, to be held of the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns, as of the said seigniorie of Windsor, by such services, customs, or rents as shall seem meet to the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, and not immediately of us, our heirs and successors.

“XVIII. And to the same person or persons, and to all and every of them, we do give and grant by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, license, authority, and power that such person or persons may take the premises, or any parcel thereof, of the aforesaid William Penn, his heirs or assigns, and the same to hold to themselves, their heirs and assigns, in what estate of inheritance soever, in fee-simple or in fee-tail, or otherwise, as to him the said William Penn, his heirs or assigns, shall deem expedient; the statute made in the parliament of Edward, the son of King Henry, late King of England, our predecessor (commonly called the statute ‘*Quia Emptores Terrarum*,’ lately published in our kingdom of England) in anywise notwithstanding.

XIX. And by these presents, we give and grant license unto the said William Penn, and his heirs, and likewise to all and every such person or persons to whom the said William Penn, or his heirs, shall at any time hereafter grant any estate or inheritance, as aforesaid, to erect any parcels of land within the

Province aforesaid, into manors, by and with the license to be first had and obtained for that purpose, under the hand and seal of the said William Penn, or his heirs, and in every of the said manors to have and to hold a court-baron, with all things whatsoever which to a court-baron do belong, and to have and to hold view of frank-pledge for the conservation of the peace, and the better government of those parts, by themselves or their stewards, or by the lords, for the time being, of the manors to be deputed, when they shall be erected, and in the same to use all things belonging to the view of frank-pledge. And we do further grant license and authority, that every such person or persons who shall erect any such manor or manors, as aforesaid, shall or may grant all or any part of his said land to any person or persons in fee-simple, or any other estate of inheritance, to be held of the said manors respectively, so as no further tenure shall be created, but that, upon all further or other alienations thereafter to be made, the said lands so aliened shall be held of the same lord and his heirs of whom the aliener did then before hold, and by the like rents and services which were before due and accustomed.

“XX. And furthermore our pleasure is, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, we do covenant and grant to and with the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns, that we, our heirs and successors, shall at no time hereafter set or make, or cause to be set or made, any imposition, custom, or other taxation, rate, or contribution whatsoever in and upon the dwellers and inhabitants of the aforesaid Province, for their lands, tenements, goods, or chattels, within the said Province, or in and upon any goods and merchandises within the Province, to be laden or unladen within the ports or harbors of the said Province, unless the same be with the consent of the proprietary or chief governor, or assembly, or by act of parliament in England.

“XXI. And our pleasure is, and for us, our heirs and successors, we charge and command, that this, our declaration, shall from henceforth, from time to time, be received and allowed in all our courts, and before all the judges of us, our heirs and successors, for a sufficient lawful discharge, payment,

and acquittance, commanding all the officers and ministers of us, our heirs and successors, and enjoining them, upon pain of our highest displeasure, that they do not presume at any time to attempt any thing to the contrary of the premises, or that do in any sort withstand the same, but that they be, at all times, aiding and assisting, as is fitting, to the said William Penn, and his heirs, and unto the inhabitants and merchants of the province aforesaid, their servants, ministers, factors, and assigns, in the full use and fruition of the benefit of this our charter.

“XXII. And our further pleasure is, and we do hereby, for us, our heirs and successors, charge and require, that if any of the inhabitants of the said Province, to the number of twenty, shall, at any time hereafter, be desirous, and shall, by any writing, or by any person deputed by them, signify such their desire to the Bishop of London, for the time being, that any preacher or preachers, to be approved of by the said bishop, may be sent unto them for their instruction, that then such preacher or preachers shall and may reside within the said Province, without any denial or molestation whatever.

“XXIII. And if, perchance, hereafter any doubt or question should arise concerning the true sense and meaning of any word, clause, or sentence contained in this our present charter, we will, ordain, and command, that at all times, and in all things, such interpretation be made thereof, and allowed, in any of our courts whatsoever, as shall be adjudged most advantageous and favorable unto the said William Penn, his heirs and assigns; provided always, no interpretation be admitted thereof, by which the allegiance due unto us, our heirs and successors, may suffer any prejudice or diminution; although express mention be not made in these presents, of the true yearly value, or certainty of the premises, or any part thereof, or of other gifts and grants made by us, and our progenitors or predecessors, unto the said William Penn, any statute, act, ordinance, provision, proclamation, or restraint heretofore had, made; published, ordained, or provided, or any thing, cause, or matter whatsoever, to the contrary thereof in anywise notwithstanding. In witness whereof, we have caused these our

letters to be made patent. Witness ourself, at Westminster, the fourth day of March, in the three and thirtieth year of our reign, Annoque Domini one thousand six hundred and eighty-one.

“ By wit of privy seal,

PIGOTT.”



## CHAPTER V.

### PROCEEDINGS OF PENN AFTER THE GRANT OF HIS CHARTER.

Penn's Joy — His Visit to the King — Surprise at the Name — Offers Twenty Guineas — Solicits the King — Refusal of the King — Letter to Robert Turner — Penn's Publication — Farewell to the King — Interesting Colloquy with the King — Letter to his Family.

WILLIAM PENN had expended much money, and offered many prayers, that he might settle a colony in North America; and, when first informed that his petition was granted, he, with much excitement, exclaimed, that "God had heard the voice of his prayer! God had appointed unto him the honors of Joshua, — to lead a remnant into the land of rest. The nobles have been made to consent; and even the king himself is stirred up to convey the grateful tidings."

He soon hastened to court, to thank his Majesty for his royal generosity. The king was in readiness to receive him, having got the deed fairly drawn up and indorsed, — A DEED OF A NEW PROVINCE IN NORTH AMERICA, FOR MY BELOVED SUBJECT AND FRIEND, WILLIAM PENN.

As soon as he was introduced into the drawing-room of the palace, the king presented him this deed, with his own hand, and, in a jocular way, said, "Well, friend William, you'll see in this paper that I have done something handsome for you. Yes, man, I have given you there a territory in North America as large as my own island of Great Britain; and, knowing what a fighting family you are sprung from, I have made you governor and captain-general of all the coasts and seas and bays and rivers, and mountains and forests, and population; and now, in return for all this, I have but a few conditions to make with you."

William Penn courteously asked his Majesty to please let him know what they were. "Why, in the first place," replied Charles, "you are to give me a fifth of all the gold and silver you may find there. But, as you Quakers care but little about the precious metals, I don't count on much from that quarter.

"In the second place, friend William, you are to be sure not to make war on the nations, without my consent; but, in case of a war, you are always to remember that you are an Englishman, and therefore must never use the *scalping-knife*.

"In the third place, if any persons of my religion — the *honest Episcopalians* — would wish to come and settle in your Quaker province, you shall receive them kindly; and if, at any time, they should invite a preacher of their own, he shall be permitted to come among you. And, moreover, if they should like to build what we call a church (but you, a *steeple-house*), you will not forbid it."

Smiling, Penn addressed the king with the same epithet which the king had applied to him. "Friend Charles, thee shall certainly be gratified in all these things; for I, who have drank so deeply of the bitter waters of persecution myself, will never, I hope, consent to persecute others on the score of religion."

As soon as Penn retired from the presence of the king, he inspected his charter and deed, when, to his great astonishment, he found it named "PENNSYLVANIA," that is, in English, "Penn's woods." He considered that this would savor so much of vanity in him, that he hastened to the recorder, to have the name changed. The recorder was a Welshman. He said to Penn, "Well, then, what name would hur like to give to hur province?" Penn replied, "New Wales." The Welshman said that ought to be pleasing to him, as a compliment to his native country, "but, though hur should be well pleased to have hur province called 'New Wales,' yet hur had no business to alter the present name."

Upon this refusal, Penn offered him twenty guineas to alter the name. The Welshman still declining to do it, Penn went to his Majesty to get it done. The king, in his jocular way, replied, that, as he had stood "godfather to the new province, he thought he had a fair right to give it a name."

Penn was so perplexed, and the shock was so great, as he supposed, to his vanity, that, failing to get the name changed either by the recorder or the king, the next day, he wrote the following letter to his friend Robert Turner:—

TO ROBERT TURNER.

5th of 1st mo., 1681.

*Dear Friend*,—My true love in the Lord salutes thee, and dear friends that love the Lord's precious truths in those parts. Thine I have; and for my business here, know that after many waitings, watchings, solicitings, and disputes in council, this day my country was confirmed to me under the great seal of England, with large powers and privileges, by the name of Pennsylvania,—a name the king would give it in honor of my father. I chose New Wales, being, as this, a pretty hilly country; but Penn being Welsh for *a head* (as Penmanmoire in Wales, and Penrith in Cumberland, and Penn in Buckinghamshire, the highest land in England), called this Pennsylvania, which is, *the high or high woodlands*; for I proposed, when the secretary, a Welshman, refused to have it called New Wales, *Sylvania*, and they added *Penn* to it. And though I much opposed it, and went to the king to have it struck out and altered, he said it was past, and would take it upon him. Nor could twenty guineas move the under secretary to vary the name; for I feared lest it should be looked on as a vanity in me, and not as a respect in the king, as it truly was, to my father, whom he often mentions with praise. Thou mayest communicate my grant to friends, and expect shortly my proposals. It is a clear and just thing, and my God, that has given it me through many difficulties, will, I believe, bless, and make it the seed of a nation. I shall have a tender care to the government, that it will be well laid at first. No more now, but dear love in the truth.

Thy true friend,

WILLIAM PENN.

The charter being thus given, and the name not to be altered, William Penn immediately made the following publication to his Quakers, and to all other Englishmen as well:—

“In the *first place*, That while lands in England sold from *twenty to sixty pounds sterling per acre*, William Penn offered his lands, *fresh and heavy timbered*, for *forty shillings* the hundred acres, being but little more than *fourpence* an acre, with but one shilling per hundred acres as quit-rent to the proprietor forever.

“Secondly, That, while lands in England rented from one to three pounds sterling per acre, William Penn offered his for one shilling.

“Thirdly, That while it was in England a transportation offence to kill a rabbit or partridge, and few except the nobility ever tasted venison, in Pennsylvania, any boy big enough to draw a trigger might knock down a fat buck in the woods whenever he pleased. And as to rabbits and partridges, they were so abundant, that the very children, if they but knew how to set traps, and pack thread-snares, might always keep the house full of such savory game.”

If these are esteemed by all as great *natural* recommendations of Pennsylvania, the *moral* recommendations were still greater; for it was observed, —

“Fourthly, That while, in England, the servants were a people but poorly rewarded for their services, in Pennsylvania, all servants, men or women, were to be allowed fifty acres in *fee-simple*, to be paid them, with a good suit of clothes, at the expiration of their servitude; and the more cheerfully, if they had acted with fidelity as servants, doing all things cheerfully, as with an eye to the glory of God.

“Fifth, That while, in England, there was but *one creed, one catechism, one form of prayer, one baptism*, from which no man or woman might dissent without peril of the *whipping-post* or *pillory*, in Pennsylvania, all who acknowledged ‘one almighty and eternal God to be the moral governor of the world,’ and honored him as such by an *honest and peaceable* life, should be equally protected in their rights, and made capable of promotion to office, whether they were Jews, Gentiles, or Christians.

“Sixth, That while in Virginia, Maryland, and New England, the settlers were charged with cheating the Indians, by putting bad merchandise upon them in exchange for their furs, in



Pennsylvania, all merchandise offered in trade was to be brought into market, and exposed to public inspection; so that the Indians might no longer be imposed on and provoked.

“Seventh, That while in the *other* colonies, the Indians were treated very little better than dogs, whom every blackguard might kick and cuff, to the exceeding diversion of the *white Christians*, in Pennsylvania, it was exacted that the Persons and Rights of the Indians should be held Sacred; and that no man, whatever his rank or fortune, should affront or wrong an Indian, without incurring the same penalty as if he had committed the trespass against the proprietor himself.

“Eighth, That while, in most new countries settled by Christians, if a Christian was injured by a native, he might instantly avenge himself, even to the knocking out the brains of the offender, here it was enacted by William Penn, that, if ‘*any Indian should abuse a planter, the said planter should not be his own judge upon the Indian, but apply to the next magistrate, who should make complaint thereof to the king of the Indian, for reasonable satisfaction for the injury.*’

“Ninth, That while other Christian adventurers thought they had a right to treat the inhabitants of the countries they discovered, as mere animals of the brute creation, whom they might abuse at pleasure, William Penn framed his laws with an eye of equal tenderness for the Indians and the Quakers, ordering that ‘*all differences between them should be settled by a jury of twelve men, six chosen from each party, that so they might live friendly together as brethren;*’ thus extending with impartial hand the rights of justice and humanity to these poor people, who, in proportion to their weakness and ignorance, were the more entitled to his fatherly protection and care.

“Tenth, That while, in England, the children of the rich were, too generally, brought up in pride and sloth, *good for nothing to themselves or others*, in Pennsylvania, all the children of the age of twelve were to be brought up to some *useful trade*, that there might be none of the *worthless sort* in the Province; so that the poor might get plenty of honest bread by their work, and the rich, if brought low, might not be tempted to despair and steal.

“Eleventh, That while in England, from the millions given to the kings, lords, and clergy, the number and wretchedness of the poor were so increased, that every year hundreds of them were hung for stealing a little food for themselves and children, in Pennsylvania, there were but two crimes deemed worthy of death, i.e., deliberate murder, and treason against the State. As for offences requiring confinement, it was ordered by William Penn, that, in the punishment of these, an eye was to be constantly kept on the reformation of the offender. And hence all prisons were to be considered as workshops, where the criminals might be industriously, soberly, and morally employed.”

The publication of this document produced great joy to the inhabitants generally, and especially to the Quakers. The persecutions they had long been subjected to had almost prevented them from going abroad, and they were seldom seen in the streets. Their hearts were filled with joy, and they welcomed William Penn as well-nigh a heavenly messenger. It was a greater boon than they had ever expected to enjoy; and multitudes of them prepared to embark for America. Nor was this joy confined to the Quakers. Many other poor and pious men, who had seen and heard Penn preach, and had been delighted with his character, were ready to join him and his Quakers. He immediately sent off three ships laden with these poor people, and had a fourth one prepared, in which he intended to embark himself.

When he was prepared to leave, as the king had shown him much good will and friendship, Penn took a journey to London to bid him farewell. Although Penn was more unlike Charles II. than almost any other man, yet the king was glad to see him; and the interview between them was very pleasant, during which the following colloquy took place:—

The king said, “Well, friend William, I have sold you a noble province in North America; but still I suppose you have no thoughts of going thither yourself.”

“Yes, I have,” replied William Penn, “and I am just come to bid thee farewell.”

“What! venture yourself among the savages of North Amer-

ica! Why, man! what security have you that you'll not be in their war-kettle in two hours after setting foot on their shores?"

"The best security in the world," replied William Penn calmly.

"I doubt that, friend William. I have no idea of any security against those cannibals, but in a regiment of good soldiers, with their muskets and bayonets. And mind, I tell you beforehand, that, with all my good-will for you and your family (to whom I am under obligations), I'll not send a single soldier with you."

"I want none of thy soldiers," answered William Penn pleasantly. "I depend upon something better than thy soldiers."

The king wanted to know *what that* was.

"Why, I depend on themselves," replied William Penn, — "on their own *moral sense*; even on that '*grace of God which bringeth salvation, and which appeared unto all men.*'"

"I fear, friend William, that that grace has never appeared to the Indians of North America."

"Why not to them as well as to all others?"

"If it had appeared to them, they would hardly have treated my subjects so barbarously as they have done."

"That's no proof to the contrary, friend Charles. Thy subjects were the aggressors. When thy subjects first went to North America, they found these poor people the fondest and kindest creatures in the world. Every day they would watch for them to come ashore, and hasten to meet them, and feast them on their best fish and venison and corn, which was all that they had. In return for this hospitality of the 'savages,' as we call them, thy subjects, termed 'Christians,' seized on their country and rich hunting-grounds for farms for themselves. Now, is it to be wondered at, that these much injured people should have been driven to desperation by such injustice, and that, burning with revenge, they should have committed some excesses?"

"Well, then, I hope, friend William, you'll not complain when they come to treat you in the same manner."

"I am not afraid of it."

"Ay! How will you avoid it? You mean to get their hunting-grounds too, I suppose."

"Yes, but not by driving these poor people away from them."

"No, indeed! How, then, will you get their lands?"

"I mean to buy their lands of them."

"Buy their lands of them! Why, man, you have already bought them of me."

"Yes, I know I have, and at a dear rate too; but I did it only to get thy *good-will*, not that I thought thou hadst any *right* to their lands."

"Zounds, man! No right to their lands?"

"No, friend Charles, no right at all. What right hast thou to their lands?"

"Why, the right of discovery, — the right which the pope and all Christian kings have agreed to give one another."

"The right of *discovery*," replied William Penn, half smiling, — "a strange kind of right indeed! Now, suppose, friend Charles, some canoe-loads of these Indians, crossing the sea, and *discovering* thy Island of Great Britain, were to claim it as their own, and set it up for sale over thy head, what wouldst thou think it?"

"Why — why — why," replied Charles, blushing, "I must confess I should think it a piece of great impudence in them."

"Well, then, how canst thou, a Christian, and a Christian prince too, do that which thou so utterly condemnest in these people whom thou callest savages?"

The king being rather too much staggered to make a reply, William Penn thus went on, "Yes, friend Charles, and suppose, again, that these Indians, on thy refusal to give up thy Island of Great Britain, were to make war on thee, and, having weapons more destructive than thine, were to destroy many of thy subjects, and to drive the rest away, wouldst thou not think it horribly cruel?"

The king, with strong marks of conviction, agreeing to this, William Penn thus added, "Well, then, friend Charles, how can I, who call myself a *Christian*, do what I should abhor even in heathens? No, I will not do it. I will not use the right to their lands, though I have bought it of thee at a dear



rate. But I will buy the right of the proper owners, even the Indians themselves. By doing this, I shall imitate God himself in his justice and mercy, and thereby insure his blessing on my colony, if I should ever live to plant one in America."

Having performed this duty of respect to the king, Penn now repaired to his country-seat at Worminghurst, and spent a day with his family. It was both a pleasant and mournful day, — pleasant to be with his wife and children, and mournful that he was so soon to leave them. During the day, which was partly spent in devotion, partly in conversation, he wrote a letter to his wife and children, which has been thought one of the kindest, richest, and best letters of advice to a family from an endeared father to be found on record; and as most of it is applicable to families of our modern times, and may be very useful, not only to the mothers and children in Pennsylvania, but throughout the Union, we publish the whole of this most tender and loving epistle.

WORMINGHURST, 4th of the 6th month.

MY DEAR WIFE AND CHILDREN, — My love, which neither sea nor land nor death itself can extinguish or lessen toward you, most endearedly visits you with eternal embraces, and will abide with you forever; and may the God of my life watch over you, and do you good in this world and forever! Some things are upon my spirit to leave with you in your respective capacities, as I am to one a husband, and the rest a father, if I should never see you more in this world.

My dear wife! remember thou wast the love of my youth, and much the joy of my life, the most beloved, as well as most worthy, of all my earthly comforts; and the reason of that love was more thy inward than thy outward excellences, which yet were many. God knows, and thou knowest it. I can say it was a match of Providence's making; and God's image in us both was the first thing, and the most amiable and engaging ornament in our eyes. Now I am to leave thee, and that without knowing whether I shall ever see thee more in this world, take my counsel into thy bosom, and let it dwell with thee in my stead while thou livest.

First, Let the fear of the Lord, and a zeal and love to his glory, dwell richly in thy heart; and thou wilt watch for good over thyself, and thy dear children and family, that no rude, light, or bad thing be committed; else God will be offended, and he will repent himself of the good he intends thee and thine.

Secondly, Be diligent in meetings for worship and business; stir up thyself and others herein: it is thy duty and place. And let meetings be kept once a day in the family, to wait upon the Lord, who has given us much time for ourselves; and, my dearest, to make thy family matters easy to thee, divide thy time, and be regular: it is easy and sweet. Thy retirement will afford thee to do it; as, in the morning, to view the business of the house, and fix it as thou desirest, seeing all be in order, that by thy counsel all may move, and to thee render an account every evening. The time for work, for walking, for meals, may be certain, at least as near as may be. And grieve not thyself with careless servants; they will disorder thee: rather *pay* them, and *let them go*, if they will not be better by admonition. This is best to avoid many words, which I know wound the soul, and offend the Lord.

Thirdly, Cast up thy income, and see what it daily amounts to; by which thou mayest be sure to have it in thy sight and power to keep within compass: and I beseech thee to live low and sparingly till my debts are paid, and then enlarge as thou seest it convenient. Remember thy mother's example, when thy father's public-spiritedness had worsted his estate (which is my case).

I know thou lovest plain things, and art averse to the pomps of the world,—a nobility natural to thee. I write not as doubtful, but to quicken thee, for my sake, to be more vigilant herein, knowing that God will bless thy care, and thy poor children and thee, for it. My mind is wrapped up in a saying of thy father's, "I desire not riches, but to owe nothing;" and truly that is wealth: and more than enough to live is a snare attended with many sorrows. I need not bid thee be humble, for thou art so, nor meek and patient, for it is much of thy natural disposition; but I pray thee be oft in retirement with

the Lord, and guard against encroaching friendships. Keep them at *arm's-length*, for it is giving away our power, ay, and self too, into the possession of another; and that which might seem engaging in the beginning may prove a yoke and burden too hard and heavy in the end. Wherefore keep dominion over thyself, and let thy children, good meetings, and friends, be the pleasure of thy life.

Fourthly, And now, my dearest, let me recommend to thy care my dear children, abundantly beloved of me as the Lord's blessings, and the sweet pledges of our mutual and endeared affections. Above all things, endeavor to breed them up in the love of virtue, and that *holy, plain* way of it which we have lived in, that the world in no part of it get into my family. I had rather they were homely than finely bred as to outward behavior; yet I love sweetness mixed with gravity, and cheerfulness tempered with sobriety. Religion in the heart leads into this true civility, teaching men and women to be mild and courteous in their behavior, — an accomplishment worthy indeed of praise.

Fifthly, Next breed them up in a love one of another: tell them it is the charge I left behind me; and that it is the way to have the love and blessing of God upon them, also what his portion is who hates, or calls his brother fool. Sometimes separate them, but not long; and allow them to send or give each other small things to endear one another with. Once more, I say, tell them it was my counsel they should be tender and affectionate one to another. For their learning, be liberal, spare no cost; for by such parsimony all is lost that is saved. But let it be useful knowledge, such as is consistent with truth and godliness, not cherishing a vain conversation or idle mind; for ingenuity mixed with industry is good for the body and mind too. I recommend the useful parts of mathematics, as building houses or ships, measuring, surveying, dialling, navigation; but agriculture is especially in my eye. Let my children be husbandmen and housewives. It is industrious, healthy, honest, and of good example, like Abraham and the holy ancients, who pleased God, and obtained a good report. This leads to consider the works of God and Nature, of things that



are good, and diverts the mind from being taken up with the vain arts and inventions of a luxurious world. It is commendable in the princes of Germany, and the nobles of that empire, that they have all their children instructed in some useful occupation. Rather keep an ingenious person in the house to teach them, than send them to schools; too many evil impressions being commonly received there.

Be sure to observe their genius, and do not cross it as to learning; let them not dwell too long on one thing, but let their change be agreeable, and all their diversions have some bodily labor in them. When grown big, have most care for them; for then there are more snares both within and without. When marriageable, see that they have worthy persons in their eye, of good life, and good fame for piety and understanding. I need no wealth, but sufficiency; and be sure their love be dear, fervent, and mutual, that it may be happy for them.

I choose not they should be married to earthly, covetous kindred. And of cities and towns of concourse beware: the world is apt to stick close to those who have lived and got wealth there: *a country life and estate I like best for my children.* I prefer a decent mansion, of a hundred pounds per annum, i.e., a neat house, and fifty or sixty acres in the country, before ten thousand pounds in London, or such like place, in a way of trade. In fine, my dear, endeavor to breed them dutiful to the Lord, and his blessed light, truth, and grace in their hearts, who is their Creator, and his fear will grow up with them. "Teach a child," says the wise man, "the way thou wilt have him to walk, and, when he is old, he will not forget it." Next, obedience to thee, their dear mother, and that not for wrath, but for conscience' sake; liberal to the poor, pitiful to the miserable, humble and kind to all; and may my God make thee a blessing, and give thee comfort, in our dear children, and in age gather thee to the joy and blessedness of the just (where no death shall separate us) forever.

And now, my dear children, that are the gifts and mercies of the God of your tender father, hear my counsel, and lay it up in your hearts: love it more than treasure, and follow it, and you shall be blessed here, and happy hereafter.



In the first place, remember your Creator in the days of your youth. Oh, how did God bless Josiah because he feared him in his youth! and so he did Jacob and Joseph and Moses.

Oh, my dear children, remember and fear and serve Him who made you, and gave you to me and your dear mother, that you may live to him, and glorify him in your generations! To do this, in your youthful days seek after the Lord, that you may find him, remembering his great love in creating you, that you are not beasts, plants, or stones, but that he has kept you, and given you his grace within, and substance without, and provided plentifully for you. This remember in your youth, that you may be kept from the evil of the world; for in age it will be harder to overcome the temptations of it.

Wherefore, my dear children, eschew the appearance of evil, and love and cleave to that in your hearts which shows you good from evil, and tells you when you do amiss, and reproves you for it. It is the light of Christ, that he has given you for your salvation. If you do this, and follow my counsel, God will bless you in this world, and give you an inheritance in that which will never have an end. For the light of Jesus is of a purifying nature: it seasons those who love it, and take heed to it, and never leaves such, till it has brought them to "the city of God, that has foundations." Oh that you may be seasoned with the gracious nature of it! Hide it in your hearts; and flee, my dear children, from all youthful lusts, the vain sports, pastimes, and pleasures of the world, "redeeming the time, because the days are evil." You are now beginning to live. What would some give for your time? Oh! I could have lived better, were I, as you, in the flower of youth. Therefore, love and fear the Lord. Keep close to meetings; and delight to wait on the Lord God of your father and mother, among his despised people, as we have done; and count it your honor to be members of that society, and heirs of that living fellowship which is enjoyed among them; for the experience of which your father's soul blesseth the Lord forever.

Next, be obedient to your dear mother, a woman whose virtues and good name is an honor to you; for she hath been

exceeded by none in her time for her plainness, integrity, industry, humanity, virtue, and good understanding, — qualities not usual among women of her worldly condition and quality. Therefore, honor and obey her, my dear children, as your mother, and your father's love and delight; nay, love her too, for she loved your father with a deep and upright love, choosing him before all her many suitors. And, though she be of a delicate constitution and noble spirit, yet she descended to the utmost tenderness and care for you, performing the painful acts of service to you in your infancy, as a mother and nurse too. I charge you, before the Lord, honor and obey, love and cherish, your dear mother.

Next, betake yourself to some honest, industrious course of life, and that not of sordid covetousness, but for example, and to avoid idleness. And if you change your condition, and marry, choose with the knowledge and consent of your mother, if living, or of guardians, or those that have the charge of you. Mind neither beauty nor riches, but the fear of the Lord, and a sweet and amiable disposition, such as you can love above all the world, and that may make your habitations pleasant and desirable to you.

And, being married, be tender, affectionate, patient, and meek. Live in the fear of the Lord, and he will bless you and your offspring. Be sure to live within compass. Borrow not, neither be beholden to any. Ruin not yourself by kindness to others; for that exceeds the due bounds of friendship: neither will a true friend expect it. Small matters, I heed not.

Let your industry and parsimony go no further than for a sufficiency for life, and to make provision for your children, and that in moderation, if the Lord gives you any. I charge you to help the poor and needy. Let the Lord have a voluntary share of your income for the good of the poor both in your society and others; for we are all his creatures, remembering that he that giveth to the poor lendeth to the Lord.

Know well your incomings, and your outgoings may be better regulated.

Love not money, nor the world. Use them only, and they will serve you; but, if you love them, you serve them which debase your spirits, as well as offend the Lord.

Pity the distressed, and hold out a hand of help to them: it may be your case; and, as you mete to others, God will mete to you again.

Be humble and gentle in your conversation, of few words, I charge you, but always pertinent, hearing out before you attempt to answer, and then speaking as if you would *persuade*, not *impose*.

Affront none, neither revenge the affronts that are done to you, but forgive, and you shall be forgiven of your heavenly Father.

In making friends, consider well first, and, when you are fixed, be true; not wavering by reports, nor deserting in affliction, for that becomes not the good and virtuous.

Watch against anger, and neither speak nor act in it; for, like drunkenness, it makes a man a beast, and throws people into desperate inconveniences.

Avoid flatterers, for they are thieves in disguise: their praise is costly, designing to get by those they bespeak. They are the worst of creatures: they lie to flatter, and flatter to cheat; and, which is worse, if you believe them, you cheat yourselves most dangerously. But the virtuous, though poor, love, cherish, and prefer. Remember David, who asking the Lord, "Who shall abide in thy tabernacle? who shall dwell upon thy holy hill?" answers, "He that walketh uprightly, and speaketh the truth in his heart; in whose eyes the vile person is contemned, but honoreth them who fear the Lord."

Next, my children, be temperate in all things,—in your diet, for that is physic by prevention: it keeps, nay, it makes, people healthy, and their generation sound. This is exclusive of the spiritual advantage it brings. Be also plain in your apparel. Keep out that lust which reigns too much over some. Let your virtues be your ornaments, remembering "life is more than food, and the body than raiment." Let your furniture be simple and cheap. Avoid pride, avarice, and luxury. Read my "No Cross, No Crown." There is instruction. Make your conversation with the most eminent for wisdom and piety; and shun all wicked men, as you hope for the blessing of God, and the comfort of your father's living and dying prayers.

Be sure you speak no evil of any; no, no, not of the meanest, much less of your superiors, as magistrates, guardians, tutors, teachers, and elders in Christ.

Be no busy-bodies: meddle not with other folk's matters, but when in conscience and duty pressed; for it procures trouble, and is ill manners, and very unseemly to wise men.

In your family, remember Abraham, Moses, and Joshua, their integrity to the Lord, and do as you have them for your examples.

Let the fear and service of the living God be encouraged in your houses, and that plainness, sobriety, and moderation in all things, as becometh God's chosen people. And as I advise you, my beloved children, do you counsel yours, if God should give you any. Yea, I counsel and command them, as my posterity, that they love and serve the Lord God with an upright heart, that he may bless you and yours from generation to generation.

And as for you, who are likely to be concerned in the government of Pennsylvania, and my parts of Jersey, especially the first, I do charge you, before the Lord God and his holy angels, that you be lowly, diligent, and tender, fearing God, loving the people, and hating covetousness. Let justice have its impartial course, and the law free passage. Though to your loss, protect no man against it; for you are not above the law, but the law above you. Live, therefore, the lives yourselves you would have the people to live, and then you have right and boldness to punish the transgressor. Keep upon the square, for God sees you: therefore, do your duty, and be sure you see with your own eyes, and hear with your own ears. Entertain no luxuries, cherish no informers for gain or revenge. Use no tricks, fly to no devices, to cover or support injustice, but let your hearts be upright before the Lord, trusting in him above the contrivances of men, and none shall be able to hurt or supplant you.

Oh! the Lord is a strong God, and he can do whatsoever he pleases; and, though men consider it not, it is the Lord that rules and overrules in the kingdom of men, and he builds up and pulls down. I, your father, am a man that can say, "He



that trusts in the Lord shall not be confounded. But God, in due time, will make his enemies be at peace with him."

If you thus behave yourselves, and so become a terror to evil-doers, and a praise to them that do well, God, my God, will be with you in wisdom and a sound mind, and make you blessed instruments, in his hands, for the settlement of some of those desolate parts of the world; which my soul desires, above all worldly honors and riches, both for you that go and you that stay, you that govern and you that are governed; that, in the end, you may be gathered with me to the rest of God.

Finally, my children, love one another with a true, endeared love, and your dear relations on both sides, and take care to preserve tender affection in your children to each other, often marrying within themselves, so as it be without the bounds forbidden in God's law, that so they may not, like the forgetting, unnatural world, grow out of kindred, and as cold as strangers, but, as becomes a truly natural and Christian stock, you, and yours after you, may live in the pure and fervent love of God towards one another, as becometh brethren in the spiritual and natural relation.

So my God, that has blessed me with his abundant mercies both of this and the other and better life, be with you all, guide you by his counsel, bless you, and bring you to his eternal glory, that you may shine, my dear children, in the firmament of God's power, with the blessed spirits of the just, that celestial family, praising and admiring him, the God and father of it, forever. For there is no God like unto him, the God of Isaac and of Jacob, the God of the prophets, the apostles, and martyrs of Jesus, in whom I live forever.

So farewell to my thrice dearly beloved wife and children!

Yours, as God pleaseth, in that which no waters can quench, no time forget, nor distance wear away, but remain forever,

WILLIAM PENN.

## CHAPTER VI.

### WILLIAM PENN'S FIRST VISIT TO AMERICA.

Sends Commissioners — Letter to the Indians — Death of his Mother — Frame of Government — Agreement with the Duke of York — Penn's Embarkation — An Epistle — Letter to Stephen Crisp — Welcome from the Dutch, Swedes, and Quakers — Toleration and Civil Freedom — First General Assembly — Chester Named — Lands bought — Great Treaty — Measurement by Walks — John Penn — Bounties offered — Site for a City — Penn's House — Pennsbury Manor — City named — Division of Province and Territories — Letter to One of his Detractors — Leaves for England.

IN one of the three ships already alluded to sailed Col. William Markham, a relative of Penn's, who was to be his future secretary, and several commissioners, with power to treat with the Indians for the purchase of their lands. "Penn charged them in a solemn manner to be just and humane towards the Indians," to whom he sent by them a most kind and friendly letter, of which the following is a copy: —

"There is a great God and Power, which hath made the world, and all things therein, to whom you, and I, and all people, owe their being and well-being, and to whom you and I must one day give an account for all that we have done in this world.

"This great God has written his law in our hearts, by which we are taught and commanded to love, and to help, and to do good to one another. Now, this great God hath been pleased to make me concerned in your part of the world; and the king of the country where I live hath given me a great province therein: but I desire to enjoy it with your love and consent, that we may always live together as neighbors and friends; else what would the great God do to us, who hath made us, not to devour and destroy one another, but to live

soberly and kindly together in the world? Now, I would have you well observe, that I am very sensible of the unkindness and injustice which have been too much exercised toward you by the people of these parts of the world, who have sought themselves to make great advantages by you, rather than to be examples of goodness and patience unto you. This, I hear, hath been a matter of trouble to you, and caused great grudging and animosities, sometimes to the shedding of blood, which hath made the great God angry. But I am not such a man, as is well known in my own country. I have great love and regard toward you, and desire to win and gain your love and friendship by a kind, just, and peaceable life; and the people I send are of the same mind, and shall in all things behave themselves accordingly. And if, in any thing, any shall offend you or your people, you shall have a full and speedy satisfaction for the same by an equal number of just men on both sides, that by no means you may have just occasion of being offended against them.

“I shall shortly come to see you myself, at which time we may more largely and freely discourse of these matters. In the mean time I have sent my commissioners to treat with you about land and a firm league of peace. Let me desire you to be kind to them and to the people, and receive the presents and tokens which I have sent you, as a testimony of my goodwill to you, and of my resolution to live justly, peaceably, and friendly with you.

“I am your loving friend,

“WILLIAM PENN.”

Soon after this, William Penn's mother died, for whom he greatly mourned; and, having paid the last offices of respect to her, he turned his mind to his American affairs. In the first place, he published the *Frame of Government for Pennsylvania*. Clarkson, speaking of the preface to this constitution says, “To this he added a noble preface, containing his own thoughts upon the origin, nature, object, and modes of government,—a preface, indeed beautiful, and full of wise and just sentiments.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Life of Penn*, vol. i. p. 234.

It does contain many excellent remarks upon human government, and exhibits a superior mind, showing that William Penn was far in advance of most of the statesmen, politicians, bishops, and clergy of his day. It has, also, many things worthy of the attention and adoption of the now numerous States in the Union; and, had we not already quoted so largely from the writings of Penn, we should feel it our duty to give it entire to our readers.

Penn now—having, by an arrangement with the Duke of York, barred all claims upon his Province of Pennsylvania, and thus added the territories to it, published his Frame of Government and Laws, written the long letter to his family, already given in the last chapter—embarked on board the ship “Welcome,” for America. Robert Greenaway commanded the ship; and the passengers, including himself, were (about one hundred) mostly Quakers. While the vessel was detained in the Downs, he wrote a farewell letter, entitled “An Epistle containing a Salutation to all Faithful Friends, a Reproof to the Unfaithful, and a Visitation to the Inquiring in the Land of my Nativity.” He wrote, also, a letter to his friend Stephen Crisp, a minister of the gospel in his own society, who had suffered much in the cause of religion, and to whom his soul clung with extraordinary love, from which we make the following extract:—

“The Lord will bless that ground [Pennsylvania]. And, truly, Stephen, there is work enough; and here is room to work in. Surely God will come in for a share in this planting-work; and that heaven shall leaven the lump in time. I do not believe the Lord’s providence had run this way towards me, but that he has an heavenly end and service in it: so with him I leave all, and myself, and thee, and his dear people, and blessed name on earth.”

The first of September, 1682, they proceeded to sea; and, in six weeks after sailing, they came in sight of the American coast, and entered the River Delaware. The Dutch, Swedes, and Col. Markham, who had been sent out the year before, received him with demonstrations of great joy. He landed at New Castle, and, the next day after his arrival, called the peo-



ple together at the Dutch court-house at that place. There, in due form, he took legal possession of the country as its governor, his claim and charter taking precedence of all others. He made an address to the old magistrates, and explained to them the design of his coming, and the nature of his government. He assured them that they should have all their rights as to liberty of conscience and civil freedom, renewed the commissions of the magistrates, and exhorted them to live soberly, and in peace with each other.

Penn then proceeded to Upland, for the purpose of calling the first general assembly. This was a great event; and he determined to distinguish it by changing the name of the place. Turning to his friend Pearson, one of his brother Quakers, he said, "Providence has brought us here safe. Thou hast been the companion of my perils. What wilt thou that I should call this place?" Pearson replied, "Chester," in remembrance of the city from whence he came. William Penn replied, "It shall be called Chester; and, when I divide the land into counties, I will call one of them by the same name."

When the assembly met, it consisted of an equal number from the Province and from the territories, and such freemen as chose to attend, in accordance with the sixteenth article of his Frame of Government. Nicholas Moore, president of the Free Society of Traders of Pennsylvania, was chosen speaker. The whole business was transacted in three days, a commendable example, worthy to have been imitated by many more modern assemblies.

The assembly passed an act of union, annexing the territories to the Province. They also passed an act of settlement, which referred to the Frame of Government, and which adopted that Frame of Government with a very few alterations.

The Swedes, Dutch, and foreigners within the bounds of the territories, then became naturalized. In addition to the laws which formed the Frame of Government, nineteen others were added, making a general constitution, from which we extract the following from Clarkson's "Life of Penn: " <sup>1</sup> —

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 260.

“ Among these laws I shall notice the following: All persons who confessed the one almighty and eternal God to be the Creator, Upholder, and Ruler of the world, and who held themselves obliged in conscience to live peaceably and justly in society, were in no ways to be molested for their religious persuasion and practice, nor to be compelled at any time to frequent any religious place or ministry whatever. All Treasurers, however, Judges, Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, and all whatsoever in the service of the government, and all members elected to serve in provincial council and general assembly, and all electors, were to be such as professed faith in Jesus Christ, and as had not been convicted of ill fame, or unsober and dishonest conversation, and who were one and twenty years of age. All children of the age of twelve were to be taught some useful trade or skill, to the end that none might be idle in the Province, but that the poor might work to live, and the rich, if they became poor, might not want. Servants were not to be kept longer than the time of servitude agreed upon, and were to be put in fit equipage at the expiration of it. All pleadings, processes, and records in courts of law, were to be moderate, and to be hung up on tables in the courts. All persons wrongfully imprisoned or prosecuted were to have double damages against the informer or prosecutor. All fines were to be moderate. With respect to the criminal part of these laws, one new principle was introduced into it. William Penn was of opinion, that though the deterring of others from offences must continue to be the great, and, indeed, only end of punishment, yet, in a community professing itself Christian, the reformation of the offender was to be inseparably connected with it. Hence he made but two capital offences; namely, murder, and treason against the State; and hence, also, all prisons were to be considered as workshops, where the offenders might be industriously, soberly, and morally employed.”

As William Penn had told King Charles he had no right to sell the Indians' lands, so, though he had taken legal possession of them according to the laws of England, he now carried out that principle, and proceeded to buy them of the natives. The commissioners, according to his instructions, who had come

over before him, had already made several purchases, and a treaty of eternal friendship. Although these minor treaties are several times referred to, no definite description of them has come down to us, although traditions of them remain in Quaker families. Penn now proceeded to ratify their treaty of peace, and their purchase of lands. For this purpose, he came to Coaquannoc, the Indian name of the place where Philadelphia now stands. Many of his friends — men, women, and young persons of both sexes — accompanied him. The Quakers, according to their pacific principles, came without any arms. Upon his arrival he found the sachems and their tribes assembling in large numbers. Some of the historians of that day say that they were armed; others, that they were not. Although this meeting was called at Coaquannoc, the treaty was made at Shackamaxon, where Kensington now stands, which was not in the bounds of the old city of Philadelphia as laid out by Penn, although it is now included in the city. Here was a very large elm-tree, under which the leaders of both parties assembled when the sun was at the “halfway house;” that is, at noon.

William Penn wore his usual clothes, without a crown, sceptre, mace, sword, halberd, or any insignia of distinction, except a sky-blue sash around his waist. On his right hand stood Col. Markham; on his left, his friend Pearson. Various articles of merchandise were carried before him, and spread out upon the ground before the sachems. He held a roll of parchment, on which was written the treaty of purchase and of friendship, in his hand. The chief sachem put upon his own head a kind of chaplet, or crown, with a small horn in it. This was an indication of power, and that the place was sacred, and all persons present, secure. The fact of the sachems wearing a crown when they transacted business was Gov. Boudinot's strongest argument to prove that these Indians were the descendants of the “lost ten tribes.”

When, upon any occasion, the chief sachem put on this horn, the Indians always threw down their bows and arrows, and seated themselves upon the ground, in the form of a half-moon. The chief sachem then said to William Penn, through an interpreter, “The nations were ready to hear him.” William





PENN'S TREATY WITH THE INDIANS.



Penn, being thus called upon, addressed them through their interpreter:—

“Brothers, listen! Brothers, we are come to bring good words to your ear. We call you brothers, and so you are; and we are your brothers too. Yes, the red men on this side the big water, and the white men on the other side, are all children of the GREAT SPIRIT, and so must love one another, and never *fall out*. The GREAT SPIRIT says so. He says we have no need to fall out; for he has made this world big,—big enough for all, red and white brothers too. And he has made fish and deer and turkeys and corn, and every thing, plenty for all. And, if at any time, the red or white brothers want any thing that the others have, they must not fight to take it away. Now your own eyes see our canoes yonder (here he pointed to his ships), that they are bigger than your canoes; and our bows and arrows, too, that they are stronger than your bows and arrows. They send out thunder and lightning: nothing can stand before them. We could easily kill you with our bows and arrows of fire, and take your land; but the GREAT SPIRIT shakes his head, and says, ‘No, you must not hurt your red brothers. You must not touch their land. Didn’t I give this land to them and their children to hunt on? And also the buffaloes, and deer and turkeys, and corn and beans and squashes? And haven’t I given you good things, too, great many good things? Well, then, give some to your red brothers, and they will give you land; and so live together like brothers.’ Now, brothers, lift up your eyes, and see here the good things which the GREAT SPIRIT has given us to bring you.”

When the speech was finished, and Penn had sat down, the chief sachem, with the crown and horn on his head, as above related, arose, and made the following reply:—

“Brother, your words are fine. We feel them burning in our hearts. Brother, we believe that the Great Spirit is good. Our mothers always told us so; and we see it with our own eyes. This big water, which runs along by this Shackamaxon and Coaquannoc, with all the fish, speaks that the Great Spirit is good. This ground, which grows so much corn and beans and tobacco for us, speaks that the Great Spirit is good. These

woods, that shelter so many deer and turkeys for us, speak that the Great Spirit is good. The Great Spirit would not have done all this for us, if he had not been good, and loved us very much. Brother, we ought to be like the Great Spirit. We ought to love one another as he loves us. But, brother, the red men here have not done so. The red men do very bad. They sometimes fight, and kill one another. The Great Spirit has been very angry with us for it, and has taken away our corn and deer; and then we have become poor and weak, and have fallen sick, and died, so that our wigwams (cabins) are empty. But now we are very sorry and ashamed, and will do so no more. And now, brothers, we are ready to sell you land, that you may live with us like good brothers, never to fight us, as we *red men* have done, but always to love and do good to one another. And then the Great Spirit will make his face to shine upon us as his good children, and will always give us plenty of deer, and corn and beans, so that we may eat, and grow strong again. Brothers, the Great Spirit sees our hearts, that they are not like foxes and snakes, but like *brothers*, — *good brothers*.”<sup>1</sup>

Clarkson says, “It is much to be regretted, when we have accounts of minor treaties between William Penn and the Indians, that in no historian I can find an account of this, though so many mention it; and all concur in considering it as the most glorious of any in the annals of the world.”<sup>2</sup> Sherman Day, who published a History of Pennsylvania in 1843, also says, “No authentic record has been preserved of this treaty.”<sup>3</sup>

Although several historians say no land was purchased at this time, but that it was simply a treaty of perpetual friendship and good-will, nevertheless, we have the following statement of Weems, who says he does not know the exact time spent in making this famous bargain, but gives the result thus:—

“The Indians agreed to give the great sachem of the white men (William Penn) all the land binding on the great river, from the mouth of Duck Creek to what is now called Bristol,

<sup>1</sup> Weems's Life of Penn, p. 153.    <sup>2</sup> Clarkson's Life of Penn, vol. i. p. 264.

<sup>3</sup> Day's Historical Collections of Penn, vol. i. p. 14.

and from the river towards the setting sun, as far as a man could ride in two days on a horse.”<sup>1</sup>

This mode of purchasing lands by travelling around it was repeated, subsequently, in several instances; and although William Penn first purchased the site of old Philadelphia of the Swedes (they having previously obtained it of the Indians), yet Thomas Holme, a surveyor, purchased of the natives, while Penn was in England, as much of the same site “as a man could travel in two days.”

Still later, upon his second visit to his province, Penn, hearing of a “Large slip of choice lands lying on the Neshaminy, and not included in his first purchase, caused it to be inquired of the sachems whether they would sell it to him. They replied that they did not wish to part with that piece of ground, the bones of their fathers and mothers lying there; but still, to please *their father Onas, who was so good as to come to live with his red children again, they would sell him some of it.* In short, they agreed to sell him as much land as could be walked around in one day by one of his own young men, beginning at the great river above Coaquannoc (Kensington), and ending at the great river just below Kallapingo (Bristol). The Indians were to be paid, as usual, in British goods. The bargain being made, a young Englishman was pitched on, who, having been much exercised in his own country as a pedestrian, made a walk that equally astonished and mortified the Indians. Observing that their looks, when they came to receive their pay, were not bright towards him, as formerly, William Penn asked them the cause.

“They replied, that *Father Onas’s young man had cheated them.*

“‘Ay, how could that be?’ replied he calmly. ‘Was it not of your own choosing that the ground should be measured in this way?’

“‘True,’ returned the Indians; ‘but the *white brother* made *too big* a walk.’

“Here some of the commissioners, getting warm, said that the bargain was a very fair one, and that the Indians ought to stand to it, and that, if they did not, they ought to be com-

<sup>1</sup> Weems’s Life of Penn, p. 154.

pelled. At this William Penn, looking exceedingly shocked, replied, '*Compelled!* How are they to be *compelled?* Don't you see that this points to *murder?*' Then turning to the Indians, with the kindest smile on his countenance, he said, 'Well, if you think you have given too much land for the goods first agreed on, tell us now how much more will do.' At this they appeared greatly pleased, and said, if Father Onas would give them so many more yards of cloth, and fishing-hooks, they would be well satisfied."<sup>1</sup>

In later times we find that lands were bought of the Indians by William Penn's sons, John and Thomas, by this very indefinite way of bounding them; to wit, "to run two days' journey with a horse, as the said river doth go; north-westerly back into the woods, to make up two full days' journey as far as a man can go in two days from the said station." One tract after another was thus purchased by Penn and his descendants.

As a curiosity of this mode of measuring lands, the following sketch may interest our readers.

"Aug. 25, 1737. We, Teshakomen, alias Tishekunk, and Nootamis, alias Nutimus, two of the sachems, or chiefs, of the Delaware Indians, having, almost three years ago, at Durham, begun a treaty with our honorable brethren, John and Thomas Penn, and from thence another meeting was appointed to be at Pennsbury the next spring following, to which we repaired with Lappawinzoe, and several others of the Delaware Indians, at which treaty several deeds were produced, and showed to us by our said brethren, concerning several tracts of land which our forefathers had, more than fifty years ago, bargained and sold unto our good friend and brother, William Penn, the father of the said John and Thomas Penn, and in particular one deed from Maykeerickkisho, Sayhoppy, and Taughhaughsey, the chiefs or kings of the northern Indians on Delaware, who for, &c., did grant, &c., all those lands lying and being in the Province of Pennsylvania, beginning upon a line formerly laid out from a corner spruce-tree by the River Delaware (Makeerikitton), and from thence running along the ledge or foot of

<sup>1</sup> Weems's Life of Penn, p. 189.



the mountains west, north-west, to a corner white-oak, marked with the letter P, standing by the Indian path that leadeth to an Indian town called Playwickey, and from thence extending westward to Neshamony cr.; from which said line, the said tract or tracts thereby granted doth extend itself back into the woods as far as a man can go in one day and a half, and bounded on the westerly side with the creek called Neshamony, or the most westerly branch thereof, and from thence by a line ——— to the utmost extent of the said one day and a half's journey, and from thence ——— to the aforesaid River Delaware, and from thence down the several courses of the said river, to the first-mentioned spruce-tree, &c. But, some of our old men being absent, we requested more time to consult with our people; which request being granted, we have, after more than two years from the treaty at Pennsbury, now come to Philadelphia, together with our chief sachem, Monockykichan, and several of our old men. They then acknowledge that they were satisfied that the above-described tract was granted by the persons above mentioned, and agree to release to the proprietors all right to that tract, and desire it may be walked, travelled, or gone over by persons appointed for that purpose."

[Signed:] Monockykichan, Lappawinzoe, Teshakomen, Noo-tamis; and witnessed by twelve other Indians, in token of full and free consent, besides other witnesses.

Recorded May 8, 1741, in book G., vol. i. p. 282.

The walk was performed near the end of September, 1737, in presence of Mr. Eastburn, surveyor-general, and Timothy Smith, sheriff of Bucks County. The following account of the walk, given by Thomas Furniss, an eye-witness, is contained in the "Enquiry into the Causes," &c.:—

"At the time of the walk, I was a dweller at Newton, and a near neighbor to James Yeates. My situation gave him an easy opportunity of acquainting me with the time of setting out, as it did me of hearing the different sentiments of the neighborhood concerning the *walk*; some alleging it was made by the river, others that it was to be gone upon a straight line from somewhere in Wrightstown, opposite to a spruce-tree on the river's bank, said to be a boundary to a former purchase. When

the walkers started, I was a little behind, but was informed they proceeded from a chestnut-tree near the turning out of the road from Durham road to John Chapman's, and, being on horse-back, overtook them before they reached Buckingham, and kept company for some distance beyond the Blue Mountains, though not quite to the end of the journey. Two Indians attended, whom I considered as deputies appointed by the Delaware nation to see the walk honestly performed. One of them repeatedly expressed his dissatisfaction therewith. The first day of the walk, before we reached Durham cr., where we dined in the meadows of one Wilson, an Indian trader, the Indian said the walk was to have been made up the river; and, complaining of the unfitness of his shoe-packs for travelling, said he expected Thomas Penn would have made him a present of some shoes. After this, some of us that had horses walked, and let the Indians ride by turns; yet in the afternoon of the same day, and some hours before sunset, the Indians left us, having often called to Marshall that afternoon, and forbid him to run. At parting, they appeared dissatisfied, and said they would go no further with us; for, as they saw the *walkers* would pass all the good land, they did not care how far or where we went to. It was said we travelled twelve hours the first day; and it being in the latter end of September, or beginning of October, to complete the time were obliged to walk in the twilight. Timothy Smith, then sheriff of Bucks, held his watch for some minutes before we stopped; and, the walkers having a piece of rising ground to ascend, he called out to them, telling the minutes behind, and bid them pull up; which they did so briskly, that, immediately upon his saying the time was out, Marshall clasped his arms about a sapling to support himself. Thereupon, the sheriff asking him what was the matter, he said he was almost gone, and that, if he had proceeded a few poles further, he must have fallen. We lodged in the woods that night, and heard the shouting of the Indians at a cantico, which they were said to hold that evening, in a town hard by. Next morning the Indians were sent to, to know if they would accompany us any further; but they declined it, although I believe some of them came to us before we started, and drank a dram in the

company, and then straggled off about their hunting, or some other amusement. In our return we came through this Indian town or plantation, Timothy Smith and myself riding forty yards, more or less, before the company. And as we approached within about one hundred and fifty paces of the town, the woods being open, we saw an Indian take his gun in his hand, and, advancing towards us some distance, placed himself behind a log that laid by our way. Timothy observing his motions, and being somewhat surprised, as I apprehended, looked at me, and asked what I thought that Indian meant. I said I hoped no harm, and that I thought it best to keep on; which the Indian seeing, he arose, and walked before us to the settlement. I think Smith was surprised, as I well remember I was, through a consciousness that the Indians were dissatisfied with the walk, — a thing the whole company seemed to be sensible of, and upon the way, in our return home, frequently expressed themselves to that purpose. And, indeed, the unfairness practised in the walk, both in regard to the way where, and the manner how, it was performed, and the dissatisfaction of the Indians concerning it, were the common subjects of conversation in our neighborhood for some considerable time after it was done. When the walk was performed, I was a young man, in the prime of life. The novelty of the thing inclined me to be a spectator; and, as I had been brought up most of my time in Burlington, the whole transaction to me was a series of occurrences almost entirely new; and which, therefore, I apprehend, made the more strong and lasting impression on my memory."

The person who performed this walk was Edward Marshall; and his son gave the following account of it as he had received it from his father, to Mr. John Watson, author of the "*Annals of Philadelphia*:" —

"That in the year 1733 notice was given in the public papers, that the remaining day and a half's walk was to be made, and offering five hundred acres of land anywhere in the purchase, and five pounds in money, to the person who should attend, and walk the farthest in the given time. By previous agreement, the governor was to select three white persons, and the Indians, a like number of their own nation. The persons employed by

the governor were Edward Marshall, James Yeates, and Solomon Jennings. One of the Indians was called Combush; but he has forgotten the names of the other two.

“That about the 20th of September (or when the days and nights are equal), in the year aforesaid, they met before sunrise, at the old chestnut-tree below Wrightstown meeting-house, together with a great number of persons as spectators. The walkers all stood with one hand against the tree, until the sun rose, and then started. In two hours and a half, they arrived at Red Hill, in Bedminster, where Jennings and two of the Indians gave out. The other Indian (Combush) continued with them to near where the road forks, at Easton, where he laid down a short time to rest, but, on getting up, was unable to proceed farther. Marshall and Yeates proceeded on, and arrived, at sundown, on the north side of the Blue Mountain. They started again next morning, at sunrise. While crossing a stream of water, at the foot of the mountain, Yeates became faint, and fell. Marshall turned back, and supported him until others came to his relief, and then continued the walk alone, and arrived at noon on a spur of the Second or Broad Mountain, estimated to be eighty-six miles from the place of starting, at the chestnut-tree below Wrightston meeting-house.

He says, “They walked from sunrise to sunset without stopping, provisions and refreshments having been previously provided, at different places along the road and line that had been run and marked for them to walk by, to the top of the Blue Mountain; and persons also attended on horseback, by relays, with liquors of several kinds. When they arrived at the Blue Mountain, they found a great number of Indians collected, expecting the walk would there end; but, when they found it was to go half a day farther, they were very angry, and said they were cheated. Penn had got all their good land, but that in the spring every Indian was to bring him a buckskin, and they would have their land again, and Penn might go to the devil with his poor land. An old Indian said, ‘No sit down to smoke, no shoot a squirrel, but lun, lun, lun, all day long.’”

He says his “father never received any reward for the walk, although the governor frequently promised to have the five



hundred acres of land run out for him, and to which he was justly entitled.”<sup>1</sup>

Every thing connected with this walk, so far as John and Thomas, the sons of William Penn, and the other whites concerned in it, exhibits a greedy and overreaching disposition; yet in Hazard’s Register, an attempt is made to prove that the Indian walk was a fair and honorable transaction.<sup>2</sup> It may be creditable to the Quakers to state that all William Penn’s family had left that denomination at this time.

It is stated, that “on the 13th of October, 1763, John Penn, grandson of William Penn, and son of Richard, arrived from England as lieutenant-governor.” As governor, he made vigorous efforts to carry on a war with the Indians; and in July, 1764, this grandson of William Penn, in the city of Philadelphia, offered by proclamation the following bounties for the capture, or scalp and death, of Indians: “For every male above the age of ten years, captured, a hundred and fifty dollars; scalped, being killed, a hundred and thirty-four dollars; for every female Indian enemy, and every male under the age of ten years, captured, a hundred and thirty dollars; for every female above the age of ten years, scalped, being killed, fifty dollars.”<sup>3</sup>

To return to William Penn, from our digression to illustrate measuring land by *walks*, he fixed upon the site of his city, at Coaquannoc, and directed Thomas Holme, surveyor-general for the Province, to lay it out in the following order:—

“There were to be two large streets, the one fronting the Delaware on the east, and the other the Schuylkill on the west, of a mile in length. A third, to be called High Street, of one hundred feet broad, was to run directly through the middle of the city, so as to communicate with the streets now mentioned, at right angles; that is, it was to run through the middle, from river to river, or from east to west. A fourth, of the same breadth, to be called Broad Street, was to run through the middle also, but to intersect High Street at right angles, or to run from north to south. Eight streets, fifty feet wide,

<sup>1</sup> Day’s History of Pennsylvania, vol. ii. p. 506.

<sup>2</sup> See Register, vol. vi. p. 337.

<sup>3</sup> Gordon, p. 438.

were to be built parallel to High Street, that is, from river to river; and twenty, of the like width, parallel to Broad Street, that is, to cross the former from side to side. The streets running from east to west were to be named according to their numerical order, such as First, Second and Third Street; and those from north to south, according to the woods of the country, such as Vine, Spruce, Pine, Sassafras, Cedar, and others. There was to be a square of ten acres, in the middle of the city, each corner of which was to be reserved for public offices." He also ordered a house to be built for himself in the



PENN'S HOUSE.

town. The house is still standing in Letitia Court, the entrance of which is in Market Street, between Front and Second Streets; and it is probably the oldest house in Philadelphia.

It was about this time that he had a country-house built for him, at a place called Pennsbury, in Bucks County, on the margin of the Delaware River. It was built at great expense for that day, costing seven thousand pounds, and having considerable of the most finished or ornamental materials brought out from England. It was sixty feet in front by forty feet in depth. The garden, an ornamental and sloping one, lay along

the river-side in front of it; and numerous offices were in a front line with the dwelling.

The city thus laid out William Penn named Philadelphia, composed of two Greek words, meaning BROTHERLY LOVE. He then proceeded to divide his Province and territories into counties; the Province containing Philadelphia, Bucks, and Chester; the territories, New Castle, Kent, and Sussex; after which he marked out townships, and laid out lots, of the latter, reserving a thousand acres for his friend George Fox, as a testimonial of respect.

At this time William Penn wrote a letter to one of his detractors, in which he defends himself with considerable spirit, from which the following is extracted: —

“Keep,” says he, “thy place. I am in mine. I am not sitting down in a greatness which I have denied. Had I indeed sought greatness, I had staid at home, where the difference between what I am here, and what was offered, and I could have been there in power and wealth, is as wide as the places are. No: I came for the Lord’s sake; and therefore have I stood to this day, well and diligent and successful: blessed be his power! Nor shall I trouble myself to tell thee what I am to the people of this place in travails, watchings, spendings, and to my servants every way freely, not like a selfish man.”

Thus it is seen that William Penn, with all his meekness, charity, and pacific principles, was neither afraid nor ashamed to assert his own rights, and to tell his antagonist, as plainly as a Quaker could well do, to “mind his own business.”

Having transacted much business, taken legal possession of his Province, united the territories to it, made a formal treaty in person with the Indians, held two general assemblies, given laws to the people, established courts and trial by jury, and laid out the city of Philadelphia, he embarked for his native land on the 12th of August, 1684, and arrived safely in England the 3d or 4th of October.

No man could have accomplished more for the good of his Quakers, and the prosperity of his Province, in the short space of two years. The immediate cause for his departure was

the charge, everywhere made against him there, that he was a PAPIST and a JESUIT, and the sharp and bitter persecution which had broken out anew against his friends the Quakers.



## CHAPTER VII.

### THE INDIANS.

William Penn's Letter — Persons of the Indians — Their Language — Customs and Manners — Religion — Government — Origin — Dr. Rush's Account — Of their Children — Food — Customs of Women — Employment of Men — Common Customs — Diseases — Small-Pox and Venereal Imported — Remedies — Indian Speeches.

AFTER consulting various historians of that day, no better description of this peculiar people has been found than that given by William Penn, in a letter to the Free Society of Traders of Pennsylvania, dated Aug. 16, 1683. His language is as follows : —

#### OF THEIR PERSONS.

“They are generally tall, straight, well built, and of singular proportion. They tread strong and clever, and mostly walk with a lofty chin. Of complexion black, but by design, as the gypsies in England. They grease themselves with bear's fat, clarified ; and, using no defence against sun and weather, their skin must needs be swarthy. Their eye is little and black, not unlike a straight-looking Jew. The thick lip and flat nose so frequent with the East Indians and blacks are not common to them ; for I have seen as comely, European-like faces among them, of both sexes, as on your side of the sea : and truly an Italian complexion hath not much more of the white ; and the noses of several of them have as much of the Roman.

#### OF THEIR LANGUAGE.

“Their language is lofty, yet narrow, but, like the Hebrew in signification, full. Like short-hand in writing, one word

serveth in the place of three, and the rest are supplied by the understanding of the hearer ; imperfect in their tenses, wanting in their moods, participles, adverbs, conjunctions, interjections. I have made it my business to understand it, that I might not want an interpreter on any occasion ; and I must say that I know not a language spoken in Europe, that hath words of more sweetness and greatness, in accent and emphasis, than theirs ; for instance, Octocockon, Rancocas, Oricton, Shak, Marian, Poquesien, all of which are names of places, and have grandeur in them. Of words of sweetness, *anna* is ‘mother ;’ *issimus*, a ‘brother ;’ *neteap*, ‘friend ;’ *usqueoret*, ‘very good ;’ *panc*, ‘bread ;’ *metsa*, ‘eat ;’ *matta*, ‘no ;’ *hatta*, ‘to have ;’ *payo*, ‘to come ;’ Sepassen, Passijou, the names of places ; Tamane, Secane, Menause, Secatareus, are the names of persons. If one ask them for any thing they have not, ‘*Matta ne hatta*,’ which to translate is, ‘Not I have,’ instead of ‘I have not.’

#### THEIR CUSTOMS AND MANNERS.

“Of their customs and manners there is much to be said. I will begin with children. So soon as they are born, they wash them in water ; and while very young, and in cold weather to choose, they plunge them in the rivers to harden and embolden them. Having lapt them in a clout, they lay them on a strait thin board a little more than the length and breadth of the child, and swaddle it fast upon the board to make it straight : wherefore all Indians have flat heads ; and thus they carry them at their backs. The children will go very young, — at nine months commonly. They wear only a small clout round their waist till they are big. If boys, they go a-fishing, till ripe for the woods, which is about fifteen ; then they hunt ; and, having given some proofs of their manhood by a good return of skins, they may marry ; else it is a shame to think of a wife. The girls stay with their mothers, and help to hoe the ground, plant corn, and carry burdens ; and they do well to use them to that while young which they must do when they are old ; for the wives are the true servants of the husbands : otherwise the men are very affectionate to them.

“When the young women are fit for marriage, they wear

something upon their heads for an advertisement, but so as their faces are hardly to be seen but when they please. The age they marry at, if women, is about thirteen and fourteen; if men, seventeen and eighteen. They are rarely older.

“Their houses are mats, or barks of trees, set on poles, in the fashion of an English barn, but out of the power of the winds; for they are hardly higher than a man. They lie on reeds and grasses. In travel, they lodge in the woods, about a great fire, with the mantle of duffils they wear by day wrapped about them, and a few boughs stuck round them.

“Their diet is maize or Indian corn, divers ways prepared, — sometimes roasted in the ashes, sometimes beaten and boiled with water, which they call homine. They also make cakes not unpleasant to eat. They have, likewise, several sorts of beans and peas that are good nourishment; and the woods and river are their larder.

“If a European comes to see them, or calls for lodging at their house or wigwam, they give him the best place and the first cut. If they come to visit us, they salute us with an ‘Itah,’ which is as much as to say, ‘Good be to you!’ and set them down, which is mostly on the ground, close to their heels, their legs upright: it may be they speak not a word, but observe all passages. If you give them any thing to eat or drink, well, for they will not ask for it; and be it little or much, if it be with kindness, they are well pleased: else they go away sullen, but say nothing.

“They are great concealers of their own resentments, brought to it, I believe, by the revenge that hath been practised among them. In either of these they are not exceeded by the Italians. A tragical instance fell out since I came into the country. A king’s daughter, thinking herself slighted by her husband in suffering another woman to lie down between them, rose up, went out, plucked a root out of the ground and ate it, upon which she immediately died, and for which he, last week, made an offering to her kindred for atonement and liberty of marriage, as two others did to the kindred of their wives, who died a natural death; for, till widowers have done so, they must not marry again.

“But in liberality they excel. Nothing is too good for their friend. Give them a fine gun, coat, or other thing, it may pass twenty hands before it sticks; light of heart, strong affections, but soon spent; the most merry creatures that live. They feast and dance perpetually. They never have much, nor want much. Wealth circulateth like the blood. All parts partake; and, though none shall want what another hath, yet exact observers of property. Some kings have sold, others presented me with, several parcels of land. The pay or presents I made them were not hoarded by the particular owners; but, the neighboring kings and their clans being present when the goods were brought out, the parties chiefly concerned consulted what, and to whom they should give them. To every king, then, by the hands of a person for that work appointed, is a proportion sent, so sorted and folded, and with that gravity which is admirable. Then that king subdivideth it in like manner among his dependents, they hardly leaving themselves an equal share with one of their subjects; and be it on such occasions as festivals, or at their common meals, the kings distribute, and to themselves last. They care for little, because they want but little; and the reason is, a little contents them. In this they are sufficiently revenged on us. If they are ignorant of our pleasures, they are also free from our pains. They are not disquieted with bills of lading and exchange, nor perplexed with chancery-suits and exchequer-reckonings. We sweat and toil to live. Their pleasure feeds them: I mean their hunting, fishing, and fowling, and this table is spread everywhere. They eat twice a day,—morning and evening. Their seats and table are the ground. Since the Europeans came into these parts, they are grown great lovers of strong liquors, rum especially, and for it exchange the richest of their skins and furs. If they are treated with liquor, they are restless till they have enough to sleep. That is their cry, ‘Some more, and I will go to sleep;’ but, when drunk, one of the most wretched spectacles in the world.

“In sickness, impatient to be cured; and for it give any thing, especially for their children, to whom they are extremely natural. They drink at those times a *teran*, or decoction of some roots in spring water; and, if they eat any flesh, it must be of



the female of any creature. If they die, they bury them with their apparel, be they man or woman ; and the nearest of kin fling in something precious with them as a token of their love. Their mourning is blacking of their faces, which they continue for a year. They are choice of the graves of their dead ; for, lest they should be lost by time, and fall to common use, they pick off the grass that grows upon them, and heap up the fallen earth with great care and exactness.

#### OF THEIR RELIGION.

“ These poor people are under a dark night in things relating to religion (to be sure the tradition of it) ; yet they believe a God and immortality, without the help of metaphysics : for they say there is a great King, who made them, who dwells in a glorious country to the southward of them ; and that the souls of the good shall go thither, where they shall live again. Their worship consists of two parts, — sacrifice and cantico. Their sacrifice is their first-fruits.” [This custom of bringing their first-fruits seems to confirm the opinion of Governor Boudinot, Penn, and others, that those Indians were really descended from the “lost ten tribes” of Israel, — the first of their corn, and of their wine, the first cake of their dough, the first of their flocks, and those without blemish, all those they were to offer in sacrifice to the Lord, — how well does this comport with these poor deluded savages offering the finest and fattest bullocks as well as the first of all their produce ? Who, then, can doubt that these were the old Israelites, thus degraded for their apostacy from God ?] “ The first and fattest buck they kill goeth to the fire, where he is all burned, with a mournful ditty of him who performeth the ceremony, but with such marvellous fervency and labor of body, that he will even sweat to a foam. The other part is their cantico, performed by round dances, sometimes words, sometimes songs, then shouts ; two being in the middle, who begin, and by singing, and drumming on a board, direct the chorus. Their postures in the dance are very antic and differing ; but all keep measure. This is done with equal earnestness and labor, but great appearance of joy. In the fall, when the corn cometh in, they

begin to feast one another. There have been two great festivals already, to which all come that will. I was at one myself. Their entertainment was a great seat by a spring under some shady trees, and twenty bucks, with hot cakes of new corn, both wheat and beans, which they make up in a square form, in the leaves of the stem, and bake them in the ashes, and, after that, they fall to dance. But they who go must carry a small present in their money; it may be sixpence, which is made of the bone of a fish. The black is with them as gold; the white, silver: they call it wampum.

#### OF THEIR GOVERNMENT.

“Their government is by kings, which they call Sachama, and those by succession, but always of the mother’s side. For instance, the children of him who is now king will not succeed, but his brother by the mother, or the children of his sister, whose sons (and after them the children of her daughters) will reign, for no woman inherits. The reason they render for this way of descent is, that their issue may not be spurious.

“Every king hath his council; and that consists of all the old and wise men of his nation, which, perhaps, is two hundred people. Nothing of moment is undertaken — be it war, peace, selling of land, or traffic — without advising with them, and, which is more, with the young men too. It is admirable to consider how powerful the kings are, and yet how they move by the breath of the people. I have had occasion to be in council with them upon treaties for land, and to adjust the terms of trade. Their order is thus: the king sits in the middle of a half-moon, and has his council, the old and the wise, on each hand. Behind them, or at a little distance, sit the younger fry, in the same figure. Having consulted, and resolved their business, the king ordered one of them to speak to me. He stood up, came to me, and, in the name of his king, saluted me; then took me by the hand, and told me that he was ordered by his king to speak to me, and that now it was not he, but the king, who spoke, because what he should say was the king’s mind. He first prayed me to excuse them, that they had not complied with me the last time. He feared

there might be some fault in the interpreter, being neither Indian nor English. Besides, it was the Indian custom to deliberate, and take up much time in council, before they resolved; and that, if the young people and owners of the land had been as ready as he, I had not met with so much delay. Having thus introduced his matter, he fell to the bounds of the land they had agreed to dispose of, and the price, which now is little and dear; that which would have bought twenty miles now buying two. During the time that this person spoke, not a man of them was observed to whisper or smile, — the old grave, the young reverent in their deportment. They speak little, but fervently, and with elegance. I have never seen more natural sagacity, considering them without the help (I was going to say the spoil) of tradition; and he will deserve the name of wise, who outwits them in any treaty about a thing they understand. When the purchase was agreed, great promises passed between us of kindness and good neighborhood, and that the English and Indians must live in love as long as the sun gave light; which done, another made a speech to the Indians, in the name of all the Sachamakers, or kings, first to tell them what was done, next to charge and command them to love the Christians, and particularly to live in peace with me, and the people under my government; that many governors had been in the river, but that no governor had come himself to live and stay there before; and having now such an one, who had treated them well, they should never do him or his any wrong; at every sentence of which they shouted, and said Amen, in their way.

“The justice they have is pecuniary. In case of any wrong or evil fact, be it murder itself, they atone by feasts, and presents of their wampum, which is proportioned to the quality of their offence, or person injured, or of the sex they are of. For, in case they kill a woman, they pay double; and the reason they render is, ‘that she breedeth children, which men cannot do.’ It is rare that they fall out, if sober; and, if drunk, they forgive, saying ‘It was the drink, and not the man, that abused them.’

“We have agreed, that, in all differences between us, six of

each side shall end the matter. Do not abuse them, but *let them have justice, and you win them.* The worst is, that they are the worse for the Christians, who have propagated their vices, and yielded them tradition for ill, and not for good things. But as low an ebb as these people are at, and as inglorious as their own condition looks, the Christians have not outlived their sight with all their pretensions to a higher manifestation. What good, then, might not a good people graft, where there *is so distinct a knowledge left of good and evil?* I beseech God to incline the hearts of all that come into these parts to outlive the knowledge of the natives by a fixed obedience to their greater knowledge of the will of God; for it were miserable indeed for us to fall under the just censure of the poor Indian conscience, while we make profession of things so far transcending.

#### OF THEIR ORIGIN.

“For their original I am ready to believe them of the Jewish race, I mean of the stock of the ten tribes, and that for the following reasons: first, they were to go to a land not planted nor known, which, to be sure, Asia and Africa were, if not Europe; and he who intended that extraordinary judgment upon them might make the passage not uneasy to them, as it is *not impossible in itself from the easternmost parts of Asia to the westernmost of America.* In the next place, I find them of the like countenance, and their children of so lively resemblance, that a man would think himself in Duke’s Place or Berry Street, in London, when he seeth them. But this is not all: they agree in *rites*; they reckon by *moons*; they offer their *first-fruits*; they have a kind of *feast of tabernacles*; they are said to lay their altar upon *twelve stones*; their *mourning a year*; *customs of women*; with many other things that do not now occur.”

A century and a quarter after William Penn wrote the above, Dr. Benjamin Rush of Philadelphia, the most distinguished physician of his day, and perhaps the most eminent one America has ever produced, wrote his “Natural History of Medicine among the Indians,” which is, as its title implies,



a treatise upon the prevalent diseases of this barbarous people, and the remedies used by them. It would seem, from his statement, that a great change must have taken place, in some respects, in the habits and customs of this people, especially in reference to the time of their marriages, which, as is seen above, Penn puts at thirteen or fourteen for the female, and seventeen for the male, but which Rush says does not occur until the female is eighteen or twenty, and the male thirty. Dr. Rush thus continues in his treatise:—

#### OF THE BIRTH AND TREATMENT OF THEIR CHILDREN.

“A child born of healthy parents always brings into the world a system formed by nature to resist the causes of diseases. The treatment of children among the Indians tends to secure this hereditary firmness of constitution. Their first food is their mother’s milk. To harden them against the action of heat and cold (the natural enemies of health and life among the Indians), they are plunged every day into cold water. In order to facilitate their being moved from place to place, and, at the same time, to preserve their shape, they are tied to a board, where they lie on their backs for six, ten, or eighteen months. A child generally sucks its mother till it is two years old, and sometimes longer. It is easy to conceive how much vigor their bodies must acquire from this simple but wholesome nourishment.

#### OF THEIR FOOD.

“The diet of the Indians is of a mixed nature, partly animal, and partly vegetable. Their animals are wild, and therefore easy of digestion. In summer, they live more upon fish than land animals. Their vegetables consist of roots and fruits, mild in themselves, or capable of being made so by the action of fire. I cannot find that they used salt in their diet until instructed to do so by the Europeans. The small quantity of fixed alkali contained in the ashes on which they roasted their meat could not add much to its stimulating quality. They preserve their meat from putrefaction, by cutting it in small pieces, and exposing it, in summer to the sun, and in winter to

the frost. In dressing their meat, they are careful to preserve its juices. They generally prefer it in the form of soups. Hence we find, that among them the use of the spoon preceded that of the knife and fork. They take the same pains to preserve the juice of their meat when they roast it, by turning it often.

“They have no set time for eating, but obey the gentle appetites of nature as often as they are called by them. After whole days spent in the chase or in war, they often commit those excesses in eating, to which long abstinence cannot fail of prompting them. It is common to see them spend three or four hours in satisfying their hunger; which is occasioned, not more by the quantity they eat than by the pains they take in masticating it. They carefully avoid drinking water in their marches, from an opinion that it lessens their ability to bear fatigue.

#### CUSTOMS OF THEIR WOMEN.

“The women are doomed by their husbands to such domestic labor as gives a firmness to their bodies, bordering upon the masculine. They do not become women until they are eighteen or twenty, at which age, as we said above, they are marriageable; and the constitution has thus acquired a vigor, which enables it better to support child-bearing. This custom of late marriages likewise guards against a premature old age. Where marriages are unfruitful (which is seldom the case), a separation is obtained by means of an easy divorce; so that they are unacquainted with the disquietudes which sometimes arise from barrenness. During pregnancy, the women are exempted from the more laborious parts of their duty: hence miscarriages rarely happen among them. Nature is their only midwife. Their labors are short, and accompanied with little pain. Each woman is delivered in a private cabin, without so much as one of her own sex to attend her. After washing herself in cold water, she returns in a few days to her usual employments; so that she knows nothing of those accidents which proceed from the carelessness or ill management of midwives, or those weaknesses which arise from a month’s confinement in a warm room.

## EMPLOYMENT OF THE MEN.

“The customs peculiar to the Indian men consist chiefly in those employments which are necessary to preserve animal life, and to defend their nation. These employments are hunting and war, each of which is conducted in a manner that tends to call forth every fibre into exercise, and to insure them the possession of the utmost health. In times of plenty and peace, we see them sometimes rising from their beloved indolence, and shaking off its influence by the salutary exercises of dancing and swimming. As the Indian men seldom marry before they are thirty years of age, they, no doubt, derive considerable vigor from this custom; for, while they are secured by it from the enervating effects of the premature dalliance of love, they may insure more certain fruitfulness to their wives, and entail more certain health upon their children.

“Among the Indian men, it is deemed a mark of heroism to bear the most exquisite pain without complaining; upon this account they early inure themselves to burning part of their bodies with fire, or cutting them with sharp instruments. No young man can be admitted to the honors of manhood or war, who has not acquitted himself well in these trials of patience and fortitude.

## CUSTOMS COMMON TO MEN AND WOMEN.

“These are painting, and the use of the cold bath. The practice of anointing the body with oil is common to the savages of all countries. In warm climates, it is said to promote longevity, by checking excessive perspiration. The Indians generally use bear’s grease, mixed with a clay which bears the greatest resemblance to the color of their skins. This pigment serves to lessen the sensibility of the extremity of the nerves: it, moreover, fortifies them against the action of exhalations, which are a considerable source of their diseases. The cold bath likewise fortifies the body, and renders it less subject to those diseases which arise from the extremes and vicissitudes of heat and cold. It is a practice among the Indians never to drink before dinner, when they work or travel.

“The state of society among the Indians excludes the influence of most of those passions which disorder the body. The turbulent effects of anger are concealed in deep and lasting resentments. Envy and ambition are excluded by their equality of power and property.

“Nor is it necessary that the perfections of the whole sex should be ascribed to one, to induce them to marry. ‘The weakness of love’ (says Dr. Adam Smith), ‘which is so much indulged in ages of humanity and politeness, is regarded among savages as the most unpardonable effeminacy. A young man would think himself disgraced forever, if he showed the least preference of one woman above another, or did not express the most complete indifference, both about the time when, and the person to whom, he was to be married.’

“It is remarkable that there are no deformed Indians. Some have suspected, from this circumstance, that they put their deformed children to death; but Nature here acts the part of an unnatural mother. The severity of the Indian manners destroys them.

“The marks of old age appear more early among Indian than among civilized nations.

“The circulation of the blood is more languid in the Indians than in persons who are in the constant exercise of the habits of civilized life. Out of eight Indian men whose pulses I once examined at the wrists, I did not meet with one in whom the artery beat more than sixty strokes in a minute.

#### OF THEIR DISEASES.

“We need only recollect the custom, among the Indians, of sleeping in the open air in a variable climate, the alternate action of heat and cold upon their bodies (to which the warmth of their cabins exposes them), their long marches, their excessive exercise, their intemperance in eating (to which their long fasting, and their public feasts, naturally prompt them), and, lastly, the vicinity of their habitations to the banks of rivers, in order to discover the empire of diseases among them, in every stage of their lives. They have in vain attempted to



elude the general laws of mortality, while their mode of life subjects them to these remote but certain causes of diseases.

"FEVERS constitute the only diseases among the Indians, which are occasioned by the insensible qualities of the air. The DYSENTERY comes under the head of fevers. They are subject to ANIMAL and VEGETABLE poisons, which produce, when they do not bring on sudden death, either a common inflammatory or a malignant fever, according to their force.

"The SMALL-POX and the VENEREAL DISEASE were communicated to the Indians of North America by the Europeans. Nor can I find that they were ever subject to the SCURVY. Whether this was obviated by their method of preserving their flesh, or by their mixing it at all times with vegetables, I shall not undertake to determine. Their peculiar customs and manners seem to have exempted them from this, as well as from the common diseases of the skin. I have heard of two or three cases of the GOUT among the Indians; but it was only among those who had learned the use of rum from the white people. After much inquiry, I have not been able to find a single instance of FATUITY among the Indians, and but few instances of MELANCHOLY and MADNESS; nor can I find any accounts of diseases from WORMS among them. Nor is DENTITION accompanied by disease among the Indians. They appear, also, to be strangers to diseases and pains in the teeth. The employments of the Indians subject them to many accidents: hence we sometimes read of WOUNDS, FRACTURES, and LUXATIONS among them.

#### OF THEIR REMEDIES.

"These, like their diseases, are simple, and few in number. Among the first of them we shall mention the POWERS OF NATURE. Fevers, we said formerly, constituted the chief of the diseases among the Indians: they are, likewise, in the hands of Nature, the principal instruments to remove the evils which threaten her dissolution. But the event of these efforts of Nature, no doubt, soon convinced the Indians of the danger of trusting her in all cases; and hence, in the earliest accounts we have of their manners, we read of persons who were intrusted with the office of physicians.

“It will be difficult to find out the exact order in which the Indian remedies were suggested by Nature, or discovered by Art; nor will it be easy to arrange them in proper order. I shall, however, attempt it, by reducing them to NATURAL and ARTIFICIAL.

“To the class of NATURAL REMEDIES belongs the Indian practice of abstracting from their patients all kinds of stimulating aliment. The compliance of the Indians with the dictates of Nature, in the early stage of a disease, no doubt prevents, in many cases, their being obliged to use any other remedy. They follow Nature still closer, in allowing their patients to drink plentifully of cold water; this being the only liquor a patient calls for in a fever.

“Sweating is likewise a natural remedy. It was probably suggested by observing fevers to be terminated by it. Their mode of preparing this evacuation is as follows: the patient is confined in a close tent, or wigwam, over a hole in the earth, in which a red-hot stone is placed; a quantity of water is thrown upon this stone, which instantly involves the patient in a cloud of vapor and sweat; in this situation he rushes out, and plunges himself into a river, from whence he retires to his bed. If the remedy has been used with success, he rises from his bed, in four and twenty hours, perfectly recovered from his indisposition. This remedy is used, not only to cure fevers, but remove that uneasiness which arises from fatigue of body. A third natural remedy among the Indians is PURGING. VOMITS constitute their fourth natural remedy. They were probably, like the former, suggested by nature and accident. The ipecacuanha is one of the many roots they employ for that purpose.

“The ARTIFICIAL REMEDIES made use of by the Indians are BLEEDING, CAUSTICS, and ASTRINGENT medicines. They confine bleeding to the part affected. Sharp stones and thorns are the instruments they use to procure a discharge of blood.

“We have an account of the Indians using something like a POTENTIAL CAUSTIC in obstinate pains. It consists of a piece of rotten-wood, called *punk*, which they place upon the part affected, and afterwards set it on fire. The fire gradually consumes the wood, and its ashes burn a hole in the flesh.

“The undue efforts of Nature, in those fevers which are connected with a diarrhœa or dysentery, together with those hemorrhages to which their mode of life exposed them, necessarily led them to an early discovery of some ASTRINGENT VEGETABLES. I am uncertain whether the Indians rely upon astringent or any other vegetables, for the cure of the intermitting fever. This disease among them probably requires no other remedies than the cold bath, or cold air.

“We said, formerly, that the Indians were subject to ACCIDENTS, such as wounds, fractures, and the like. In these cases, Nature performs the office of a surgeon. Those ulcers which require the assistance of mercury, bark, and a particular regimen, are unknown to the Indians. The HEMORRHAGES which sometimes follow their wounds are restrained by plunging themselves into cold water, thereby producing a constriction upon the bleeding vessels.

“Their practice of attempting to recover DROWNED PEOPLE is irrational and unsuccessful. It consists in suspending the patient by the heels, in order that the water may flow from his mouth. This practice is founded on a belief that the patient dies from swallowing an excessive quantity of water.”

Dr. Rush speaks very favorably of the Indian moccasins; and cases are referred to, in which the feet of those wearing shoes were frozen, while those who wore moccasins escaped uninjured. If attacked with small-pox, they plunge themselves in cold water, which often proves fatal. He has heard of their performing several remarkable cures upon stiff joints by an infusion of herbs in water. He thinks there cannot be a stronger evidence of their ignorance than by their having recourse to enchantment to cure diseases.

In the preceding quotation from William Penn's letter, reference was had to their language; and, as a specimen, we give the following eloquent speech, the first on record, made to the Europeans when they were about to take possession of their lands; which for beauty, simplicity, and comprehensiveness, surpasses many of the addresses of ancient or modern orators.

“THE COURT-HOUSE IN LANCASTER,  
June 26, 1744, P.M.

“Present: Hon. George Thomas, Kt. Lieutenant-Governor of Pennsylvania, &c; the Hon. Commissioners of Virginia; the Hon. Commissioners of Maryland; the Deputies of the Six Nations of Indians, Conrad Weiser, Interpreter.

“Canasatego, the Indians’ spokesman, spoke as follows:—

“BROTHER, THE GOVERNOR OF MARYLAND,—When you spoke of the affair of the land yesterday, you went back to old times, and told us you had been in possession of the Province of Maryland above one hundred years. But what is one hundred years in comparison to the length of time since our claim began,—since we came up out of this ground? For we must tell you, that, long before one hundred years, our ancestors came out of this very ground, and their children have remained here ever since. You came out of the ground in a country that lies beyond seas: there you may have a just claim; but here you must allow us to be your elder brethren, and the lands to belong to us long before you knew any thing of them. It is true, that, about one hundred years ago, a German ship came hither, and brought with them various articles, such as awls, knives hatchets, guns, and many other things, which they gave us. And when they had taught us to use these things, and we saw what kind of a people they were, we were so well pleased with them, that we tied their ships to the bushes on the shore. And afterwards, liking them still better, and the more the longer they stayed with us, thinking that the bushes were too weak, we changed the place of the rope, and fastened it to the trees. And as the trees might be overthrown by a storm, or fall down of themselves (so strong was our friendship for them), we again changed the place of the rope, and bound it to a very strong rock. [Here the interpreter said, they mean the land of Onondago.] There we fastened it very securely, and rolled wampum around it. For still greater security, we stood upon the wampum, and sat upon it to fasten it and to prevent all injury; and we took the greatest care to keep it uninjured for all time. As long as that stood, the newly arrived Germans recognized our right to the country, and from time to time urged us to



give them portions of our land, and that they might enter into a union and treaty with us, and become one people with us.”<sup>1</sup>

The following is selected from a sachem’s address to his warriors.

Chijr Sacchéman ock pijri  
Renappe chékō rōe chijr?  
Tandarijton Achoores: matta  
hatte oquivan, matta Sinhus,  
matta Hopickan, matta punck,  
matta arùns, matta chekō hatte  
marameu; senaares hatte suh-  
vijvan hùritt.

You chiefs and warriors,  
what advice do you give?  
What shall we do with the  
Swedes? They have no cloth,  
red, blue, or brown. They  
have no kettles, no brass, no  
lead, no guns, no powder.  
They have nothing to sell to  
us; but the English and  
Dutch have got all sorts of  
good merchandise.

From the above account of these Indians, or savages as we call them, the thoughtful reader will be led to inquire, whether, on the whole, our boasted civilization contributes to either the health, happiness, or honesty of a people.

<sup>1</sup> See Reynolds’s Translation of Acrelius, p. 49.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1684 TO 1690.

The Provincial Council — Officers commissioned by William Penn — Letter to Friends — Population of the Province — Appoints Secretary — Troubles in the Province — Letter to the Magistrates and Others — Nicholas Moore — New Commission — Thomas Lloyd retires — Appointed Deputy — Great Scare — Gov. Blackwell — First Public School — George Keith — Schism among the Quakers — Penn's Power revoked — Fletcher made Governor — Divisions — Fletcher retires — Appoints Markham — Government restored to Penn — Appoints Markham — Penn's Return — Gives Laws — Improves Philadelphia — House of Lords — Fears for his Government — Return to England.

WILLIAM PENN having returned to England in 1684 (as stated in chap. vi.), before leaving commissioned the Provincial Council to act in the government in his absence. This council had for its president Thomas Lloyd, who also had a commission to keep the great seal. Nicholas Moore, William Welch, William Wood, Robert Turner, and John Eckley were appointed Provincial judges for two years. These are the words of the commission: —

“ William Penn, *Proprietary and Governor of the Province of Pennsylvania, and territories thereunto belonging.*

“ To my trusty and loving friends, Nicholas Moore, William Welch, William Wood, Robert Turner, and John Eckley, greeting:

“ Reposing special confidence in your justice, wisdom, and integrity, I do, by virtue of the king's authority derived unto me, constitute you *Provincial Judges* for the Province and territories, and any legal number of you a Provincial court of judicature, both fixt and circular, as is by law directed; giving you, and every of you, full power to act therein according to

the same, strictly charging you, and every of you, to do justice to all, and of all degrees, without delay, fear, or reward; and I do hereby require all persons within the Province and territories aforesaid, to give you due obedience and respect belonging to your station, in the discharge of your duties. This commission to be in force during two years ensuing the date hereof; you, and every of you, behaving yourselves well therein, and acting according to the same.

“Given at Philadelphia, *the 4th of the sixth month, 1684, being the thirty-sixth year of the king's reign, and the fourth of my government,*  
WILLIAM PENN.”

Penn now empowered Thomas Lloyd, James Claypoole (formerly a merchant in London), and Robert Turner, to sign warrants, and grant patents for lands. He constituted *William Clark* justice of the peace throughout the Province and territories: he also appointed other justices, and left all things in the Province settled in a promising and prosperous condition. After going on board the ship, he wrote a most affectionate letter to Thomas Lloyd, J. Claypoole, F. Simcock, Charles Tayler, and F. Harrison, to be communicated in meeting in Pennsylvania. In this letter he says, “I bless you in the name and power of the Lord, and may God bless you with his righteousness, peace, and plenty, all the land over. Oh, now you are come to a quiet land, provoke not the Lord to trouble it; and now liberty and authority are with you, in your hands. Truly, the name and honor of the Lord are deeply concerned in you as to the discharge of yourselves in your present stations. Many eyes are upon you; and remember, that, as we have been belied about disowning the true religion, so, of all government, to behold us exemplary and Christian in the use of that will not only stop our enemies, but administer conviction to many on that account prejudiced.”

In this letter he adds, “And thou, Philadelphia, the virgin settlement of this Province, named before thou wert born, what care, what service, and what travail, has there been to bring thee forth, and preserve thee from such as would abuse and defile thee!

“Oh that thou mayst be kept from the evil that would overwhelm thee! that, faithful to the God of thy mercies, in the life of righteousness thou mayst be preserved to the end! My soul prays to God for thee, that thou mayst stand in the day of trial, that thy children may be blessed of the Lord, and thy people saved by his power. My love to thee has been great, and the remembrance of thee affects mine heart and mine eye. The God of eternal strength keep and preserve thee, to his glory and thy peace.

“So, dear friends, my love again salutes you all, wishing that grace, mercy, and peace, with all temporal blessings, may abound richly among you. So says, so prays, your friend and lover in the truth.”

There were at this time ten Indian nations within the limits of his Province, and the number of souls of these barbarians was computed to be about six thousand: the number of inhabitants of Swedish or Dutch extraction was about three thousand. He had made a league of amity with nineteen Indian nations, between them and all the English in America. At the time he addressed Philadelphia as above, it contained about three hundred houses, and twenty-five hundred souls.<sup>1</sup>

In a letter dated London, 18th first month, 1684-85, he authorized the before-named council to commission his cousin, William Markham, to be secretary of the Province and territories, and his secretary as proprietary.

Although William Penn found things relative to himself and his Quakers very unpropitious upon his arrival in London, and had his hands full in his attempts to adjust them, yet soon trouble arose in his Province, to his great sorrow; for “Nicholas Moore, from Londón, one of the Provincial judges, being first in commission, took place as prior judge, or, in the style of later times, as chief justice of the Province, and was also a member of assembly; and, although he appears to have been a person of good and useful abilities, and esteemed by the proprietary, yet, being accused of mal-practices, he fell under the displeasure of the House; and they impeached him, in form, by a declaration, exhibited to the Council, consisting of ten articles, besides sav-

<sup>1</sup> Oldmixon in Proud's Hist. of Penn., vol. i. p. 288.



ing to themselves the liberty of adding more; and concluded, with a request that he be removed from his great offices and trust, and made to answer to the crimes and misdemeanors brought against him.”<sup>1</sup>

While these proceedings were occurring in the assembly, further trouble arose as follows: “And on the 18th, Patrick Robinson, clerk of the Provincial circular courts, being admitted into the House of Assembly, and requested to produce the records of said courts, but he denying the same, and joining with Moore, was, for his contempt of the authority of the House, disobedience to their orders, and abusing the Assembly, committed to the sheriff’s custody during the pleasure of the House, and voted a public enemy to the Province of *Pennsylvania*, and territories thereof, and a violator of the privileges of the free-men in Assembly met.”

The news of these disturbances, and other excesses, having reached London, William Penn sent this letter to the magistrates:—

“FRIENDS,—There is a cry come over into these parts against the number of drinking-houses, and looseness that is committed in the *caves*. I am pressed in my spirit, being very apt to believe too many disorders in that respect, strictly to require that speedy and effectual care be taken: first, to reduce the number of ordinaries, or drinking-houses, and that without respect to persons. Such are continued that are most tender of God’s glory and the reputation of the government, and that all others presuming to sell be punished according to law. I desire you to purge these *caves* in *Philadelphia*: they are mine by license and time. The three years are expired. I would have the suspected forthwith ordered to get up housing elsewhere, and the empty *caves* to accommodate the poor families that may come over, *though they shall not stand long* before men’s doors. Whatever you do, let virtue be cherished, and those that show to fear God, by a life according to it, be countenanced, and the evil person rebuked; that God, who blesseth those that fear him, and call upon his name in all lands, may

<sup>1</sup> Proud’s Hist. of Penn., vol. i. p. 296.

bless and preserve you. And, though this be particularly addressed to you, let the magistrates of other towns have it to read among them. I add no more, but my desires to the God of all our tender mercies to be with you all, in your duties and places, to his glory, and your praise and peace. Amen.

“Your very loving friend, WM. PENN.”

From this and other letters addressed to the president of the Council, and one to James Harrison, his agent for the estate of Pennsbury, it will be seen that he complained of the Council, that they had slighted his letters, that they had conducted in such a manner as to forfeit their charter, that they had wholly neglected the supply which they had promised him, that Nicholas Moore had been unjustly treated by the Assembly, and that they had acted harshly towards Patrick Robinson. To repair the injury done to Moore, he appointed him one of the new commissioners. This was a bold step in William Penn, when we consider the imputation of wrong conduct which it threw upon the Assembly. It reflects great credit upon his judgment and goodness in thus re-appointing Moore; for he held the office to the end of his life, and never disgraced it.

Penn was so much grieved by the proceedings of the Council, that he resolved to reduce their number, and diminish their authority, by taking from them the executive power. He, therefore, sent over a new commission, from which we extract the following:—

“To my trusty and well-beloved friends, Thomas Lloyd, Nicholas Moore, James Claypoole, Robert Turner, and John Eckley, or any three of them, in Philadelphia.

“Trusty and well-beloved! I heartily salute you. Lest any should scruple the termination of President Loyd’s Commission with his place in the Provincial Council, and to the end that there may be a more constant residence of the honorary and governing part of the Government, for the keeping all things in good order, I have sent a fresh Commission of Deputation to you, making any three of you a Quorum, to act in the execution of the Laws, enacting, disannulling, or varying of Laws, as if I myself were there present; reserving to myself the confirma-

tion of what is done, and my peculiar royalty and advantages.

"First, you are to oblige the Provincial Council to their Charter-attendance, or to take such a Council as you think convenient to advise and assist you in the business of the public; for I will no more endure their slothful and dishonorable attendance, but dissolve the Frame without any more ado. Let them look to it, if any further occasion be given.

"Secondly, that you keep to the dignity of your station, both in Council and out, but especially that you suffer no disorder in the Council, nor the Council and Assembly, nor either of them, to intrench upon the powers and privileges remaining yet in me.

"Thirdly, that you admit not any parleys or open conferences between the Provincial Council and Assembly, but let one, with your approbation, propose, and let the other consent or dissent, according to the Charter.

"Fourthly, that you curiously inspect the past proceedings of both, and let me know in what they have broken the bounds or obligations of the Charter.

"Fifthly, that you, this very next Assembly General, declare my abrogation of all that has been done since my absence; and so of all the Laws but the Fundamentals; and that you immediately dismiss the Assembly, and call it again; and pass such of them afresh, with such alterations as you and they shall see meet; and this to avoid a greater inconveniency, which I foresee, and formerly communicated to Thomas Lloyd."<sup>1</sup>

In 1687 Thomas Lloyd, who ever since the proprietary's departure had chiefly presided in public affairs, wished to be discharged from the burden, and before this time had solicited to be released, by the appointment of another person in his room. But a suitable person could not readily be found; and in a letter dated from the Holland House, the 27th of the tenth month, 1687, William Penn, with much sorrow, names for the position two persons, in these words:—

"I am sorry that *Thomas Lloyd*, my esteemed friend, covets a *quietus*, that is young, active, and ingenious; for from such it

<sup>1</sup> See Clarkson's *Life of Penn*, vol. i. p. 375.

is that I expect help, and such will not sow, I hope, in vain. But, since 'tis his desire, I do hereby signify his dismiss from the trouble he has borne (for some time of rest and ease, at least), and do nominate, to be commissioned in my name, under the great seal, till further order, Samuel Carpenter, who, I hope, will accept, and industriously serve that station; else Thomas Ellis, who has an office that requires his attendance, having one in my eye, that you may see shortly, as a man richly qualified for that station. Robert Turner, of course, has the Chair for the first month after the receipt of this, and the rest, alternately, monthly, if you find that convenient, as, I believe, it will be most easy; else let the senior commissioner have it always."

After having written this letter, which was to the commissioner, he thus addressed Thomas Lloyd:—

"Now, though I have, to please thee, given thee a *quietus* from all public business, my intention is to constitute thee deputy governor, and two in the character of assistants; either of whom and thyself to be able to do all as fully as I myself can do; only I wait thy consent to the employment, of which advise me."

Lloyd accepted the office of deputy governor of the Province; and, some disagreement having arisen between the Province and the territories, Markham was appointed deputy governor of the latter. To appease William Penn, and allay his anxiety, they jointly sent him the following:—

"These few lines, we hope, may much ease thy mind in reference to thy exercises concerning the affairs of thy government here, by informing thee, that, with unanimous record, we rest satisfied with thy two deputations, sent for executive government of the Province and counties annexed; and thy deputies concurring amicably, at this time, to act as one general government in legislation, we have proceeded in the preparing jointly some few bills, that thereby our present united actings may be as well published as the respected services of the government answered."

In 1688 Philadelphia had a great scare, similar to the one which we had during the late war, when the rebels burnt Cham-



bersburg. It was rather from the savages than the whites, and is thus related by Proud:—

“There came a report of an intended insurrection of the Indians, to cut off all the English, on a certain appointed day. This was communicated by two Indian women of West Jersey, to an old Dutch inhabitant near Chester, to be on the next fourth day of the week. Several Friends, or Quakers, upon hearing this report, being conscious of their just conduct towards the Indians, and sensible of nothing that could reasonably disgust them, endeavored to appease the people’s fears. The said fourth day being come, about ten o’clock in the night a messenger arrived at Chester, out of the woods, and told the people that three families, about nine miles distant, which he named, were all cut off by the Indians. This report coming to a Friend then at Chester, about midnight he took with him two young men, on horseback, to the place, in order to examine into the truth of the affair. They found the three houses, but nobody in them, and yet no signs of murder. Their inhabitants, alarmed in a similar manner, had fled to the houses of their parents at Ridley Creek, about a mile from thence. The master of one of these families, being from home, had been informed five hundred Indians were actually collected at Naaman’s Creek, in pursuit of their design, to kill the English; and, as he was hastening to his house, he thought he heard his boy crying out, and saying, ‘What shall I do? my dame is killed!’ Upon which, instead of going home, to know the certainty of the affair, he ran off to acquaint the government at Philadelphia; but being met by a person of more prudence than himself, before he got to the city, he was persuaded by him to return.

“The report, notwithstanding, soon arrived at the city, and was told with such alarming circumstances, that a messenger was immediately despatched to Marcus Hook, near the said Naaman’s Creek, to inquire the truth of it. He quickly returned, and confirmed the report, but with this variation, that it was at Brandywine Creek, at an Indian town, where the five hundred Indians were assembled, and that they, having a lame king, had carried him away, with all their women and children. These circumstances rendered the affair still more alarming, and, with many, amounted to a certainty.

“The Council were, at that time, sitting at Philadelphia on other affairs, when one of them, a Friend, who lived in Chester County, voluntarily offered himself to go to the place, provided they would name five others to accompany him, without weapons; which being soon agreed on, they rode to the place. But, instead of meeting with five hundred warriors, they found the *old king* quietly lying, with his lame foot along on the ground, and his head at ease on a kind of pillow, the women at work in the fields, and the children playing together.

“When they had entered the wigwam, the king presently asked them very mildly, ‘*What they all came for?*’ They told him the report which the Indian women had raised, and asked him whether the Indians had any thing against the English. He appeared much displeased at the report, and said, ‘The women ought to be burnt to death, and that they had nothing against the English;’ adding, ‘’Tis true there are about fifteen pounds yet behind of our pay for the land which William Penn bought; but as you are still on it, and improving it to your own use, we are not in haste for our pay; but, when the English come to settle it, we expect to be paid.’ This, the messengers thinking very reasonable, told him they would undoubtedly be paid for their land.

“One of the company further expressed himself to the Indian king in the following manner, ‘That the great God, who made the world, and all things therein, consequently made all mankind, both Indians and English. And as he made all, so his love was extended to all; which was plainly shown by his causing the rain and dews to fall on the ground of both Indians and English alike, that it might equally produce what the Indians, as well as what the English, sowed or planted in it, for the sustenance of life; and also by his making the sun to shine equally on all, both Indians and English, to nourish them; and that seeing the great Being, which made them all, extended his love thus to all, so they were mutually bound to love one another.’

“The king answered, ‘What they had said was true; and, as God has given you corn, I would advise you to get it in’ (it being then harvest-time) ‘for we intend you no harm.’ They

parted amicably ; and the messengers, returning, put an end to the people's fears." <sup>1</sup>

Lloyd still insisting upon retiring from the public affairs of the government, in the latter part of the year 1688 he was succeeded by Capt. John Blackwell, under the title of lieutenant-governor, in lieu of that of deputy governor, which had been given to Lloyd and Markham ; Penn himself being the real governor.

Blackwell was not a Quaker, and almost a stranger to Penn, although he seems to have known something of his ability, and to have had a high esteem for him. The occasion of his appointment was this : Penn was much exercised as to who should be Lloyd's successor ; and, just at this juncture, the wife of Blackwell called upon Penn upon other business, and he asked her whether she thought her husband would accept of the government of Pennsylvania. She answered, "He would." Of this appointment, Penn himself thus speaks, "Since no Friend would undertake the governor's place, I took one that was not, and a stranger, that he might be impartial, and more revered. I thought I did well : it was for good, the Lord knows it, and no end of my own."

Soon after Blackwell assumed the duties of his office, misunderstandings arose between him and the Council, so that but little was done during his administration ; and at the end of nine months he retired. The government of the Province, according to the charter, again devolved upon the Council, Thomas Lloyd, president.

About this time (1689), general attention seems to have been directed to the education of their children ; and the Friends' public school was organized, the first of its kind in the colony, of which we have any record. This school, although established by the Friends, seems to have been open to all ; and not only were the common branches taught, but it offered facilities for training in many of the higher studies included in a liberal education.

Penn was preparing to return to the colony about this time ; but the persecutions to which he was subjected prevented his

<sup>1</sup> See vol. i. p. 336.

leaving England : indeed, his purpose seems to have been soon to return to the colony with his family, and make his permanent residence there ; but adverse circumstances detained him in the mother-country until fifteen years had elapsed, although the differences among those left in charge of the government continued to increase, and showed how necessary his presence was. That Penn was greatly annoyed by these disagreements appears by a letter which he wrote to a friend in 1692, from which we make the following extract: "I have thine of the 13th instant. Thy love and good intention towards me I receive and accept. But pray consider how little I am in fault, and how ill I am rewarded by some in that Province. I left it quiet, and the government in the Council. *Thomas Lloyd* grew weary of this form ; writ, and got others to write, to change it to a deputyship. I sent to know if he would have it ; in the meanwhile writ to me he would not meddle, and desired a *quietus*; or dismiss. Upon this, Capt. Blackwell's wife coming to me about presenting something of her husband's to the king, and remembering him to be a man of sobriety and parts, asked for him, then in New England, and if he would accept of the government of Pennsylvania, &c. This displeased. I altered and left it to them to choose either the government of the council, or five commissioners, or a deputy. What could be tenderer ? Now I perceive *Thomas Lloyd* is chosen by the three upper, but not the three lower counties, and sits down with this broken choice. This has grieved and wounded me and mine, I fear, to the hazard of all. Whatever the morals of the lower counties are, it was embraced as a mercy that we got and united them to the Province, and a great charter ties them. And this particular ambition has broken it ; for the striving can arise from nothing else. And what is that spirit, that would sooner divide the child than let things run in their own channel, but that which sacrifices all bowels to wilfulness ? Had they learned what this means, '*I will have mercy, and not sacrifice,*' there had been no breaches nor animosities there till I had come, at least. I desire thee to write them, which they will mind more now than upon the spot, and lay their union upon them ; or else the governor of New York is like to have



all, if he has it not already. The Lord forgive them their unspeakable injury to me and mine." Thus it would seem that William Penn found no rest in either hemisphere.

Another difficulty now arose: one George Keith was its author. He was a man of considerable literary attainments, fond of disputation, and confident and overbearing. He had been an acknowledged minister among the Quakers, but now found fault with their discipline, ridiculed their customs and some of their tenets, and created such a schism among the Quakers, that they separated into two branches; those following him being called Christian Quakers, the others, apostates. By this division, new difficulties were added to the Province, or the ones which previously existed greatly augmented. Intelligence of Keith's conduct was no sooner communicated to William Penn than he immediately anticipated great trouble from this division, which speedily followed.

James II. and William Penn had been good friends; but James was now gone; and William III. had ascended the throne. Those who were at the head of affairs in England were well acquainted with the disorders which had taken place in the government of Pennsylvania; and with a view to injure Penn, who had become obnoxious to them, they represented to the king, that the quarrels between the province and the territories showed that Penn was incapable of governing the country which had been granted him. They seized upon the schism among the Quakers created by Keith as confirmation of these arguments. As he (Keith) had been excommunicated by one portion of the Quakers, and also punished by fine, they represented that he had been unjustly treated. By these means, they created a sensation, in both houses of parliament, against Penn. They affirmed that Pennsylvania was in a state of chaos and ruin, and that nothing would save it but taking away the government from him. They also asserted that not a moment should be lost before repealing his charter. Being thus urged, the king and queen, by a Commission granted by William and Mary, appointed Gov. Fletcher of New York to take upon him the government of Pennsylvania and the territories thereunto annexed.<sup>1</sup> By this act, William Penn was

<sup>1</sup> Clarkson's Life of Penn, vol. ii. p. 73.

deprived of all authority over Pennsylvania; and so speedily was this done, that he was unable to make any explanation, or assign any reason why this appointment should not be made. Although King William had often expressed regard for William Penn, yet he was unable to resist the efforts of his ministers, and others who frequented his court, calling so loudly that Penn might be deprived of his governorship.

Fletcher, having received his appointment, wrote immediately to Thomas Lloyd this letter, "Having received their Majesties' commission, under the great seal, for the government of *Pennsylvania*, and being required to make a speedy repair to that Province, I think fit to acquaint you that I propose to begin my journey from home on Monday, the twenty-fourth instant, and desire the Council and principal freeholders may have notice, that their Majesties' commands may be communicated to them so soon as I arrive, which I hope may be the twenty-ninth.

"NEW YORK, April 19, 1693."

Fletcher speedily repaired to Philadelphia with great pomp, and a more splendid retinue than had been usually seen in that Quaker Province; and although they had received no instruction from the king, or from William Penn, they surrendered the government to him without resistance, for which Penn afterwards blamed them. He also wrote to Fletcher, cautioning him to be aware of meddling with the government, and also reminding him of his particular obligation to him personally.

Fletcher immediately called the Assembly together; but a disagreement at once arose between him and the Council, because he had not summoned the Assembly according to the old legal form. After a long discussion and controversy, the Assembly finally yielded, and were duly organized. The first question put by the Assembly was, how far the laws of the Province, and constitution of the government, founded on the powers of the king's letters-patent to the proprietary, William Penn, were in force. For an answer to this question they sent a message to the governor, in which they say, "We humbly conceive that the laws founded upon the late king's letters-patent are yet in force, and therefore we desire that the same

may be confirmed unto us as our rights and liberties." To which Fletcher replied, "Gentlemen, I, with the Council, have considered your address. The least cause mentioned in their Majesties' letters-patent is the absence of the proprietary. There are reasons of greater moment; such as the neglects and miscarriages in the late administration, the want of necessary defence against the enemy, and the danger of being lost from the crown. The constitution of their Majesties' government, and that of Mr. Penn, are in direct opposition one to the other. If you will be tenacious in stickling for this, it is a plain demonstration, use what words you please, that, indeed, you decline the other."

Upon receiving this letter, the Assembly sent a remonstrance to Gov. Fletcher containing the following: "As to the reasons rendered for superseding our proprietary's governancy, we apprehend they are founded on misapprehensions; for the courts of justice were open for all counties in this government, and justice duly executed, from the highest crimes of treason and murder, to the determining the lowest differences about property, before the date or arrival of the governor's commission; neither do we apprehend that the Province was in danger of being lost from the crown . . . nevertheless, we readily own thee for our lawful governor, saving to ourselves and those whom we represent our and their just rights and privileges.

"Signed:

JOSEPH GROWDEN, *Speaker.*"

What reply, if any, the governor made to this address, does not appear; but he soon informed them that he saw nothing would do but an annexation to New York. This was far from meeting the approval of the Assembly; and, after much controversy, the final result was, that Fletcher soon departed for his New York domains, leaving William Markham as acting lieutenant-governor.

In the latter part of 1693, William Penn was permitted to make his defence, from which his innocency was made so apparent, that he was not only acquitted of all charges against him, but also had his government restored. Lords Rochester, Ranelagh, Sidney, and Somers, and the Duke of Buckingham,

and Sir John Trenchard, represented to the king, that "they had long known William Penn, that there was nothing against him, but what impostors, or those that were fled, or that had since their pardon refused to verify what they had alleged against him; that they had never known him do an ill thing." They therefore requested that his government might be restored to him. King William answered, "that William Penn was his old acquaintance, as well as theirs; that he might follow his business as freely as ever; and that he had nothing to say to him."

In 1694 Thomas Lloyd died. He was sick but six days. On his death-bed, in a calm and quiet manner, he said, "I die in unity and love with all faithful Friends. I have fought a good fight. I have kept the faith which stands not in the wisdom of words, but in the power of God. I have sought not for strife and contention, but for the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the simplicity of the gospel. I lay down my head in peace, and desire you may all do so. Farewell."

William Penn, upon his restoration to his Province, appointed William Markham lieutenant-governor; and things appear to have prospered well the next year. Markham issued a proclamation, however, against illegal trade, harboring pirates, and the increase of vice. This was not done because these practices abounded more than formerly, but because it had been reported to their disadvantage in England.

The last day of November, 1699, William Penn returned to Pennsylvania, after a long, tedious voyage of three months. His first business was to call the Assembly together, when he renewed the laws which had been made by Markham in his four-years' reign as deputy. The next two objects which engaged his attention were the instruction and civilization of the Indians, and the condition of the African or negro slaves, who had been introduced soon after the first settlement of the Province, and whose condition hitherto had been very deplorable.

At this time Penn set about improving Philadelphia, by removing all the slaughter-houses to the bank of the river, and also every other obstruction interfering with the health and



cleanliness of the city, or the convenience of the inhabitants.

It having been reported in England that many of the proprietary governors oppressed their people, the House of Commons addressed the king upon the propriety of making all the proprietary governors merely regal ones ; and a bill was actually introduced into the House of Lords for that purpose. The real cause of this movement seemed to be to check the growth and progress of the colonies under the proprietary form of government, lest they should grow too strong for the interests of the crown. The friends of William Penn in England informed him of this measure ; and, fearing that he might lose his government a second time, he embarked Nov. 1, 1706, for England, never again to visit America. His life was one of peculiar trials and severe afflictions. He was, what cannot be said of many men,

“ An honest man, the noblest work of God.”

He founded his colony upon true Christian principles : Christianity shone brightly in all his acts, both towards God and man. For the glory of the former, and the liberty, peace, and happiness of the latter, he spent his life. He well deserved, and will ever receive, the gratitude of the sons and daughters of Pennsylvania.

## CHAPTER IX.

### PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1701 TO 1765.

Penn's Interest in the Colony — Of his Family — Reception of New Charter — Charter to the City — Andrew Hamilton — James Logan — Bill in Parliament — King William's Death — Princess Anne — Dissensions — Gov. Evans — William Penn, jun. — More Dissensions — Evils from Penn's Absence — Mortgages the Province — Attacked by Apoplexy — His Death — His Will — Gov. Gordon — Benjamin Franklin — Thomas and John Penn — Indian Troubles — Gov. Thomas — George Whitefield — The French War — Plain Truth — Gov. Hamilton — Taxation of Proprietors — Public Institutions — Braddock's Defeat — George Washington — Indian Treaties — Re-appointment of James Hamilton — Boundary settled — Indian Massacre — John Penn — Indians sue for Peace — Penn's Character by Gordon.

ALTHOUGH William Penn had now returned to England for the last time, yet the reader must not suppose that he took no further interest in the colony, for he manifested the same concern for it during the remaining twelve years of his active life; and, after his decease, the history of those times shows that the Penn family, in the persons of his widow, sons, and grandson, acted as proprietaries of Pennsylvania.

Before his departure, William Penn had given the Province and territories a new charter, with an enlargement of their privileges. "This charter of privileges being distinctly read in Assembly, and the whole and every part thereof being approved of and agreed to by us, we do thankfully receive the same from our Proprietary and Governor at Philadelphia, this twenty-eighth day of October, one thousand seven hundred and one (1701).

"Signed in behalf, and by order of the Assembly, per

"JOSEPH GROWDEN, *Speaker.*

"EDWARD SHIPPEN,	} <i>Proprietary and Governor's Council."</i>
PHINEAS PEMBERTON,	
SAMUEL CARPENTER,	
GRIFFITH OWEN,	
CALEB PUSEY,	
THOMAS STORY,	

The members of the Assembly, and the inhabitants of Philadelphia present say, "This charter, which we have distinctly heard read, and thankfully received, shall be by us inviolably kept." To this declaration the members of the Provincial Council, the members of the Assembly, and all of the inhabitants of Philadelphia who were then present, signed their names.

William Penn also gave a charter to the city of Philadelphia. Having granted these two charters, he appointed Andrew Hamilton, Esq., who had been governor of both East and West New Jersey, deputy governor of Pennsylvania. He also appointed James Logan secretary of the Province, and clerk of the Council of the same. After these things had all been accomplished, he set sail for England, as we stated in our last chapter.

It has already been said that the immediate cause for which William Penn's friends requested his return to England was the introduction of a bill into parliament to make all the proprietary governments regal ones. At the solicitation of his friends, this bill had been postponed until he should arrive; but, at the next session of parliament, the bill was entirely dropped, and no further action was taken upon the affair.

In 1701 King William died, and the Princess Anne of Denmark succeeded to the throne. The commencement of her reign was characterized by great moderation and clemency. William Penn, being in favor with the queen, spent much time at the court.

Gov. Hamilton's administration in Pennsylvania continued only till the twelfth month of the next year (1702), when he died. He had a stormy and uncomfortable time, on account of the feuds between the Province and the territories. Upon his death, the government devolved upon the council, of which Edward Shippen was president. This constant disagreement between the two sections was sharp and bitter.

John Evans was now appointed deputy governor by the proprietary, with the queen's consent. He arrived in the Province in the twelfth month of the year 1703. "Among the names of the members of Council, in the twelfth month,

1703, about the time, or soon after, Gov. Evans's arrival, appear to be,

" William Penn, junior,	Griffith Owen,
Roger Mompesson,	Caleb Pusey,
Edward Shippen,	William Trent,
John Guest,	Richard Hill,
Samuel Carpenter,	Samuel Finney,
Thomas Story,	James Logan.

" Also for the three lower counties were, —

" William Clark, William Rodney, Jasper Yeats.

" William Penn, junior, appears to have been called to the board, and made a member of Council, in the twelfth month 8th, 1703, and probably came from England with Gov. Evans," &c.

Gov. Evans was a rash young man, had but little knowledge of the people he was called to govern, and was entirely unfit for the office. Considering the Province and the territories still united, he immediately convened the Assembly, consisting of delegates from both, and addressed them in a long speech upon the importance of their union. The members from the territories agreed to follow his advice; but those from the Province refused. Evans then attached himself to the interests of the territories, and induced their Assembly to pass laws very obnoxious to the other portion of the colony.

The queen had ordered him to raise militia in the colony; but, in carrying out this command, he met with very little success. He treated the pacific principles of the Quakers with contempt; but, as he could not induce them to renounce those principles, he resorted to a trick to gain his point. He caused it to be reported that an enemy's fleet was coming up the Delaware. The governor, with his friends, immediately flew to arms, filled the streets with soldiers, and summoned to his assistance all persons capable of bearing arms. The people, in great confusion, instead of preparing for defence, sought safety in flight. The greater part of the Quakers did not forsake their usual composure; and only four of them could be found who would take up arms. The trick was a mere ruse, and recoiled upon



those who invented it, by bringing the governor into great contempt. Even James Logan, though a Quaker, did not wholly escape the odium caused by this false alarm.

Evans resorted to various expedients which greatly annoyed the merchants. He caused a useless fort to be erected at New Castle, requiring great delays, and heavy charges, from vessels passing up the Delaware. During his whole government, feuds were constantly kept up, which greatly imbibittered the life of the proprietary, and caused much evil to the province. The whole of his administration was so unpopular, and the people were so much exasperated by his conduct, that, when the proprietor removed him from office, they voted a formal address of thanks to him for ridding the colony of such a pest.

Charles Gookin was the next governor. He arrived in 1709. He was a native of Ireland, an honest old soldier, and more at home in the army than in the cabinet. He served eight years; and, during the whole of that period, the same want of harmony prevailed between the executive and legislative departments. The only good thing which he appears to have done during his administration was to hold a council with the Indians in Philadelphia, by which certain grievances were peaceably settled, and the chain of friendship between them and the whites brightened.

The great error of William Penn was, that he did not permanently remain in the Province. We find this point well stated by Dr. Du Ponceau in these words: "It will ever be a source of regret that William Penn did not, as he had contemplated, fix his permanent residence in his Province, and that, after the lapse of a short year, he again embarked for England, whence it had been decreed by Providence that he never should return. There is too much reason to believe, that, in this, he yielded to the influence of his wife and of his daughter Letitia, who do not appear to have been pleased with a residence in the country. Yet Hannah Penn was a woman of great merit, and her name will shine conspicuously and with honor in our history. But when we consider her rank, education, and fortune, and the situation of Pennsylvania at that time, we need not wonder that she preferred the society of her friends in her

native land, to a life of hardship and self-denial in a newly settled colony. And it is easy to conceive how William Penn's return may have been postponed, amidst efforts to conquer her reluctance, until other circumstances intervened which prevented it altogether.

"A single trait will be sufficient to show what evils would have been averted from Pennsylvania, if William Penn had remained here to the end of his days. Nine years after his departure, when his country was again rent by intestine divisions, and a factious legislature—taking an unmanly advantage of the misfortunes which had of late fallen heavy upon him—were striving by every means to wrest power from his hands, a letter from him to that Assembly, in which he tenderly expostulated with them for their ungrateful conduct, produced an entire and a sudden change in the minds of the deluded people; and, at the next election, his enemies were hurled from the seats which they had disgraced. 'A truly national answer,' says his biographer Clarkson, and, we may add, the strongest proof that can be given of the powerful ascendancy of this great man over minds of an inferior stamp."

The expense of the Province, and other concerns of a private character, had so far impaired the property of William Penn, that in 1708, "to clear a debt contracted for settling and improving said colonies," he borrowed sixty-six hundred pounds, about thirty thousand dollars. This loan he secured by a mortgage on the Province.

In 1712 William Penn negotiated with Queen Anne to transfer the Province and territories to the crown. For this he was to receive twelve thousand pounds; and a bill was introduced into parliament to this effect, and a part of the money paid; but, being attacked this year by an apoplectic fit, his faculties became so impaired, that he was unable to complete the transfer. In a state amounting almost to imbecility, he continued for six years, when he died at Rushcomb, in Buckinghamshire, England, on the 13th of July, 1718. By his will, his oldest son by his first wife became heir to his estates in Great Britain. His Pennsylvania province and territories were given to the Earls of Oxford, Mortimer, and Powlet, in trust, to be sold to the

queen, or any other person, to the best advantage. He also appointed other trustees in England and America to pay his debts out of the proceeds of his American lands, the surplus to be distributed among his children. He left a wish that his children should settle in Pennsylvania. The oldest son, William, contested the right to the government of Pennsylvania; and the case, being carried to the court of chancery, was, after many years, decided in favor of the widow and her children: accordingly the government was afterwards administered by the children of the younger branch of the family.

Continued disagreements in the Province, dissatisfaction with Gov. Gookin, and a long remonstrance from the Assembly against his course, caused him to resign in 1717. He was immediately succeeded by Sir William Keith, a man of pleasing address, courteous, but crafty,—qualities which were so directly opposed to those of the two preceding governors as to make his administration acceptable to the people; but, whenever the interests of the proprietaries and those of the people clashed, he boldly espoused the popular side against all advice of the Council. A far greater degree of quietness and peace prevailed during his administration than had been experienced in the colony under many of their late governors; but, for taking sides with the people, Hannah Penn had him removed in 1726, having been governor eight years.

Patrick Gordon succeeded Keith in 1726; and, during his administration, there was generally quiet in the Province, and he and the Council worked harmoniously. Great improvements were made in the Province, and its trade largely increased.

Benjamin Franklin, born in Boston, emigrated to Philadelphia in 1723, at the age of seventeen, during Gov. Keith's administration. There were only two printers there at the time, — Andrew Bradford and Mr. Keimer, the latter of whom employed him in his office. Gov. Keith, always more ready to promise than perform, advised Franklin to enter into business for himself, and promised him letters of introduction to his friends in London: under this promise, Franklin prepared to visit London to procure printing-materials. On applying to Keith for the letters promised, the governor informed him he

would send them to him on board the ship, which he never did. The consequence was, that when Franklin arrived in London, finding himself without recommendation and without funds, he hired himself out as a journeyman printer. In 1726 he returned to Philadelphia.

The colonists had been so much engaged in contentions among themselves, and in agriculture, that they had given but little attention to literature; but, in 1731, Franklin showed his public spirit by moving to found a library, and was successful in organizing the company, which was incorporated in 1742, under the name of Library Company of Philadelphia.

Thomas Penn, son of William, arrived in the Province in 1732, and, two years after, was joined by his elder brother John. They were treated with such marks of respect, both by the colonists and the assembly, as were due to the sons of the illustrious founder of Pennsylvania.

They soon began to agitate the question upon the boundary line between Pennsylvania and Delaware; and, as this caused new disputes, John Penn returned to England in 1735, to oppose the claims of Lord Baltimore; but Thomas remained some years in the colony. This question was not finally settled until 1761.

Gov. Gordon's death occurred in 1736; and the government of the colony devolved upon James Logan, president of the Council, who kept his place two years. The Indians, during his administration, became very troublesome on account of what they considered the enroachments of the whites. It was in this year that Benjamin Franklin was first elected clerk of the Assembly.

George Thomas, a West Indian planter, was the next governor, continuing his administration from 1738 to 1747. Like several of the former governors, he at first mistook the character of the people over whom he was called to preside. He offended the Quakers by demanding too much of them for the support of the military, and gave still further offence by compelling indented servants, those who had sold themselves to pay their passage across the ocean, to enter the army.

In 1739 the celebrated George Whitefield arrived in the



Province, and by his eloquence attracted vast assemblies. In 1740 a lazaretto was erected for the accommodation of sick emigrants. In 1741 Thomas Penn returned to England; and although the intercourse between him and the Assembly had not been altogether agreeable, yet they passed respectful resolutions upon his departure. His brother John died in 1746; and, upon his decease, Thomas became the principal proprietor. In 1775 he died.

In 1744 war was openly declared between France and Great Britain. In consequence of this war, the peaceful relations which Pennsylvania had generally maintained towards the Indians for sixty-two years were now at an end, and on the western frontier a savage warfare commenced. The lands purchased by the famous walk, and those taken from the Shawanees against their consent, were now to be paid for by the blood of the whites.

Dr. Franklin now began his career as a public man. He published a work called "Plain Truth," in which he endeavored to promote harmony between the executive and the Assembly, and induce them to prepare for military defence. He was appointed a colonel; but, being more skilled in wielding the pen than the sword, he declined the office.

James Logan, although a Quaker, believed in defensive war, and contributed of his substance to carry it on. Gov. Thomas resigned in 1747; and the administration devolved on Antony Palmer, president of the Council. In 1749 James Hamilton, a son of the former speaker, Andrew Hamilton, arrived with a commission as lieutenant-governor. Affairs between the English and the Indians now became very alarming. The French used all possible means to seduce the Indians from their allegiance to the English. They had already drawn away the Shawanees. The Delawares were glad of an opportunity to avenge their wrongs; and the Onondagas, Cayugas, and Senecas were wavering. Much cunning diplomacy and expensive presents were demanded to keep the Indians in favor with the Province. This drew heavily upon the people; and the Assembly insisted that the proprietary estates should be taxed equally with those of individuals. This the proprietors, through

their deputies, opposed, which caused the opening anew of the old feud, which had vexed the people from the first settlement of the Province. The proprietors maintained that prerogative, charter, and law were on their side; and the Assembly contended that justice, common danger, and benefit required equal taxation. The feud went on: the proprietors offered, as bounties, lands yet to be taken from the Indians, and the privilege of issuing more paper money. (The first issue of this money was had in Gov. Keith's time.) But this did not satisfy the Assembly, which proceeded to pass laws laying taxes, granting supplies, and adding conditions. The governor opposed these measures, and the taxing of the estates of the proprietors, but was willing the people should be taxed.

While they were engaged in these frivolous disputes, the frontiers were still exposed to Indian depredations. This disagreement in the public councils continued through the whole administration of Gov. Hamilton, and those of his two successors, which was finally settled by Benjamin Franklin securing the royal assent to a law taxing the proprietaries.

The present was truly an alarming crisis. Upon the one hand, the Quakers, with other denominations who joined them, as the Dunkards, Mennonists, and the Schwenckfelders, all refused to fight; while, on the other, the Scotch-Irish, always strenuous in maintaining their rights, and tired of waiting for the forms of land-offices, treaties, and surveys, settled upon unpurchased lands, and caused new exasperation among the Indians, in consequence of which massacres ensued, and the whole country was alive with the alarms and excitements of an Indian war, which continued through the administration of James Hamilton (already named), that of Robert Morris (who succeeded Hamilton in 1754), and William Denney (who succeeded Morris in 1756). These three governors whom we have just referred to were all able men, and would have been successful as governors, had they not been shackled by the instructions of the proprietors.

In the midst of this commotion of war and bloodshed, it is gratifying to the historian to be able to record the origin of the following eleemosynary and literary institutions. The

Pennsylvania Hospital was founded in 1751. In the same year James Logan died, and left a bequest to establish the Loganian Library. About this time the University of Pennsylvania originated, first in the form of an academy, then was opened as a Latin school, afterwards endowed and incorporated by the proprietors. In 1755 the additional honor was granted it, of conferring degrees under the title of "The College, Academy, and Charitable School of Philadelphia." Previous to these institutions, the American Philosophical Society had been organized in 1743, of which Benjamin Franklin may be said to have been the first mover. Here commenced his brilliant electrical experiments.

In 1753 the French were engaged in extending their posts of defence, from the Lakes to the Ohio River. It was at this time that George Washington was sent on a mission to Fort Le Bœuf to demand by what authority they made these encroachments. The answer he received was evasive and unsatisfactory; and, on his return, he reported, it was plain that their intention was to connect their possessions on the Lakes with those on the Mississippi, by a line of fortifications on the Ohio. In 1754 the French sent forward a thousand men, and built Fort Duquesne at Pittsburg.

Col. Washington was then, with a small force, at Great Meadows, and was compelled to capitulate. In the unfortunate expedition of Gen. Braddock, Col. Washington was his aide-de-camp. When within ten miles of the fort, they were surprised, and completely routed, by a party of French and Indians lying in ambush. Gen. Braddock was mortally wounded. All historians record that this defeat was in consequence of Braddock's obstinacy in refusing to allow the Provincial soldiers to fight the Indians in Indian fashion, as Col. Washington and the soldiers desired. Braddock's defeat spread terror through the whole Province. The frontier was exposed to the enemy, and the people found their only safety in flight. The Assembly and the governor disagreed; and supplies could be raised only by patriotic subscriptions.

Pennsylvania, which had enjoyed such quiet and peaceful times with the Indians, under the personal government of

William Penn, now became the theatre of Indian massacres. The whole frontier was ablaze with burning cottages. Franklin now consented to lay aside his pen, and take the sword; and with his son William, and a regiment of five hundred men, he proceeded to erect a line of forts at the Lehigh.

The proprietors, too, alarmed at the defeat of Braddock, now offered a donation of five thousand pounds for defence. The excise law upon wine and spirits (which had existed for ten years) expiring about this time, the Assembly renewed the bill, and sent it to the governor for his approval. This he refused to sign, unless so amended as to give the governor, or the president of the Council, joint power with the House. The House declined to receive the amendment, and resolutely held to their bill. Moreover, in this act, the Assembly thought they had discovered the true cause of the governor's constant opposition to their several money bills.

After all this bloodshed, and great expense to the colony, through the influence of Franklin, who had been sent to London to lay their grievances before the king, and a treaty made with certain Indian chiefs at Easton, matters became more quiet, and the prospects of the colonies more auspicious. Another conference was held at Lancaster in 1757, and still another at Easton in 1758, by which all the difficulties with the Indians were amicably adjusted. The French war ended in 1757.

In consequence of Gov. Denney's assent to the bill, taxing the proprietary property, to which Franklin obtained the royal assent in 1759, he was removed from office, and James Hamilton, a former governor, re-appointed.

Pennsylvania was again in the enjoyment of peace, which lasted until 1763, her pioneers engaging in agricultural pursuits, and building churches. Parliament agreed to reimburse the colonies for the expense of the war; and Dr. Franklin invested the first instalment of twenty-six thousand pounds, in London; having done which he returned home to receive the plaudits and thanks of the lately distressed colonists. He resumed his seat in the Assembly; and they presented him with an annuity of five thousand pounds.



The long delays and altercations between the governors and Lord Baltimore, respecting the boundary line, were finally settled according to the agreement made with the proprietaries in 1732. In 1767 Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon were employed to run the line, and erect stone pillars at conspicuous points, showing the boundaries.

This was the famous Mason and Dixon's line, dividing the free and the slave States.

After this short calm, a terrific storm succeeded. The Indians about the Great Lakes and on the Ohio connived at the establishment of the French forts. They saw the English in possession of Canada, and the chain of forts occupied as outposts, from which further encroachments might be made upon their western territory; and although they had willingly assented to the erection of the forts by the French, now, when they saw them in the hands of the English, they considered them an intrusion upon their rights, because the land on which they were erected had never been purchased of them. Other settlements, also, had been made upon the Susquehanna, on lands belonging to the Indians.

The great Indian sachein Pontiac undertook to unite all the north-western tribes in attacks upon the whole frontier. The object was to exterminate all the whites; and the plan was to attack the forts on the same day, to invade the settlements during harvest-time, and destroy all the men, with their cabins, crops, and cattle. The English traders among the Indians became the first victims; and, out of one hundred and twenty, only three escaped. Scalping-parties overran the frontiers, leaving their track marked with blood and fire. Great fear and consternation spread throughout all the settlements on the Rivers Juniata and Susquehanna; and the terrified inhabitants fled with their children and flocks to Shippensburg, Carlisle, Lancaster, and Reading.

The details of savage barbarity at this time were horrible, but they were equalled, if not exceeded, by those of the whites. The Scotch-Irish settled in Paxton and Donnegal, townships in Lancaster County, had suffered exceedingly by marauding parties of Indians; and they imagined that there was a secret

collusion between the hostile tribes of the West, and the Christian Indians in Lancaster County. They therefore determined to exterminate every Indian within their bounds. To carry out this fiendish purpose, they fell upon the Christian Indian settlements among the Moravians, and butchered the women and children and old men, while the other Indians were absent. When they returned, and learned the fate of their relatives, they sought protection in the old jail in Lancaster. Thither they were pursued by their relentless persecutors, who, in defiance of law and of the magistrates, put them all to death. The Moravian Indians escaped to Philadelphia, where they were protected by the citizens, although the Paxton boys, as they were called, threatened to destroy them there. Other equally barbarous murders were committed by the whites on the banks of the Juniata and Susquehanna. The state of feeling at this time was such against the Indians, along the whole frontier, that the perpetrators of these horrid murders were never brought to justice.

On the 30th October, 1763, John Penn, grandson of William Penn, and son of Richard, arrived from England as lieutenant-governor of the Province. Upon the day of his arrival, Philadelphia was visited by an earthquake, which, by many, was taken as an ill omen. The invasion of the Indians was to be repelled by carrying the war into their own country; and Penn was immediately very active in assisting Col. Bouquet, who then had charge of a small army, in proceeding against the Delawares and Shawanees beyond the Ohio, and urged the Assembly for supplies. Bouquet's expedition so over-awed the Indians, that they sued for peace, and gave up many of the prisoners which they had taken in the recent wars.

Upon the application to the Assembly for supplies, the old controversy was revived, for an account of which we cannot do better than to select the following from Day's History of Pennsylvania:—

“Indeed, harmony was scarcely to be expected between one of the proprietary family as governor on one side, and Dr. Franklin, the champion of equal rights and equal burdens, in the Assembly, on the other. That the proprietary estates were

to be taxed, was a question settled; but how, and upon what basis, they were to be assessed, was a subject of controversy; and the proprietaries, as usual, leaned strongly to their own interests. The Assembly were compelled to yield to the necessities of the Province, and the supplies were granted; but the conduct of the governor so incensed the Assembly, that they determined, by a large majority, to petition the king to purchase the jurisdiction of the Province from the proprietors, and vest the government directly in the crown. This petition, drawn up by Franklin, set forth in a strong light the increasing property, and its consequence, the increasing power of the proprietaries, and the danger to be apprehended from the existence of such a third power intervening between the crown and the people, and frustrating the designs of both, by refusing to contribute their just proportion of the public burdens. Here was a most important step towards the Revolution. To break down the feudal power, and bring the people and the crown in direct communication, is, in all countries, the first great step towards popular freedom, and prepares the way for the next step, the direct conflict between the crown and the people. It so happened, however, that in this case the avarice of the British ministry outran the ante-feudal propensities of the people, and brought the colonies at once to the last great struggle between the people and the crown. There was much opposition from leading men in the Province against throwing off the proprietary dominion. Isaac Norris, the venerable speaker, John Dickinson, afterwards distinguished in the Revolution, and Rev. Gilbert Tennant, and Rev. Francis Allison, representing the Presbyterian interest, with William Allen, chief justice, and afterwards father-in-law of Gov. Penn, were strong in opposition to the measure. The Quakers, on the other hand, supported it; and it was sustained by several successive Assemblies. Dr. Franklin was appointed Provincial agent to urge the measure before the ministry in London. He sailed for England Nov. 1, 1764, and found, on his arrival, that he had to contend with a power far stronger and more obstinate than the proprietors themselves, even with the very power whose protection he had come to seek.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 30.

With the close of this chapter terminates the proprietary government of William Penn and his family, of whom we hear but little more. The historian Gordon sums up the character of Penn in the following language:—

“Penn was ambitious, and animated by the love of fame. He sacrificed his time and his fortune in its pursuit: at least so much of them as were unnecessarily employed at the courts of James and Anne. The obscurity of his Province was unattractive; and, in the height of his favor with James, he was, for a moment, unregardful of the free principles on which it was founded. Had he applied himself, unreservedly and exclusively, to cultivate the scion he had planted, its growth would have been more rapid; and under its shade, distant from the vexations and vicissitudes of English politics, he would have enjoyed the reward of his labor,—competence, and the respect of the world. Pecuniary distress, at times, compelled him to give utterance to undignified and unjust complaints. The political benefits he had conferred upon his Province, in his opinion, imposed on its inhabitants an obligation to be requited with money: his proprietary character claimed to be recognized by the establishment of some revenue. His people, on the contrary, felt these pretensions as a double charge, and were unwilling to maintain a resident and non-resident governor, the latter of whom had an estate in the soil of the Province, which increased in a great and indefinable ratio.

“In his demeanor, William Penn was grave, but not austere, affable, but not familiar; and, whilst his intercourse with his friends was marked by the formality and phraseology in use with his sect, his correspondence with men of the world showed him to have been perfectly acquainted with polite manners. As a writer, he was much esteemed by his church; as a minister, he was bold, industrious, and successful. He was beloved by his family and a wide circle of friends.”

The reader has now been made acquainted with the first discoverers of this country, the early settlements upon the Delaware, the advent of William Penn with his great charter, the cause of the name Pennsylvania, the friendly relations between Penn and the Indians, the numerous dissensions which arose



between the proprietors and the people, the old French war, the massacres of the whites by the Indians, and the Indians by the whites. In the next chapter, we will introduce him to events of greater importance than any of the preceding.

## CHAPTER X.

### PENNSYLVANIA FROM 1765 TO 1775.

Great Britain lays a Tax upon the Colonies — Stamp Act — Stamp Officer appointed — Manufacturing prohibited — Repeal of the Stamp Act — Duties on British Goods — Tax on Tea — Colonists oppose all Taxes — Mass Meeting — Provincial Congress — Continental Congress — Petition to King George — Congress adjourns — Re-assembles — George Washington appointed — Washington's Speech.

GREAT BRITAIN was now in debt to the enormous sum of one hundred forty-eight millions sterling, or about six hundred and fifty-seven millions five hundred thousand dollars. Her favor to the colonies extended just so far as she could filch money from them ; or, as Patrick Henry said, "She offered us such protection as vultures give to lambs." Hence, in order to draw money from us, she proceeded to lay a tax. A resolution was introduced in Parliament by George Grenville, prime-minister, "That it was proper to charge certain stamp duties in the colonies and plantations." It passed the House of Commons March 10, 1764; but no further action was taken until the year following, when the subject was resumed, and the obnoxious Stamp Act was passed in the month of March, 1765. It is a singular fact, that two historians <sup>1</sup> of Pennsylvania state that this act was repealed *before* it was passed. Immediately upon the passage of this act, Dr. Franklin wrote thus to Charles Thompson : "The sun of liberty is set : you must light up the candles of industry and economy." This taxing of the colonies involved the great question which led to the American Revolution ; to wit, the right to tax those who had no representation in Parliament, or, in other words, "Taxation without representation." Franklin used his utmost

<sup>1</sup> Day, vol i. p. 31; Gordon, p. 443.

efforts to avert these odious measures for oppressing the colonies, as his far-seeing mind discovered what would be the future consequences: still, with a view to place the execution of the act in proper hands, now that it had passed, he procured the appointment of his friend John Hughes as stamp officer at Philadelphia.

“On the arrival at Philadelphia, in October, 1765, of the stamps from England, the vessels hoisted their colors at half-mast; bells were muffled; and thousands of citizens assembled in a state of great excitement. Mr. Hughes was called on to resign his commission; but he only agreed, for the present, not to perform the duties of the office.”<sup>1</sup>

The people of the colony now determined to manufacture for themselves. This created a storm in Great Britain, and set the manufacturers there in opposition to the oppressive acts of their own government.

The Stamp Act was repealed Feb. 22, 1766, the anniversary of the birth of George Washington. Although Great Britain thus repealed this odious act, Parliament still persisted in, and re-affirmed, their right of taxation by imposing duties on British goods. As the colonies opposed their right to tax them at all, they would submit to no measures which involved that principle. John Dickinson, an eminent lawyer, a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly, published a series of able letters, the pith and marrow of which were, that the people should beware of acquiescing in any measures leading to establish the right of parliamentary taxation.

In consequence of the general opposition in the colonies to the principle of taxation in any form, in 1769 the taxes were greatly reduced, and in 1770 were abolished, except three-pence per pound on tea; but so determined were our fathers in resisting this system altogether, that this small tax of three-pence a pound on tea was as offensive as a larger one would have been; and so spunky and resolute in this resistance were they, that upon a single chest of tea only was the duty paid. The Assembly still urged their agents in London to protest against any and every act that involved the right of Parlia-

<sup>1</sup> Day's History of Pennsylvania, vol. i. p. 31.

ment to tax the colony, and also to oppose any plan for our representation in Parliament, insisting that they would pay no tax that was not imposed in the Province.

In 1773 Parliament made a forced exportation of tea into all the principal ports of the colonies. This measure aroused indignation from one end of the country to another. The Philadelphians passed resolutions, "Denouncing the duty on tea as a tax laid without their consent, — laid for the express purpose of establishing the right to tax, — and asserting that this method of providing a revenue for the support of government, the administration of justice, and defence of the colonies, had a direct tendency to render assemblies useless, and to introduce arbitrary government and slavery; and that steady opposition to this plan was necessary, to preserve even the shadow of liberty." No one being willing to receive the tea in Philadelphia, the captains of the ships returned with it to England. The same was the case with that sent to New York; while in Boston it was thrown into the harbor, and in Charleston rotted in the warehouses.

Special indignation was felt by Great Britain against Boston on account of the destruction of the tea; and that port was closed. The colonies were now all aroused, and made common cause with Boston in denouncing this new act of oppression. The citizens of Philadelphia advised the Bostonians to use all lenient measures for relief, assuring them, at the same time, that Pennsylvania would adhere to the liberty of the colonies. Although the governor, when requested to convene the Assembly, declined, yet a mass-meeting of the people, numbering eight thousand, assembled June 18, 1774, and recommended a Continental Congress, and also appointed a committee to correspond with the other counties of Pennsylvania, for the purpose of appointing deputies to a general Congress, and, furthermore, agreed to raise funds to relieve the suffering citizens of Boston.

The committee immediately wrote to all the counties of Pennsylvania, requesting them to appoint deputies to a general conference, to be held at Philadelphia the 15th of July, and in their circular said, "We will not offer such an affront to



the well-known public spirit of Pennsylvanians as to question your zeal on the present occasion. Our very existence in the rank of freemen, and the security of all that ought to be dear to us, evidently depend on our conducting this great cause to its proper issue, by firmness, wisdom, and magnanimity. It is with pleasure that we assure you that all the colonies, from South Carolina to New Hampshire, are animated with one spirit in the common cause, and consider this as the proper crisis for having our differences with the mother-country brought to some certain issue, and our liberties fixed upon a permanent foundation. This desirable end can only be accomplished by a free communication of sentiments, and a sincere and fervent regard for the interests of our common country.”<sup>1</sup>

This was the second step towards the Revolution; and it was creditable to Pennsylvania, that she was the first to recommend the calling of a congress of all the colonies, to consider how best to oppose the oppressive measures of Great Britain. In accordance with the request of this committee, deputies from the several counties of Pennsylvania met at Philadelphia, at the time appointed, and adopted the following resolutions, Thomas Willing being elected Chairman, and Charles Thompson, Secretary.

“That they owed allegiance to George the Third — that unconstitutional independence on the parent state was abhorrent to their principles — that they ardently desired the restoration of their ancient harmony with the mother-country, on the principles of the constitution, and an interchange of good offices without infraction of their mutual rights — that the inhabitants of the colonies were entitled to the same rights and liberties within the colonies, that subjects born in England were entitled to within that realm — that the power assumed by Parliament, to bind the colonists ‘by statutes in all cases whatever,’ was unconstitutional, and therefore the source of the prevailing unhappy differences — that the late acts of Parliament affecting the Province of Massachusetts were unconstitutional, oppressive, and dangerous — that there was an absolute necessity that a colonial congress should be imme-

<sup>1</sup> Ramsay.

diately assembled, to form a general plan of conduct for the colonies, in procuring relief for their suffering brethren, obtaining redress for their grievances, preventing future dissensions, firmly establishing their rights, and restoring harmony between Great Britain and her colonies on a constitutional foundation — that, although a suspension of the commerce of the Province with Great Britain would greatly distress multitudes of the inhabitants, yet they were ready to make that and a much greater sacrifice for the preservation of their liberties; but in tenderness to the people of Great Britain, as well as of America, and in hopes that their just remonstrances would at length reach the ears of their sovereign, and be no longer treated with contempt by any of their fellow-subjects in England, it was their earnest desire that Congress should first try the gentler mode of stating their grievances, and making a firm and decent claim of redress — that yet, notwithstanding, as unanimity of counsels and measures was indispensably necessary for the common welfare, if Congress should judge agreements of non-importation and non-exportation expedient, the people of Pennsylvania would join with the other principal and neighboring colonies in such an association for that purpose as should be agreed upon by Congress — that if any proceedings of Parliament, of which notice should be received before or at the general Congress, should render it necessary, in the opinion of that Congress, for the colonies to take further steps than are mentioned in the preceding resolution, the people of Pennsylvania would adopt such further steps, and do all in their power to carry them into execution — that the venders of merchandise within the Province ought not to take advantage of the resolution relative to non-importation, but should sell at the rates accustomed for three months then past — that the people of the Province would break off all trade with any colony, town, city, or individual, on the American continent, which should refuse, decline, or neglect to adopt and carry into execution such general plan as should be agreed upon in Congress — and that it was the duty of every member of the committee to promote to the utmost of his power the subscription set on foot in the several counties of the Province for the relief of the distressed inhabitants of Boston.”

These patriotic deputies were men renowned for morals, intelligence, and wealth; and, after adopting the resolutions as quoted above, felt called upon, as the representatives of their constituents, to *instruct* the Assembly (which was soon to meet) upon their duty in this crisis, and adopted the following resolution; viz., —

“That this committee give *instructions* on the present situation of public affairs to their representatives, who are to meet next week in assembly, and request them to appoint a proper number of persons to attend a congress of deputies from the several colonies, at such time and place as may be agreed on, to effect one general plan of conduct for obtaining the great and important ends mentioned in the preceding.”

From the pithy and strong instructions drawn up by Mr. John Dickinson, which contain a full statement of the political relations which ought to exist between the mother-country and the colonies, and the terms on which they were willing to become reconciled, we extract the following: —

“Honor, justice, and humanity call upon us to hold, and to transmit to our posterity, that liberty which we received from our ancestors. It is not our duty to leave wealth to our children; but it is our duty to leave liberty to them. No infamy, iniquity, or cruelty can exceed our own, if we, born and educated in a country of freedom, entitled to its blessings, and knowing their value, pusillanimously deserting the post assigned us by divine Providence, surrender succeeding generations to a condition of wretchedness, from which no human efforts, in all probability, will be sufficient to extricate them; the experience of all states mournfully demonstrating to us, that, when arbitrary power has been established over them, even the wisest and bravest nations that ever flourished have, in a few years, degenerated into abject and wretched vassals.

“To us, therefore, it appears, at this alarming period, our duty to God, to our country, to ourselves, and to our posterity, to exert our utmost ability in promoting and establishing harmony between Great Britain and these colonies, ON A CONSTITUTIONAL FOUNDATION.” They then specify, particularly, what they wish the Assembly to do, in these words, —

“First, That the deputies you may appoint be instructed by you, strenuously to exert themselves at the ensuing congress to obtain a renunciation, on the part of Great Britain, of all powers under the statute of the 35th Henry VIII., c. 2 (statute for transporting persons guilty of certain offences to England for trial); of all powers of internal legislation; of imposing taxes or duties, internal or external, and of regulating trade, except with respect to any new articles of commerce which the colonies may hereafter raise, as silk, wine, &c., reserving a right to carry these from one colony to another; a repeal of all statutes for quartering troops in the colonies, or subjecting them to any expense on account of such troops; of all statutes imposing duties to be paid in the colonies, that were passed at the accession of his present Majesty, or before this time, whichever period may be judged most advisable; of the statutes giving the courts of admiralty in the colonies greater power than the courts of admiralty have in England; of the statutes of the 5th of Geo. II. c. 22, and of the 23d of Geo. II. c. 29; of the statute for shutting up the port of Boston, and of every other statute, particularly affecting the Province of Massachusetts Bay, passed in the last session of Parliament.

“In case of obtaining these terms, it is our opinion that it will be reasonable for the colonies to engage their obedience to the acts of Parliament, commonly called the acts of navigation, and to every other act of Parliament declared to have force at this time in these colonies, other than those above mentioned, and to confirm such statutes by acts of the several Assemblies. It is also our opinion, that, taking example from our mother-country, in abolishing the ‘courts of wards and liveries, tenures in *capite*, and by knight’s service, and purveyance,’ it will be reasonable for the colonies, in case of obtaining the terms before mentioned, to settle a certain annual revenue on his Majesty, his heirs, and successors, subject to the control of Parliament, and to satisfy all damages done to the East India Company.

“Secondly, If all the terms above mentioned cannot be obtained, it is our opinion that the measures adopted by the



Congress for our relief should never be relinquished or intermitted, until those relating to the troops, internal legislation, imposition of taxes or duties hereafter, the 35 Henry VIII. c. 2, the extension of admiralty courts, the port of Boston, and the Province of Massachusetts Bay, are obtained. Every modification or qualification of these points, in our judgment, should be inadmissible. To obtain them, we think it may be prudent to settle some revenue as above mentioned, and to satisfy the East India Company.

“Thirdly, If neither of these plans should be agreed to in Congress, but some others of a similar nature should be framed, though on the terms of a revenue and satisfaction to the East India Company, and though it shall be agreed by the Congress to admit no modification or qualification in the terms they shall insist on, we desire your deputies may be instructed to concur with the other deputies in it; and we will accede to, and carry it into execution, as far as we can.

“Fourthly, As to the regulation of trade, we are of the opinion, that, by making some few amendments, the commerce of the colonies might be settled on a firm establishment, advantageous to Great Britain and them, requiring, and subject to, no future alterations without mutual consent. We desire to have this point considered by the Congress, and such measures taken as they may judge proper.”

The convention appointed Messrs. Dickinson, Reed, and Thompson to communicate these resolutions to the other colonies; and all the members in a body presented the instructions to the Legislature of Pennsylvania. When that body received them, the interesting fact was developed, that they had already received, and were considering, reports from Assemblies of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Virginia, calling for the appointment of delegates to a Provincial Congress. The Assembly immediately and unanimously concurred in the measure recommended, and appointed the following gentlemen as delegates to the contemplated Congress; viz., Joseph Gallo-way, Samuel Rhoades, Thomas Mifflin, Charles Humphries, George Ross, and Edward Biddle; and, at a succeeding meeting, John Dickinson was added to their number. They

instructed the delegates "to meet in Congress the committees of the several British colonies, at such time and place as should be generally agreed upon, to consult together upon the critical and alarming state of the colonies, and with them to exert their utmost endeavors to form and adopt a plan which should afford the best prospect of obtaining redress of American grievances, ascertaining American rights, and establishing that union and harmony which is most essential to the welfare and happiness of both countries."

Delegates from eleven Provinces met Sept. 4, 1774; those from North Carolina not appearing until the 14th. Their Congress held its sessions in Carpenter's Hall (still standing in Philadelphia), and unanimously elected Peyton Randolph of Virginia, President, and Charles Thompson, Secretary. No men were ever more loyal, or more ready to give their assent to all necessary and just laws, and to render prompt obedience to them, than the members of this Colonial Congress, and none were ever more firm and resolute in resisting oppression and tyranny. They were mostly men of liberal education, high moral principle, and unswerving integrity; and, although many of them were satisfied in their own minds that the idea of reconciliation with the mother-country must be abandoned, yet they were willing and anxious to make the attempt. They took sides with Massachusetts, and condemned as unjust and oppressive the acts of the British Parliament, and fully approved the following resolution, which had been adopted in Boston, "That no obedience was due from that province to such acts, but that they should be rejected as the attempts of a wicked administration." They confirmed the resolution of the mass-meeting at Philadelphia, to alleviate the distresses of their friends in Boston, and recommended that it should be continued so long as the occasion required. They requested the merchants of all the colonies to purchase no goods from Great Britain until Congress should have adopted and made public proper regulations for the preservation of liberty in America. Nor did they stop here; for, a little later, they passed resolutions prohibiting the importation, purchase, or use even, of all goods from Great Britain, after the first of December

next; and, furthermore, directed that no exports should be made to Great Britain or the West Indies after the 10th of September, 1775, unless the king should sooner redress their grievances.

Many of the Acts and Resolutions of this first Congress have been omitted here, as not specially relating to Pennsylvania, but to the other colonies as well. Their petition to the King of Great Britain exhibits such reverence for his Majesty, and is filled with such true patriotism towards the mother-country, if their grievances should be redressed, that we give it entire.

WEDNESDAY, OCT. 26. — THE PETITION OF CONGRESS TO THE KING. TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

"MOST GRACIOUS SOVEREIGN, — We your Majesty's most faithful subjects of the Colonies of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, the Counties of New Castle, Kent, and Sussex on Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina, *in behalf of ourselves and the inhabitants* of these Colonies, *who have deputed us to represent them in General Congress*, by this our humble petition, beg leave to lay our grievances before the throne.

"A standing army has been kept in these Colonies, ever since the conclusion of the late war, without the consent of our Assemblies; and this army, with a considerable naval armament, has been employed to enforce the collection of taxes.

"The authority of the commander-in-chief, and, under him, the brigadier-general, has, in time of peace, been rendered supreme in all the civil governments in America.

"The commander-in-chief of all your Majesty's forces in North America has, in time of peace, been appointed Governor of a Colony.

"The charges of usual offices have been greatly increased, and new, expensive, and oppressive offices have been multiplied.

"The judges of Admiralty and Vice-Admiralty Courts are empowered to receive their salaries and fees from the effects condemned by themselves.

“The officers of the customs are empowered to break open and enter houses, without the authority of any civil magistrate, founded on legal information.

“The judges of courts of common law have been made entirely dependent on one part of the legislature for their salaries, as well as for the duration of their commissions.

“Counsellors holding their commissions during pleasure exercise legislative authority.

“Humble and reasonable petitions from the representatives of the people have been fruitless.

“The agents of the people have been discountenanced, and Governors have been instructed to prevent the payment of the salaries.

“Assemblies have been repeatedly and injuriously dissolved.

“Commerce has been burthened with many useless and oppressive restrictions.

“By several Acts of Parliament, made in the fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh, and eighth year of your Majesty's reign, duties are imposed on us, for the purpose of raising a revenue; and the powers of Admiralty and Vice-Admiralty Courts are extended beyond their ancient limits, whereby our property is taken from us without our consent, the trial by jury in many civil cases is abolished, enormous forfeitures are incurred for slight offences, vexatious informers are exempted from paying damages to which they are justly liable, and oppressive security is required from owners before they are allowed to defend their right.

“Both Houses of Parliament have resolved that Colonists may be tried in England for offences alleged to have been committed in America, by virtue of a Statute passed in the thirty-fifth year of Henry the Eighth; and, in consequence thereof, attempts have been made to enforce that Statute.

“A Statute was passed in the twelfth year of your Majesty's reign, directing that persons charged with committing any offence therein described, in any place out of the realm, may be indicted and tried for the same in any shire or county within the realm, whereby inhabitants of these Colonies, in sundry cases, by that Statute made capital, may be deprived of a trial by their peers of the vicinage.



“In the last session of Parliament, an Act was passed for blocking up the harbor of Boston, and empowering the Governor of Massachusetts Bay to send persons indicted for murder in that Province, to another Colony, or even to Great Britain, for trial, whereby such offenders may escape legal punishment; a third, for altering the chartered Constitution of government in that Province; and, fourth, for extending the limits of Quebec, abolishing the English, and restoring the French laws, whereby great numbers of British Frenchmen are subjected to the latter, and establishing an absolute government and the Roman Catholic religion throughout those vast regions that border on the westerly and northerly boundaries of the free, Protestant, English settlements; and a fifth, for the better providing suitable quarters for officers and soldiers in his Majesty's service in North America.

“To a Sovereign who glories in the name of Britain, the bare recital of these Acts must, we presume, justify the loyal subjects who fly to the foot of his throne, and implore his clemency for protection against them.

*“From this destructive system of Colony administration, adopted since the conclusion of the last war, have flowed those distresses, dangers, fears, and jealousies, that overwhelm your Majesty's dutiful Colonists with affliction; and we defy our most subtle and inveterate enemies to trace the unhappy differences between Great Britain and these Colonies, from an earlier period, or from other causes than we have assigned. Had they proceeded, on our part, from a restless levity of temper, unjust impulses of ambition, or artful suggestions of seditious persons, we should merit the opprobrious terms frequently bestowed on us by those we revere. But, so far from prompting innovations, we have only opposed them, and can be charged with no offence, unless it be one to receive injuries, and be sensible of them.*

“Had our Creator been pleased to give us existence in a land of slavery, the sense of our condition might have been mitigated by ignorance and habit. But thanks be to His adorable goodness! we were born the heirs of freedom, and ever enjoyed our right under the auspices of your royal ancestors, whose family was seated on the British throne, to rescue and secure a

pious and gallant nation from the Popery and despotism of a superstitious and inexorable tyrant. Your Majesty, we are confident, justly rejoices that your title to the crown is thus founded on the title of your people to liberty; and, therefore, we doubt not but your royal wisdom must approve the sensibility that teaches your subjects anxiously to guard the blessing they received from Divine Providence, and thereby to prove the performance of that compact which elevated the illustrious House of Brunswick to the imperial dignity it now possesses.

“The apprehension of being degraded into a state of servitude, from the pre-eminent rank of English freemen, while our minds retain the strongest love of liberty, and clearly foresee the miseries preparing for us and our posterity, excites emotions in our breasts, which, though we cannot describe, we should not wish to conceal. Feeling as men, and thinking as subjects, in the manner we do, silence would be disloyalty. By giving this faithful information, we do all in our power to promote the great objects of your royal cares, the tranquillity of your government, and the welfare of your people.

“Duty to your Majesty, and regard for the preservation of ourselves and our posterity, the primary obligations of nature and society, command us to entreat your royal attention; and as your Majesty enjoys the signal distinction of reigning over freemen, we apprehend the language of freemen cannot be displeasing. Your royal indignation, we hope, will rather fall on those designing and dangerous men, who — daringly interposing themselves between your royal person and your faithful subjects, and for several years past incessantly employed to dissolve the bonds of society, by abusing your Majesty’s authority, misrepresenting your American subjects, and prosecuting the most desperate and irritating projects of oppression — have at length compelled us, by the force of accumulated injuries, too much to be any longer tolerable, to disturb your Majesty’s repose by our complaints.

“These sentiments are extorted from hearts that much more willingly would bleed in your Majesty’s service. Yet so greatly have we been misrepresented, that a necessity has been alleged of taking our property from us without our consent, ‘to defray

the charge of the administration of justice, the support of civil government, and the defence, protection, and security of the Colonies.' But we beg leave to assure your Majesty, that such provision has been and will be made for defraying the two first articles, as has been and shall be judged, by the Legislatures of the several Colonies just and equitable to their respective circumstances; and for the defence, protection, and security of their Colonies, their militias, if properly regulated, as they earnestly desire may immediately be done, would be fully sufficient, at least in times of peace; and in case of war, your faithful Colonists will be ready and willing, as they ever have been, when *constitutionally* required, to demonstrate their loyalty to your Majesty by exerting their most strenuous efforts in granting supplies, and raising forces. Yielding to no British subject in affectionate attachment to your Majesty's person, family, and government, we too dearly prize the privilege of expressing that attachment by those proofs that are honorable to the Prince who receives them, and to the people who give them, ever to resign it to any body of men upon earth.

"Had we been permitted to enjoy in quiet the inheritance left us by our forefathers, we should at this time have been peaceably, cheerfully, and usefully employed in recommending ourselves, by every testimony of devotion, to your Majesty, and of veneration to the state from which we derive our origin. But though now exposed to unexpected and unnatural scenes of distress by a contention with that nation, in whose parental guidance on all important affairs we have hitherto with filial reverence constantly trusted, and therefore can derive no instruction in our present unhappy and perplexing circumstances from any former experience; yet we doubt not the purity of our intention, and the integrity of our conduct, will justify us at that great Tribunal, before which all mankind must submit to judgment.

"We ask but for peace, liberty, and safety. *We wish not a diminution of the prerogative, nor do we solicit the grant of any new right in our favor. Your royal authority over us, and our connection with Great Britain, we shall always carefully and zealously endeavor to support and maintain.*

“Filled with sentiments of duty to your Majesty, and of affection to our parent State, deeply impressed by our education, and strongly confirmed by our reason, and anxious to evince the sincerity of these dispositions, we present this petition only to obtain redress of grievances, and relief from fear and jealousies, occasioned by the system of Statutes and regulations adopted since the close of the late war, for raising a revenue in America, extending the powers of Courts of Admiralty and Vice-Admiralty, trying persons in Great Britain for offences alleged to be committed in America, affecting the Province of Massachusetts Bay, and altering the government and extending the limits of Quebec; by the abolition of which system, the harmony between Great Britain and these Colonies, so necessary to the happiness of both, and so ardently desired by the latter, and the usual intercourses, will be immediately restored. In the magnanimity and justice of your Majesty and Parliament, we confide for a redress of our other grievances, trusting, that, when the causes of our apprehensions are removed, our future conduct will prove us not unworthy of the regard we have been accustomed, in our happier days, to enjoy. For, appealing to that Being who searches thoroughly the hearts of his creatures, we solemnly profess that our councils have been influenced by no other motive than a dread of impending destruction.

“Permit us, then, most gracious Sovereign, *in the name of all your faithful people in America*, with the utmost humility, to implore you, for the honor of Almighty God, whose pure religion our enemies are undermining; for your glory, which can be advanced only by rendering your subjects happy, and keeping them united; for the interests of your family, depending on an adherence to the principles that enthroned it; for the safety and welfare of your kingdoms and dominions, threatened with almost unavoidable dangers and distresses,—that your Majesty, as the loving father of your whole people, connected by the same bonds of law, loyalty, faith, and blood, though dwelling in various countries, will not suffer the transcendent relation formed by these ties to be farther violated in uncertain expectation of effects, that, if attained, never can compensate for the calamities through which they must be gained.



“We, therefore, most earnestly beseech your Majesty, that your royal authority and interposition may be used for our relief, and that a gracious answer may be given to this petition.

“That your Majesty may enjoy every felicity through a long and glorious reign over loyal and happy subjects, and that your descendants may inherit your prosperity and dominions till time shall be no more, is, and always will be, our sincere and fervent prayer.”

The Congress directed that this petition be sent to the agents of the several Colonies, to be by them transmitted to the king, and appointed Mr. Lee and Mr. Jay to perform this duty. The Congress adjourned Oct. 26, to meet again on the 10th of May. Congress assembled again May 10, according to adjournment, and continued their sessions regularly, from day to day.

June 15 they appointed George Washington, Esq., General and Commander-in-chief of the American forces. The next day, upon the President informing Col. Washington that Congress had unanimously chosen him, he made the following modest, patriotic, and disinterested reply, worthy of being written in letters of gold, and worn upon the foreheads of every President, General, and Member of Congress from that period to the present.

“MR. PRESIDENT, — Though I am truly sensible of the high honor done me in this appointment, yet I feel great distress, from a consciousness that my abilities and military experience may not be equal to the extensive and important trust. However, as the Congress desire it, I will enter upon the *momentous duty*, and *exert every power I possess* in their service, and for support of the *glorious cause*. I beg they will accept my most cordial thanks for this distinguished testimony of their approbation.

“But lest some unlucky event should happen, unfavorable to my reputation, I beg it may be remembered by every gentleman in the room, that I *this day declare with the utmost sincerity I do not think myself equal to the command I am honored with.*

“As to pay, sir, I beg leave to assure the Congress, that as no pecuniary consideration could have tempted me to accept this arduous employment, at the expense of my domestic ease and happiness, I do not wish to make any profit from it. I will keep an exact account of my expenses. These, I doubt not, they will discharge ; and that is all I desire.”

## CHAPTER XI.

### ACTS OF CONGRESS AND OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Washington commissioned — Bloodshed — The Colonies declared Independent of Great Britain — Incidents in Independence Hall — Doings of the Assembly of Pennsylvania — Gov. Penn's Advice — The Assembly's Reply — Second Provincial Convention — Their Acts — Committee of Public Safety — The Quakers — Pennsylvania raises Troops — Whigs and Tories disagree on changing the Government — The Whigs prevail — They call a Convention — A Constitution formed for Pennsylvania.

PURSUING the Acts of Congress as we left them in the last chapter, they appointed a committee to draught a commission and instructions for Gen. Washington. The day on which the general received his commission was the same on which was fought the famous battle of Bunker Hill. July 6 Congress declared the causes and necessity of their taking up arms; and the document being lengthy, and referring to all the Colonies, we omit it in our "History of Pennsylvania."

The first blood having been shed in Massachusetts, April 19, 1775, and the battle of Bunker Hill having been fought June 17th of the same year, and every thing indicating that the rights of the Colonies would never be granted by Great Britain but by the arbitrament of the sword, Congress framed and passed the immortal DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, July 4, 1776. The incidents accompanying the signing of this declaration in Independence Hall are calculated to inspire an irrepressible spirit in the bosom of every American; and the results have thrilled with intense joy millions of people now inhabiting the vast territory extending from Canada to the Gulf, and from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Of the former, from the many that might be given, our limits will admit of but two. First, the speech of the venerable John Witherspoon,

a lineal descendant of John Knox, and inheriting a double portion of the spirit of the old reformer. Rising slowly, his face pale, hands tremulous, and voice faltering as he commenced, he said, —

“There is a tide in the affairs of men, a nick of time: we perceive it now before us. That noble instrument upon your table, which insures immortality to its author, should be subscribed this very morning by every member in the room. He who will not respond to its call is unworthy the name of freeman. Although these hairs must descend into the tomb, I would rather, infinitely rather, they should descend thither by the hand of the public executioner than desert, at this crisis, the sacred cause of my country.”

This patriotic speech, worthy of a Leonidas or a Cincinnatus, had barely ceased, when John Hancock, President of the Congress, seized his pen, wrote his name in bold character, and, rising from his chair, said, “There! John Bull can read my name without spectacles, and may now double his reward for my head. That is my defiance!”

Having followed the transactions of the Continental Congress down to the DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, it is now proper to show how their doings were received by the people and Assembly of Pennsylvania. Perhaps we cannot do this better than by transcribing, at least in part, what one of her former historians has said.

“The Assembly of Pennsylvania was the first Provincial legislature to which report of the congressional proceedings was made. By this body, composed of a large proportion of Friends, they were unanimously approved, and recommended to the inviolable observance of the people; and Messrs. Biddle, Dickinson, Mifflin, Galloway, Humphries, Morton, and Ross, were appointed delegates to the next Congress, Mr. Rhoades being omitted, his office of mayor of the city engrossing all his attention. Upon the return of Dr. Franklin from London (14th of May, 1775), he was immediately added to the congressional delegation, together with Messrs. James Wilson and Thomas Willing. Mr. Galloway, having repeatedly requested to be excused from serving as a deputy, was then permitted to with-



draw. This gentleman became affrighted at the length to which the opposition to the parent state was carried. He drew the instructions given to the Pennsylvania delegates for the past and next Congress, and refused to serve, unless they were framed to his wishes. He opposed the resolution approving the proceedings of the County of Suffolk, and perplexed the deliberations of Congress on the Declaration of Rights, delaying its adoption for near two weeks; and when Congress refused to him, and Mr. Duane of New York, permission to enter their protest against this measure on their minutes, they gave to each other certificates of their opposition to it, under the conviction that it was pregnant with treason.”<sup>1</sup>

The governor of the Province at this time was John Penn, grandson of William Penn, and son of Richard; and of his course with the Assembly Gordon thus speaks:—

“Hitherto Gov. Penn had looked upon the proceedings of the assembly without attempting to direct or control them. He was supposed to favor the efforts made in support of American principles; but now a semblance of regard to the instructions of the crown induced him to remonstrate in mild terms against the continental system of petition and remonstrance. ‘On the present occasion,’ he said, ‘it is conceived that any grievances which his Majesty’s subjects apprehend they have reason to complain of should be humbly represented to his Majesty by the several Assemblies, as the only proper and constitutional mode of obtaining redress; and I have the best reason to believe that a proper attention will be paid to such representations, and to any propositions that may be made through that channel on the present state of American affairs.’ The Assembly, however, was not disposed to pursue any other course of reconciliation than that adopted by the united colonies. They replied to the governor’s message, ‘that since the year 1763, a system of colonial administration had been pursued, destructive of the rights and liberties of his Majesty’s most faithful subjects in America; and that they had heretofore adopted such measures as they thought most likely to restore affection and harmony between the parent state and the colonies. That a

<sup>1</sup> Gordon’s History of Pennsylvania.

most humble, dutiful, and affecting petition from the delegates of all the colonies, from Nova Scotia to Georgia, was now at the foot of the throne, and they trusted in the paternal affection and justice of their sovereign, that he would interpose for the relief of his greatly distressed and ever faithful subjects in America.’”

When the petition to the King, and the other duties of the Congress, had been transmitted to the Crown and Parliament, and while they were being considered by the latter, Lord North introduced what he considered a reconciling measure, the purport of which was, that so long as any colony should contribute its share to the common defence, and the support of the civil government, they would levy no tax or duty, except those necessary to regulate the commerce. This proposition was declared by his own friends, as admitting the correctness of American views upon the subject of taxation by Parliament, and also as a concession to rebels in arms, when Lord North explained his Jesuitical resolution as follows, that it was designed to retain the essential principle of taxation.

Upon this measure being made known to the Colonies, they unanimously rejected it. Here, again, Gov. Penn took sides with the Crown, and presented it to the House, as a strong wish, on the part of Parliament, to accede to the demands of the colonists, and urged them, as theirs was the first Assembly to which this resolution had been communicated, to comply with it, and assured them that such compliance would tend to produce tranquillity, and posterity would ever hold them in grateful remembrance.

The Assembly, upon receiving Gov. Penn's message, thus immediately replied. “They regretted,” they said, “that they could not think the offered terms afforded just and reasonable grounds for a final accommodation between Great Britain and the colonies. They admitted the justice of contribution in case of the burthens of the mother-country; but they claimed it as their indisputable rights, that all aids from them should be free and voluntary, not taken by force, nor extorted by fear; and they chose rather to leave the character of the proposed plan to be determined by the governor's good sense than to

expose it by reference to notorious facts, or the repetition of obvious reasons. But, if the plan proposed were unexceptionable, they would esteem it dishonorable to adopt it without the advice and consent of their sister colonies, who, united by just motives and mutual faith, were guided by general counsels. They assured him that they could form no projects of permanent advantage for Pennsylvania which were not in common with the other colonies; and, should a prospect of exclusive advantage be opened to them, they had too great regard for their engagements to accept benefits for themselves only, which were due to all, and which, by a generous rejection for the present, might be finally secured to all."

"A second Provincial convention was held at Philadelphia (Joseph Reed was chosen President; Jonathan B. Smith, John Benezet, and Francis Johnston, Secretaries), designed to enforce the measures recommended by Congress, and to devise means for supplying the wants which adherence to those measures left without the ordinary modes of gratification. The convention declared its approbation of the proceedings of Congress, and its resolution to maintain the association recommended by them; and pledged the counties generally, that, should the trade of the city and liberties be suspended in consequence of the present struggle, exertions should be made to relieve its inhabitants. It resolved that the committees of superintendence of the several counties should aid each other in case of resistance to their efforts to enforce the principle of the association; that the convention earnestly desired to see harmony restored between Great Britain and the colonies, and would exert their utmost endeavors to attain this object; that the commercial opposition resolved on by the Continental Congress, if faithfully sustained, would be the means of rescuing the country from the evils meditated against it; but should the humble and loyal petition of Congress to his Majesty be disregarded, and the British ministry, instead of redressing their grievances, determine by force to effect submission to the late arbitrary acts of parliament, they deemed it their indispensable duty to resist such force, and at every hazard to defend the rights and liberties of America.



“To provide against the inconveniences arising from non-importation, the convention recommended that no sheep under four years old should be killed for the shambles; that various branches of manufactures in wool, iron, copper, tin, paper, glass, &c., should be established; that attention should be paid to the growing of dye-stuffs, flax, and hemp, and to the making of salt, saltpetre, and gunpowder, and the latter article especially, in large quantities, *inasmuch as there existed a great necessity for it, particularly in the Indian trade*; that the manufactures of the colonies should be exclusively used, and that associations should be formed for promoting these objects. Public exposure, as an enemy of the country, was denounced, as the penalty on the wretch, who, taking advantage of the times, should be sordid enough to charge an extravagant profit upon his wares. The Committee of Correspondence of the city and county of Philadelphia was empowered by the convention to act as a standing committee of correspondence for the Province, and to convene a Provincial convention when they should deem it expedient.

“This committee assumed to themselves powers widely different from those indicated by their title. The crisis to which the convention looked forward, when framing their late resolves, had arrived. The battle of Lexington was fought; and submission to the arbitrary acts of parliament was attempted to be enforced by the bayonet. An unquenchable blaze of indignation pervaded the continent. At Philadelphia, under the direction of the committee, a meeting of the people, consisting of many thousands, resolved to form a military association for the protection of their property, their liberties, and their lives. The association extended through every county of the Province; its members cheerfully furnishing themselves with the necessary arms, and devoting themselves to acquire skill in their use. At the instance of the Committee of Correspondence, the Assembly approved the association, and engaged to provide for the pay and sustenance of such of the members as should be called into actual service, and appropriated the sum of seven thousand pounds for the defence of the city.



“Congress at their session in May having resolved to raise a continental army, of which the Pennsylvania portion amounted to four thousand three hundred men, the Assembly recommended to the commissioners of the several counties, as they regarded the freedom, welfare, and safety of their county, to provide arms and accoutrements for this force. They also directed the officers of the military association to select a number of minute-men, equal to the number of arms which could be procured, who should hold themselves in readiness to march at the shortest notice to any quarter, in case of emergency. They made further appropriations for the defence of the city against attacks by vessels-of-war, and directed the purchase of all the saltpetre that should be manufactured within the next six months at a premium price. The House adopted, also, a most important and effective measure, in the appointment of a committee of public safety, with power to call the associated troops into service, to pay and support them, and generally to provide for the defence of the Province against invasion and insurrection; issuing for these purposes bills of credit for thirty-five thousand pounds, redeemable by a tax on real and personal estate. Of this sum, and others, afterwards voted by the House, Michael Hillegas was appointed treasurer. The committee at once assumed the chief executive powers in the Province.

“Amid these warlike preparations, the Assembly was not unmindful of those inhabitants who were conscientiously scrupulous of bearing arms. They earnestly recommended to the associators to bear a tender and fraternal regard towards this class of their fellow-subjects; and to the latter, that they should cheerfully, in proportion to their ability, aid such associators who might be able to expend their time and substance in the public service without injury to themselves and families. This latter recommendation was scarce needed; for, if the society of Friends refused to take arms, they bestowed their wealth to relieve the sufferers by the calamities of war. The meeting of sufferings held in Philadelphia on the 6th of July declared that the affections and distresses of the inhabitants of Massachusetts, and other parts of New England, had

often engaged their pity and commiseration, with a desire to be instrumental for their relief; and, by a circular addressed to their members, they recommended to their serious and benevolent consideration the sorrowful calamities prevailing among these people, and a contribution for the relief of the necessities of every religious denomination. To this end, they distributed printed subscription-papers, and requested that suitable active members might be appointed in each monthly and preparatory meeting, to apply for the donations of Friends. The task of applying their gifts was imposed upon a committee of twenty-six persons, appointed by the yearly meeting at Rhode Island, with whom they proposed to correspond.

“Among the first labors of the Committee of Public Safety was that of preparing articles for the government of the military association. These citizen soldiers refused to sign and submit to the proposed regulations, alleging that many persons, rich, and able to perform military duty, claimed exemption under pretence of conscientious scruples; and asserting, that, where the liberty of all was at stake, all should aid in its defence, and that, where the cause was common to all, it was inconsistent with justice and equity that the burden should be partial. Moved by these representations, the Committee of Safety recommended to the Assembly to provide that all persons should be subject to military duty, but that persons conscientiously scrupulous might compound for actual service by a pecuniary equivalent. The House, however, was not prepared for a measure of so strong a character; and they suffered their term of office to expire, without passing upon the proposition.

“But this subject was pressed on the early attention of the succeeding Assembly. Congress, having recommended to the inhabitants of the several Provinces, between the ages of sixteen and fifty, to organize themselves into regular companies of militia, gave new occasion to the associators to urge the Assembly to put all the inhabitants, in this respect, on an equal footing.

“The Quakers, who were the most affected by coercion to military service, addressed the legislature, setting forth their religious faith and practice with respect to bearing arms, the

persecutions sustained by their ancestors for conscience' sake, and the consequent abandonment of their native country, and emigration to the wilderness, in search of civil and religious liberty, and claiming exemption from military service by virtue of the thirty-fifth section of the laws agreed upon in England, and the first clause of the existing charter granted by Penn. By the first, 'no person living peaceably and justly in civil society could be molested or prejudiced by his religious persuasion or practice in matters of faith or worship.' 'Nor,' by the second, 'be compelled to do or suffer any thing contrary to his religious persuasion.' They contended, therefore, that they could not legally be required to do aught which their consciences forbade, and that the sincerity of their scruples should be judged by the Lord of their consciences only. They asserted that they entertained a just sense of the value of their religious and civil liberties, and had ever been desirous of preserving them by all measures not inconsistent with their Christian profession and principles; and though they believed it to be their duty to submit to the powers, which, in the course of Divine Providence, were set over them, yet where there was oppression, or cause of suffering, it became them with Christian meekness and firmness to petition and remonstrate against it, and to endeavor, by just reasoning and arguments, to assert their rights and principles in order to obtain relief.

"The Mennonists and German Baptists also addressed the Assembly with prayers for exemption from military service. But their views differed essentially from those of the Quakers. The latter not only refused personal military service, but they denied the lawfulness of commuting it for pecuniary consideration; whilst the former declared, that, though not at liberty in conscience to bear arms, it was a principle with them to feed the hungry, and give the thirsty drink; and that they were always ready, pursuant to Christ's command to Peter, to pay tribute, that they might offend no man; and that they were ready to pay taxes, and to render unto Cæsar the things which were Cæsar's.

"The right of exemption from military service and contribution, claimed by the Quakers, was earnestly contested by the



Committee of Correspondence of the city and county of Philadelphia, and by committees from the officers and privates of the military association, from whom addresses were severally presented to the Assembly. The first denounced the principles of non-resistance professed by Friends, 'as unfriendly to the liberties of America, destructive of all society and government, and highly reflecting on the glorious revolutions which placed the present royal family on the throne.' 'Though firmly persuaded,' they said, 'that a majority of that society have too much good sense, sincerity, and wisdom to be influenced by such principles, yet duty to ourselves, to our country, and our posterity, at this alarming crisis, constrains us to use our utmost endeavors to prevent the fatal consequences that might attend your compliance with the application of the people called Quakers. These gentlemen would withdraw their persons and fortunes from the service of their country at a time when most needed; and, if the patrons and friends of liberty succeed in the present glorious struggle, *they* and their posterity will enjoy all the advantages, without jeopardizing person or property. Should the friends of liberty fail, *they* will risk no forfeitures, but, having merited the protection and favor of the British ministry, will probably be rewarded by promotion to office. This they seem to desire and expect. Though such conduct manifestly tends to defeat the virtuous and wise measures planned by the Congress, and is obviously selfish, ungenerous, and unjust, yet we would animadvert upon the arguments they have used to induce the House to favor and support it.'

"The committee denied that the Old and New Testament furnished a single argument in support of this plea of conscience; that it was sustainable by a proper construction of the charter by Penn, or a just consideration of his principles. 'He had,' they said, 'accepted the title of captain-general, with power by himself, his captains, and other officers, to levy, muster, and train all sorts of men, of what *condition* soever, and to make war out of the Province. If none but Quakers came at first to the Province with the proprietor, and the colony was intended exclusively for them, as the addressers seemed to intimate, the petitioners could not conceive that any other than Quakers could be made captains and officers.'



“ ‘Be this as it may, self-preservation,’ they continued, ‘is the first duty of nature, which every man indispensably owes not only to himself, but to the Supreme Director and Governor of the universe, who gave him being. In political society, all men, by the original compact, are required to unite in defence of the community against such as would unlawfully deprive them of their rights; and those who withdraw themselves from this compact are not entitled to the protection of the society. The safety of the people is the supreme law. He who receives an equal benefit should bear an equal burden. The doctrine of passive obedience and non-resistance is incompatible with freedom and happiness; and the petitioners were of opinion that even the addressers, who, distant from danger, and seduced by casuistical reasoning, might affect to exclude all resistance, would listen to the voice of nature, when evident ruin to themselves and the public must follow a strict adherence to such principles, if there were no other persons in the community to defend them.’ They therefore prayed that the Assembly would not, at a time when the aid of every individual was required to preserve their common rights, exempt many of the wealthiest citizens from co-operating with their countrymen in some way or other for their common safety.

“ Thus urged, the Assembly resolved, that ‘all persons between the ages of sixteen and fifty capable of bearing arms, who did not associate for the defence of the Province, ought to contribute an equivalent for the time spent by the associators in acquiring military discipline, ministers of the gospel, of all denominations, and servants purchased *bona fide* for valuable consideration, only excepted.’ By this resolution, the principle which still regulates for neglect or refusal of military service was established.

“ The military association, originally a mere voluntary engagement, became, by the resolutions of the Assembly, now having the effect of laws, a compulsory militia. Returns were required from the assessors of the several townships and wards, of all persons within military age capable of bearing arms; and the captains of the companies of associators were directed to furnish to their colonels, and the colonels to the county

commissioners, lists of such persons as had joined the association; and the commissioners were empowered to assess on those not associated the sum of two pounds ten shillings annually, in addition to the ordinary tax. The Assembly, also, adopted rules and regulations for the better government of the military association, the thirty-fifth article of which provided, 'that, if any associator called into actual service should leave a family not of ability to maintain themselves in his absence, the justices of the peace of the proper city or county, with the overseers of the poor, should make provision for their maintenance.'

"Pursuant to the recommendation of Congress, the Assembly of Pennsylvania authorized the enlistment of a battalion of eight companies for the continental service, and nominated John Bull, colonel; James Irwin, lieutenant-colonel; and Anthony J. Morris, major. The House also resolved, by the casting-vote of the speaker, to levy fifteen hundred men for the defence of the Province, to be engaged until the first of January, 1778, subject, however, to be discharged at any time, on the advance of a month's pay. These troops were divided into three battalions, — two of riflemen, and one of infantry. The riflemen were formed into a regiment, and placed under the command of Mr. Samuel Miles, a distinguished member of the Assembly, with the rank of first Provincial colonel. James Piper was appointed lieutenant-colonel, and Ennion Williams major, of the first battalion; and Daniel Brodhead lieutenant-colonel, and John Patton major, of the second battalion. Mr. John Cadwallader was nominated colonel, and Mr. James Potts major, of the infantry battalion. But Mr. Cadwallader, having applied for the command of the first battalion, refused to accept the commission tendered to him, and it was subsequently given to Mr. Samuel Atlee.

"Among other acts of Congress, already related, at their meeting in May they passed the following resolution: 'That it be recommended to the respective Assemblies and conventions of the United Colonies, where no government sufficient to the exigencies of their affairs has been hitherto established, to adopt such government as shall, in the opinions of the

representatives of the people, best conduce to the safety and happiness of their constituents in particular, and America in general.'

"This resolution contained the essence of the DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, insomuch as it renounced allegiance to the British Crown, and recommended governments to be established by the authority of the people. This bold step raised the question in Pennsylvania, and in her Assembly, whether Congress intended that a change should be made in her government, and, if so, whether the Assembly, or some other body, should make it.

"Hitherto, in seeking redress from the British Parliament, the inhabitants had all acted with great unanimity. Even the old proprietary and popular parties had laid aside their animosities, and joined in opposing the common oppression; but when this resolution had passed, authorizing the establishment of other governments, divisions soon manifested themselves among the inhabitants.

"First, the Quakers, being opposed to all war, and strongly attached to their church, and to the mother-country, were filled with horror at the idea of a permanent separation from Great Britain, and setting up independent governments; and, secondly, the proprietors and proprietary officers, with their connections, including the large proportion of wealthy and eminent men in the Province, foresaw in a change of government, the loss of their official pay and influence. The mass of the people, however, were in favor of the resolution. These were called *Whigs*; while those who opposed it were denominated *Tories*.

"Soon after Congress had recommended the organization of new governments, the *Whigs*, assembled in town-meeting at Philadelphia, resolved, 'That the present Assembly, not having been elected for the purpose of forming a new government, could not proceed therein without assuming arbitrary power; that a protest be immediately entered by the people of the city and county of Philadelphia against the power of the House to carry into execution the resolve of Congress; that a Provincial Assembly, elected by the people, be chosen for that



purpose; that the present government of the Province was not competent to the exigencies of its affairs; and that the meeting would abide by these resolutions, be the consequences what they might.'

"In the protest adopted by the meeting, and presented to the Assembly, the qualification of the latter to form a new constitution was denied, inasmuch as its chartered power was derived from their mortal enemy, the king, and its members elected by persons in the real or supposed allegiance of the crown, to the exclusion of many whom the late resolve of Congress had rendered electors; and the assembly was in the immediate intercourse with a governor bearing the king's commission, his sworn representative, holding, and by oath obliged to hold, official correspondence with his ministers, from which oath the people could not absolve him. 'As we mean not,' continued the protesters, 'to enter into any altercation with the House, we shall forbear enumerating the particular inconsistencies of its former conduct, and content ourselves with declaring, that as a body of men, bound by oaths of allegiance to our enemy, and influenced, as many of its members are, by connection with a pecuniary employment under the proprietary, we have very alarming apprehensions that a government modelled by them would be the means of subjecting us and our posterity to greater grievances than any we have hitherto experienced.'

"The protesters did not protest against the House exercising its accustomed powers for the safety and convenience of the Province, until a constitution founded on the authority of the people should be finally settled by a convention elected for that purpose, and until the proper officers and representatives should be chosen. For this purpose, they declared their intention to apply to the committee of inspection and observation of the city and liberties, whose services, they said on all occasions, had been applied to the support of the rights of the people, to call a conference of committees of the several counties, that they might direct the election of a Provincial convention, consisting at least of a hundred members. 'We are fully convinced,' they concluded, 'that our safety and happiness, next to the



immediate providence of God, depends on our compliance with, and firmly supporting, the resolve of Congress, that thereby the union of the colonies may be preserved inviolate.'

"On the other hand, the *Tories* chose a committee of inspection and observation for the county of Philadelphia, many of them being prominent citizens, who presented an address to the Assembly, 'declaring their satisfaction in expressing their sentiments to the constitutional representatives of the Province, their concern that the ground of opposition to ministerial measures was totally changed; that instead of forwarding a reconciliation with the parent state, on constitutional principles, a system had been adopted by some persons in the city and liberties, tending to a subversion of the constitution; and advising that the assembly should religiously adhere to the instructions given to their delegates in Congress. And they earnestly entreated that the Assembly would, to the uttermost of their power, oppose the changing, or altering in the least, their invaluable constitution, under which they had experienced every happiness, and in support of which there was nothing just or reasonable they would not undertake.'

"Many of the inhabitants of the city and county of Philadelphia, and other counties of the Province, remonstrated against the protest, because the resolution of Congress, on which it was based, applied to such colonial governments only as were insufficient to the exigencies of their affairs; and, by that resolution, Congress, who had never interfered with the domestic policy of the colonies, had left the representatives of the people sole judges of the efficiency of their governments; because the protest proposed a measure tending to disunion, and to damp the zeal of multitudes, who, having a high veneration for their civil and religious rights, as secured by charter, never conceived, when they engaged, among other things, for the support of the charter-rights of another colony, that they would be required to sacrifice their own; and because whatever temporary alteration in forms circumstances might render expedient could be effected by authority of the Assembly, six parts in seven of that body having power to change the constitution. In conclusion, the remonstrators recommended to

the Assembly the example of South Carolina, which, when impelled by necessity, had adopted temporary regulations, to endure until 'an accommodation of the unhappy differences between Great Britain and America could be obtained,' — an event, though traduced and treated as rebels, they still professed earnestly to desire.

"The spirit of patriotism was so aroused, that no efforts of this kind could stay it. The committee of the Whigs, already referred to, 'communicated to the committees of the several counties the proceedings of that meeting, and invited them to meet in a Provincial convention; and, the more speedily to break every tie between them and the king, they endeavored to prevent the administration of justice in his Majesty's name, by requesting the judges of the several county courts to suspend business until a new government should be formed.'

"Consequently a Provincial Congress, consisting of one hundred and eight members, met at Philadelphia on the 18th of June, 1776, and resolved unanimously, 'that they fully approved of the resolution of Congress, recommending a modification of the colonial governments; that the present government of the Province was incompetent to the exigencies of its affairs; and that a Provincial convention should be called for the express purpose of forming a new one; . . . that every elector, if required, should take an oath or affirmation, that he did not hold himself in allegiance to George the Third, and would not by any means oppose the establishment of a free government within the Province, by the convention about to be chosen, nor the measures adopted by Congress against the tyranny of Great Britain.'

"The electors having taken the preceding oath, the deputies elected were required to take the following: 'I do declare that I do not hold myself bound to bear allegiance to George the Third, King of Great Britain, &c., and that I will steadily and firmly, at all times, promote the most effectual means, according to the best of my skill and knowledge, to oppose the tyrannical proceedings of the king and parliament of Great Britain against the American colonies, and to establish and support a government in this Province on the authority of the people only,' " &c.

Thus Pennsylvania was one of the earliest Provinces to throw her weight, influence, and fortune in favor of a government free and independent of Great Britain, and to sustain the preceding Acts of Congress.

The next thing to be done was to form a constitution for Pennsylvania, which had now become a State. For this purpose, a convention assembled at Philadelphia on Monday, 15th of July, 1776, and chose Dr. Benjamin Franklin, President, Col. George Ross, Vice-President, John Morris, Secretary, and Jacob Garrigues, Assistant Secretary. They first passed a resolution, directing that divine service should be performed in the Convention, by Rev. William White, afterwards Episcopal bishop of Pennsylvania, and offered praise and thanksgiving to God for special interposition of Providence in behalf of the oppressed United States.

As soon as this Convention was organized, it assumed the whole political power of the State. One of their first acts was to appoint delegates to Congress, and instruct them to strengthen the union of the States, to use their influence and power for the establishment of a navy, and to be constant and punctual in attending to their duties in Congress. They prohibited them from entering into any treaty with Great Britain, or any other power, except upon the condition of being acknowledged as free and independent States. The Constitution was completed on Saturday the twenty-eighth day of September, when it was read in Convention, and signed by the President, and every member.

## CHAPTER XII.

### RECAPITULATION OF EVENTS IN PENNSYLVANIA DOWN TO THE CLOSE OF THE PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT.

The Government modelled after England — The People Democratic — Exportation prohibited — Of the Courts — Sale of Lands — Division of Classes among the People — William Penn — Provincial Laws repealed — Early Churches — Free Toleration to All — Influx of Sects — Contrast of Public Expenditures — Literature — Printing-Press — Newspapers — Magazines — Benjamin Franklin — His Printing-Press.

HAVING brought down the history of Pennsylvania to her enactment of a Constitution as a free State, it seems proper now to treat of her government, laws, religion, finance, and literature at this time. It was natural that the Colonies should at first look for a model of government in the Constitution of England; but, in all their transactions, they regarded the democratic portion with great favor. The consequence was, that the powers of their governors were somewhat curtailed; and the king's lieutenants, in many instances, succumbed to this popular feeling.

Pennsylvania, by the royal charter given to William Penn, was, in some respects, more particularly under the royal government than some of the other colonies. The charter required the laws to be presented within five years for the royal assent; but this requirement was conveniently neglected. An instance of this was seen in the laws forbidding the exportation of goods to foreign countries; and they were not enforced in the Province for more than fifty years. The proprietors claimed the right to restrain their deputies by general instructions; but this claim was often opposed by the popular voice, and finally resulted in an earnest effort to abolish the proprietary government.



“It was in the power of the Assembly at all times to establish the judicature by law; and many contentions arose from their attempts at this object. The great law created the first courts of the Province, which were remodelled, after the adoption of the charter of 1701, by an act prepared by David Lloyd. This act was repealed by the king in council, probably at the instance of William Penn, on the suggestion of Secretary Logan, that he might erect courts by his proprietary power, or obtain the passage of a law more consonant with his wishes and interests. And, the governor and Assembly differing widely in their opinions on this subject, the courts were opened under an ordinance of the former, by which they were continued until the year 1710, when they were established by a law sanctioned by Gov. Gookin.”

It is to be regretted that some general and accurate system for the location of lands had not been adopted at the settlement of the Province, and undeviatingly continued, thereby avoiding that intricacy in Pennsylvania titles, which has been detrimental to the increase of her population. Unfortunately, no system whatever can be traced in the records of the land office.

“By force of the royal charter, William Penn and his successors became undoubted lords of the soil, subject to the duty of extinguishing the Indian title, which justice, humanity, and their contract with the vendees, imposed upon them. They had the right to dispose of lands in such manner, and at such price, as they deemed proper; and the officers of the land office were their agents, controllable by their will. The contract with the first purchasers in some degree qualified this power. Wherever they desired to ‘*sit* together,’ and their quantity of land amounted to five thousand acres, they might cast their lot or *township* together; and the appropriation of lands by William Penn, for his proper use, was confined to the reservation, by lot, of ten thousand acres in every hundred thousand, the residue being open to the choice of purchasers. But these qualifications were in favor of the first purchasers only. Subsequently the proprietary might withdraw from the general mass any lands not previously appropriated to individuals; and his sur-

veyors were instructed to locate for him five hundred acres in every township of five thousand, in addition to the proprietary tenth of all lands laid out.”<sup>1</sup>

William Penn appointed commissioners, who were authorized at various times to purchase lands of the Indians; but there is no regular account of lands granted prior to 1700. During the next sixty-seven years, the number of lands granted amounted to seven thousand. This is the statement of John Penn, as recorded in the Minutes of Council. All lands were usually granted subject to quit-rents; which rents were to compensate the proprietor for the administration of the government, or for his maintenance, if he failed to receive public support. Lands were sold very cheap in those days, the purchasers paying one shilling sterling for a hundred acres. Sometimes a bushel of wheat was paid for a hundred acres. The price of lands varied at different times.

The people were divided into natural or artificial bodies. Natural persons became subjects by solemnly promising, in a court of record, faith and allegiance to the king, and full obedience to the proprietor. Foreigners or aliens might be admitted as subjects, upon making request of the proprietor and governor, for such freedom, making the above promises, and paying twenty shillings sterling. Parliament introduced a uniform rule of naturalization in 1740, declaring all persons born out of the legiance of the king, who had resided seven years in a colony, who had taken the oath of fidelity and abjuration, and who had made a profession of Christian faith before a judge of the colony, should be considered as natural born subjects. This act provided for the scruples of the Quakers, and they were allowed to affirm.

Another division of natural persons was made between free-men and slaves. The German Quakers protested against the slave-trade; and a similar protest was made early by the society of Friends. The Assembly imposed a duty on the importation of slaves in 1705; but it was not so much to prohibit the slave-trade as to increase the revenue. In 1712 another act was passed, declaring, in the preamble, the danger of insurrection

<sup>1</sup> Gordon's Hist. of Penn., p. 546.

and murder from a negro population. This act also declared the "umbrage and dissatisfaction" given to the neighboring Indians, because some Indian slaves had been imported from North Carolina. It imposed a duty of twenty pounds on every negro slave imported. This humane act was repealed by the king and council as soon as it reached England. None of the Indians of Pennsylvania were ever enslaved; and though the Assembly always took a stand against slavery, and passed many acts to prohibit and to remove this curse from the Province, yet the avarice which presided over the English councils caused them to be rejected and repealed. Still some mitigation of the evil was accomplished from the fact that they were enforced until repealed; and they were renewed, in every instance, as soon as they had been repealed.

There were always some in the colony who opposed these humane and benevolent acts, though the mass of the people was averse to slavery; and though the Legislature constantly passed these acts against it, yet slavery was not abolished in the Province until after the close of the Revolution. None of the acts of the Assembly gave slaves any political rights, yet they secured them from cruel and brutal treatment.

There was another class of people, who could scarcely be called slaves, and yet they were not freemen. Many persons were imported into the Province as servants, who agreed to pay their passage by serving for a definite period. This class was also favored by law. Even in England, provision was made, by ordering that the names, times, and wages of servants, should be recorded. Their masters, also, were permitted to take up lands for them, and, when the time of their service had expired, they were allowed to become land-holders; and, when they entered upon the cultivation of these lands, their masters were required to provide for them sufficient clothing, and implements for farming. This class of servants could not be sold out of the Province without their consent; and, in case of marriage, husband and wife could not be separated. The rights of the master were also provided for by law. Many of this class of servants, especially of the German and Irish population, afterwards became honorable and wealthy citizens.

“The acquisition of Pennsylvania gave to the Quakers the means of religious liberty, which they hastened to use. By the ‘laws agreed on in England,’ it was provided that witnesses should testify ‘by solemnly promising to speak the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth;’ and persons convicted of falsehood were liable to ‘suffer such damage or penalty as the person against whom they bore false witness did or should undergo, and to make satisfaction to the party wronged, and be publicly exposed as a false witness, never to be credited in any court, or before any magistrate, in the Province.’ Oaths were thus abolished in all cases. This law was re-enacted in 1693, but was modified by an act passed in 1712, allowing an affirmation to the scrupulous, and permitting others to make oath. This and other acts of like tenor were repealed by the privy council; but at length, by the 1 Geo. I., upon the model adopted in Pennsylvania, the Provincial act of 1718 enacted ‘That all manner of crimes and offences, matters and causes, may be inquired of, heard, tried, and determined by judges, justices, inquests, and witnesses, qualifying themselves according to their conscientious persuasions respectively, either by taking a corporal oath, or by the solemn affirmation allowed by act of parliament;’ thus extending that act to criminal cases, which were expressly excluded from its scope. This subject was wholly and finally settled in 1772 by an act of Assembly, legalizing the oath with uplifted hands, after the ritual of the covenanters. These laws have extended to all, without distinction of religious sects, the right to substitute an affirmation for an oath, where scruples of conscience prevail. The temporal punishment for falsehood uttered under either sanction is the same; and it is not to be presumed that there will be a difference in the future.”<sup>1</sup>

As the feudal system prohibited the alienation of lands, it was a long time before common justice could subject lands for the payment of debts. By the “laws agreed upon in England,” “all lands and goods were liable to pay debts, except where there was legal issue, and then all the goods and one-third of the lands only.”

<sup>1</sup> See Gordon, p. 563.



William Penn, for his justice, profound thought, and political knowledge, deserves to be ranked with the greatest philosophers, and public benefactors. The political changes which he introduced into the Province, with his alterations in the operation of criminal law, merit the praise and admiration of posterity. The government had always been administered, from the first settlement of the Province, under the solemnity of an affirmation, instead of an oath, although the English Parliament was constantly repealing the laws of the Province relating to this act. Through the Quaker influence, the Province persisted in opposing the Acts of Parliament upon this point.

The toleration of religious denominations allowed in the Province of Pennsylvania, not only brought many Quakers hither, but also a great number of various creeds. As the day of persecution for religious opinions had not then passed away in Europe, many of those sects whose worship was restrained in their native country found an asylum in this Province, among which were Episcopalians, Lutherans, Roman Catholics, Independents, Schwenkfelders, and Jews.

It has already been stated, that, at the time William Penn received his great Charter, several churches were established in the Province and territories. The Dutch had one at New Castle, and the Swedish Lutherans had three, — one at Christina, one at Timciene, and one at Wicocoa, and, still later, they added one at Kingsessing, and another at Merion. The emigration from Germany was soon so numerous, that they had two churches at Philadelphia, and others at Burks, Lancaster, and Northampton Counties.

In the year 1770 the Quakers had between sixty and seventy houses for religious worship. The Episcopalians early became numerous; and, under Keith, many of the Quakers seceded, and joined them. Christ Church, where Bishop White preached, and in which Washington's pew is shown at the present day, was built in 1710, enlarged in 1727, and finished by the erection of a steeple in 1753.

The Protestants, of all denominations, held the Roman Catholic communion in abhorrence. At that time the laws of England forbade the observance of that religion; and even

William Penn, notwithstanding all the persecutions he had received in England, and the liberal spirit which he cherished, was very unwilling to receive Papists into his Province. "Minutes of the Provincial Council show that so much danger was apprehended from their missionaries, that their imprisonment was deemed necessary to the public safety. Previously to the year 1733, few Catholics resided in Philadelphia and these held their meetings for religious worship in a private dwelling, and were occasionally visited by missionaries from Maryland. At that time a small chapel was erected in the city, and dedicated to St. Joseph; and a pastor was duly appointed to officiate therein. The public celebration of mass caused much agitation in the Provincial Council; and Gov. Gordon proposed to suppress it as contrary to Stat. 11 and 12, William III. The Catholics claimed protection under the Provincial charter; and, the Council referring the subject to their superiors at home, the governors wisely resolved to suffer them to worship in peace."

At the Revolution, the Quakers were in a minority. The Presbyterians, with the Dutch and German Calvinists, were the most numerous sect. Large numbers emigrated from the north of Ireland, where they had been trained to fight for their religion. They were zealous and active, and maintained their religious creed with much courage and perseverance. They were always ready to fight the Indians.

The Baptists, in 1695, commenced worship at the corner of Chestnut and Second Streets. John Watts, an Independent minister, preached for them for some time. In 1698 they called Rev. Jedediah Andrews, a Baptist minister from New England. In 1704 they erected a house for public worship on Market Street, and in 1729 they adopted the Presbyterian form of government. In 1742 this church was divided; a part of them following the Rev. George Whitefield. In 1750 they founded the Second Presbyterian Church, which exists until the present time (1875), and over which the Rev. Elias R. Beadle, D.D., LL.D., is the pastor.

In 1684 a Baptist church was gathered at Cold Spring, near Bristol, in Bucks County, by Mr. Dongan, who came from Rhode

Island. In 1686 some more Baptists came from Radnorshire in Wales, and Killarney in Ireland, and established a church at Pennypack Creek, ten miles north-east of Philadelphia; and Mr. Dongan baptized and ordained Elias Keach, a very young man from England, whom they chose for their pastor.

Of the numerous religious denominations that early settled in Pennsylvania, the creed of the Episcopalians, consisting of the Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England, is too well known to need further notice. So, also, of the Presbyterians; they being Calvinists, their system of doctrine is well understood. The Lutherans, the first denomination of Protestants that separated from the Church of Rome, take their name from Martin Luther. At their separation, they retained some things in their creed and practice, which later Protestants rejected; and the Lutherans themselves (at least a portion of them) have introduced some changes in these particulars. Luther and his early followers believed in consubstantiation; that is, that, in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, the bread and wine became, in some incomprehensible manner, the body and blood of Christ.

As in a former chapter we allowed the Quakers to speak for themselves, and to state their own creed, so the Lutherans should have the same privilege. The chief articles of belief which Luther maintained are as follows:—

“1. That the Holy Scriptures are the only source whence we are to draw our religious sentiments, whether they relate to faith or practice.

“2. That justification is the effect of faith, exclusive of good works, and that faith ought to produce good works, purely in obedience to God, and not in order to our justification.

“3. That no man is able to make satisfaction for his sins.”

In consequence of these leading articles, Luther rejected tradition, purgatory, penance, auricular confession, masses, invocation of saints, monastic vows, and other doctrines of the Church of Rome.

The external affairs of the Lutheran Church are directed by three judicatories; viz., a vestry of the congregation, a district or special conference, and a general synod. The synod is

composed of ministers and an equal number of laymen, chosen as deputies by the vestries of their respective congregations. From this synod there is no appeal.

The ministerium is composed of ministers only, and regulates the internal or spiritual concerns of the church, such as examining, licensing, and ordaining ministers, judging in controversies about doctrine, &c. The synod and ministerium meet annually.

The Lutherans claim to be the largest Protestant denomination in the world. Their churches are numerous in Pennsylvania, their ministers well educated; and they are a pious and orderly people.

The Dunkards, Tunkers or Dumplers, were another sect that early settled in Pennsylvania. Gordon, in his History, gives the following curious sketch of this sect, as respects their early settlement in the Province:—

“Their religion was more mystical, and their practice more ascetic and fanatic, than of any other sect in the Province. The word ‘tunker,’ from which their other names are derived, means a baptizer by immersion. With the Quakers and Menonists, they refuse to swear or bear arms. They trace their origin to the baptism of John, and admit no other confession of faith than the New Testament. They adopt the eucharist, which they administer at night, in imitation of our Saviour, washing, at the same time, one another’s feet, agreeably to his example and command. They convene on the first day of the week for public worship; but those at Ephratah kept the Jewish sabbath. They wore their beards long, and dressed in plain and coarse garments of an ancient fashion.

“This sect commenced in Germany in 1705, and consisted principally of German Calvinists, whose aberrations obtained for them the name of ‘Pietists,’ and a considerable share of persecution. They collected at Swarzenan, in the county of Witgenstein, where they were allowed, for a season, to meet without interruption. Here, under the guidance of Alexander Mack, a miller of Schriesheim, a society, originally of eight persons, was formed, who adopted the rite of baptism by immersion. Their number increasing, and their enthusiasm meeting



with reproof, they removed to Creyfield, in the Duchy of Cleves, whence a company of eight or ten, still under the direction of Mack, who devoted his property to the common use of the society, proceeded to Pennsylvania in 1719, and seated themselves at Germantown. Their church grew rapidly, receiving members from the inhabitants along the Wissahickon, and from Lancaster County. In 1723 the members in Germantown and its vicinity formed themselves into a community, under Peter Beeker, who was chosen official baptizer; and who also, in the succeeding year, collected the scattered brethren in Lancaster County into a distinct society, near Pequa Creek. At the head of this last association, one Conrad Beissel, who assumed the name of Friedsham Gottrecht, *anglice* Peaceable Godright, had sufficient art to place himself. The property of the society consisted of about two hundred and fifty acres of land. Its labors and profits were in common. Marriage and sexual intercourse were forbidden to the members of the community; but such as were disposed to enter into matrimony were permitted to withdraw, taking with them their proportion of the common stock. The sexes dwelt apart. They lived on vegetables solely, and slept on wooden benches, with blocks of wood for pillows, and attended worship four times in the twenty-four hours. This life macerated their bodies, and rendered their complexions pale and bloodless. Their dress consisted of a shirt, trowsers, and waistcoat, with a long white gown, and cowl of wool in winter, and linen in summer. The dress of the women differed from that of the men in petticoats only: with the cowls of their gowns they covered their faces, when going into public. When walking, they all used a solemn, steady pace, keeping straight forward, with their eyes fixed to the ground, not turning to give an answer when asked a question. On their occasional visits to their friends at Germantown, forty or fifty, thus strangely accoutred, with sandals on their feet, were seen following each other in Indian file. On the death of Beissel, his authority devolved on one Millar, who, wanting the vigorous mind and influence of his predecessor, was unable to preserve the society from rapid decay."

The Mennonites, or Mennonists, or the *Harmless* Christians,

took their name from Menno Simon, a native of the Netherlands, who lived in the sixteenth century. They professed to trace their faith back to the Christian Church in Thessalonica, in the time of the apostles. They were German Baptists. As they were bitterly persecuted in Germany, and as they had, from the writings and discourses of William Penn, obtained a knowledge of Pennsylvania, and that all sects were tolerated in his Province, some of them removed thither as early as 1698; others came in 1706; others still, in 1709 and 1711. Their good report of the country, and its free toleration, induced many to follow them in 1717. They first settled at Germantown, where, in 1708, they built a meeting and school house. In 1770, their number in the Province was 4,050 persons. They were said to be a sober, moral, and industrious people. Van Beuning, the Dutch ambassador, speaking of these *Harmless* Christians, as they chose to call themselves, says, —

“The Mennonites are good people, and the most commodious to a state of any in the world; partly because they do not aspire to places of dignity; partly because they edify the community by the simplicity of their manners, and application to arts and industry; and partly because we fear no rebellion from a sect who make it an article of their faith never to bear arms.”

Another sect which early came into the Province was the Schwenkfelders. They took their name from Caspar Schwenkfeld, a distinguished teacher of the sixteenth century. They were tolerated by the German emperors at a very early date, especially in Silesia. In 1590, 1650, and 1725, they were subjected to great persecution; and, after having been driven from place to place, they determined to establish themselves in Pennsylvania. Many of them came into the Province in the years 1733 and 1734. They refused to take oaths, and reprobated war. Their chief settlement was in Berks County. They were an industrious, frugal, and moral people.

In 1694 forty-two Germans emigrated to Pennsylvania, and called themselves “THE SOCIETY OF THE WOMAN IN THE WILDERNESS.” They settled at a place called the Ridge, near Germantown, now included in the city of Philadelphia.

They were driven from the universities of Germany, and were mostly educated men. They came into the Province for liberty of conscience, and believed the Millennium was near at hand, and that the Church of Christ, prefigured in Revelation, was soon to come up from the wilderness, leaning on her Beloved. Like the Millerites of our time, they laid aside all business, became hermits, and waited for the *Harbinger*. They were led by John Kelpius, John Seelig, and Conrad Matthias. The latter was a Swiss, and joined them in 1704. Kelpius belonged to a noble family in Germany, was an eminent scholar, and could read the Hebrew, Greek, Latin, German, and English languages with great fluency. He died in 1708. After his death, Seelig became their leader; and he very firmly resisted the temptations of the world, wore coarse raiment, and became a hermit. He was succeeded by Matthias, who died in 1745. He was the last of the hermits.

They were all astrologers and magicians, and were feared as conjurers. Dr. Christopher Witt belonged to this society, and was a distinguished physician. He was a magus, a diviner, or conjurer. He frequently lifted the veil from the future, pointed out the place where stolen goods could be found, and the thieves who stole them. Such were the ignorance and superstition of the people, that his practice became very lucrative. By the aid of necromancy, he relieved the disorders and spells produced by witchcraft. He died in Germantown in 1765, at the age of one hundred years. (Gordon gives his age at the time of his death at ninety years, while Watson has it as in our text.) His doctor's cloak and magician's wand descended to his apprentice Frailey; but he never equalled his master in reputation.

The sect of the Moravians, or United Brethren as they called themselves, was formed by Count Zinzendorf in 1721. He was soon joined by some Moravian families, who had left their homes with a design of coming to Pennsylvania, but stopping at Bartholdorf on Zinzendorf's estate, and learning that they could enjoy religious freedom, had remained there. As a large proportion of the brethren were from Moravia, the count claimed that his society was of Moravian parentage, and

that they descended from the Bohemians and Moravians, who opposed Roman Catholicism long before Luther was born, and that they were connected with the Waldenses. This society, by its early efforts to Christianize the Indians, have brought themselves into intimate relation with the history of Pennsylvania.

“ The Moravians avoid discussions respecting the speculative truths of religion, and insist upon individual experience of the practical efficiency of the gospel in producing a real change of sentiment and conduct as the only essentials in religion. They consider the manifestation of God in Christ as intended to be the most beneficial revelation of the Deity to the human race ; and, in consequence, they make the life, merits, acts, words, sufferings, and death of the Saviour the principal theme of their doctrine, while they carefully avoid entering into any theoretical disquisitions on the mysterious essence of the Godhead, simply adhering to the words of Scripture. Admitting the Sacred Scriptures as the only source of divine revelation, they, nevertheless, believe that the Spirit of God continues to lead those who believe in Christ, into all further truth ; not by revealing new doctrines, but by teaching those who sincerely desire to learn, daily better to understand and apply the truths which the Scriptures contain. They believe, that, to live agreeably to the gospel, it is essential to aim in all things to fulfil the will of God. Even in their temporal concerns, they endeavor to ascertain the will of God. They do not, indeed, expect some miraculous manifestation of his will, but only endeavor to test the purity of their purposes by the light of the divine word. Nothing of consequence is done by them as a society, until such an examination has taken place ; and, in cases of difficulty, the question is decided by lot, to avoid the undue preponderance of influential men, and in the humble hope that God will guide them right by its decision, where their limited understanding fails them. In former times, the marriages of the members of the society were, in some respects, regarded as a concern of the society, as it was part of their social agreement that none should take place without the approval of the elders ; and the elders’ consent or refusal was usually determined by lot. But this custom was at length



abandoned ; and nothing is now requisite to obtain the consent of the elders, but propriety of conduct in the parties. They consider none of their peculiar regulations essential, but all liable to be altered or abandoned whenever it is found necessary in order better to attain their great object, — the promotion of piety.

“ What characterizes the Moravians most, and holds them up to the attention of others, is their missionary zeal. In this they are superior to any other body of people in the world. ‘ Their missionaries,’ as one observes, ‘ are all of them volunteers ; for it is an inviolable maxim with them to *persuade* no man to engage in missions. They are all of one mind as to the doctrines they teach, and seldom make an attempt where there are not half a dozen of them in the mission. Their zeal is calm, steady, persevering. They would reform the world, but are careful how they quarrel with it. They carry their point by address, and the insinuations of modesty and mildness, which commend them to all men, and give offence to none. The habits of silence, quietness, and decent reserve, mark their character.”

The first of these people who came to Pennsylvania, by invitation of Rev. George Whitefield, settled on a tract of land which he had purchased for the establishment of a negro school, and to which he gave the name of Nazareth. In 1740 they were compelled to leave Nazareth, on account of the Indians. March 9, 1741, they founded the present town of Bethlehem. In 1743 they purchased of Whitefield the tract of land at Nazareth ; and some of them removed thither. In December, 1741, Count Zinzendorf visited Pennsylvania in person, and commenced missionary labors at Germantown.

The financial system of Pennsylvania was simple in its construction, and small in its amount. The population in 1776, at the close of the Provincial government, was about 300,000 : the annual expense of the government was £3,290 currency, amounting to \$8,774.66, which, for all ordinary charges, was less than thirty cents on each inhabitant.

For the benefit of Pennsylvania, the expense of which is now so enormous for supporting government, and the admoni-

tion of politicians, we give the following statement of the Provincial charges, made by Gov. John Penn in 1767, as found in the Minutes of Council.

Ordinary charges :—

Lieutenant-governor's salary . . . . .	£1,000
Chief justice do . . . . .	200
Puisne judges of the supreme court . . . . .	100
Attorney-general . . . . .	75
Clerk of council . . . . .	15
	— £1,390
Assembly . . . . .	£800
Do. for extra services to sundry members, principally for preparing bills . . . . .	150
Provincial agent . . . . .	350
Clerk of assembly . . . . .	200
Printing . . . . .	100
Postage . . . . .	70
Keeper of great seal for affixing seal to laws	15
Clerk of governor's council on account of warrants . . . . .	15
Master of rolls for recording laws . . . . .	30
Barrack master at Philadelphia . . . . .	50
Do. at Lancaster . . . . .	40
Clock-maker, for care of clock . . . . .	50
Doorkeeper to council . . . . .	5
Do. to assembly . . . . .	25
	— 1,900
	£3,290

We find, by the Second Annual Report of the Bureau of Statistics for 1873-74 (first report not being at hand), that the population of the State in 1870 was 3,521,951, and the expenditure for 1873, \$6,734,027.57, which amounts to \$1.91 for each person, or over three times as much as in the days of Gov. Penn. Query: Whether it is not advisable to return to a proprietary government?

In speaking of the literature of a people whose whole time

was almost indispensable for obtaining the first necessities and comforts of life, it might be sufficient praise to say that the love of letters was never extinguished. But much and early attention was given to this important subject; and, if education was not as general among the inhabitants of Pennsylvania as among those of New England, it should be ascribed rather to the heterogeneous character of her population, which even yet is not perfectly amalgamated, than to a want of due consideration of its value. In 1683, before our ancestors had covered themselves from the weather, a school was opened in the city of Philadelphia.<sup>1</sup>

“Within four years from the time our ancestors landed in the wilderness, a printing-press was at work in Philadelphia, sowing broadcast the seed of knowledge and morality.”<sup>2</sup> This press was owned by William Bradford; and in 1687 he printed an almanac. Previous to the year 1697, a paper-mill was erected in the Province, near Germantown, by a Mr. Rittenhouse.

The first newspaper was published in 1719 by Andrew Bradford, and called “The American Weekly Mercury.” In 1728 Keimer published a second newspaper, called “The Universal Instructor in all Arts and Sciences, and Pennsylvania Gazette.” This paper, though feeble under Keimer, became a strong and vigorous journal when owned and directed (as it afterwards was) by Benjamin Franklin. The Germans published a paper in their language, in 1739, at Germantown; and, the next year, a German paper was published in Philadelphia, edited by Dr. William Smith. In 1760 there were five weekly newspapers published in the Province, — three of them in Philadelphia, one at Germantown, and one at Lancaster. Several magazines were started between the years 1741 and 1776, all of which died within one year, except “The Pennsylvania Magazine,” which lived eighteen months.

Many of the institutions, arts, and improvements in Pennsylvania, while it remained a Province, were indebted for their existence and progress to the enterprise and energy of Benjamin Franklin; and, although Franklin was a native of Massa-

<sup>1</sup> Journals of Council.

<sup>2</sup> Notes on the Literature of Penn., by T. I. Wharton.

chusetts, there need be no strife about him between the two States, for there was enough of him to achieve literary honors for both these old commonwealths.

When Franklin was about to establish his printing-press in Philadelphia, he gives the following account of a visit he received from one of her croakers. "He first inquired if I was the young man who was about establishing a printing-press in Philadelphia; and, upon my answering in the affirmative, he said he was sorry for me, as it was an expensive undertaking, and I should undoubtedly be a great loser by it. In short, he gave me such a gloomy account of the failures which had already, or were about to take place, that he almost threw me into the hysterics; but I soon learned that our new printing-press was the subject of discussion at a debating-club, and that Dr. Bond predicted very differently from the croaker. He said, 'I tell you that press will succeed, and that young Franklin will prosper. He is the most industrious man I ever knew. I see him at work at night, when I return home from my visits; and he is at it again in the morning before his neighbors are out of bed.'"

This original Benjamin Franklin printing-press, which has been for many years at the patent-office at Washington, has recently been decided to be the property of John B. Murray of New York, and will undoubtedly be presented by him at the approaching Centennial.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE STATE CONSTITUTION OF 1776.

What Government should be — Declaration of Rights — Right of Worship — Internal Government — Benefit to All — Free Elections — Of Prosecutions — Of Warrants — Freedom of Speech — Plan of Government — Electors — House of Representatives — Form of Oath or Affirmation — Delegates to Congress — Title of the Laws — County Districts — Of Commissions — Of Judges — Supreme Court — Of Debtors — Justices of the Peace — Sheriffs and Coroners — Of Fees — Register's Office — Printing-Presses — Of Professions — Penal Laws — Taxes — Of Schools — Council of Censors.

THE following is the Constitution formed by the convention chosen for the purpose, as referred to at the close of the last chapter :—

“Whereas all government ought to be instituted and supported for the security and protection of the community as such, and to enable the individuals who compose it to enjoy their natural rights, and the other blessings which the Author of existence has bestowed upon man; and whenever these great ends of government are obtained, the people have a right by common consent to change it, and take such measures as to them may appear necessary to promote their safety and happiness; and whereas the inhabitants of this commonwealth have, in consideration of protection only, heretofore acknowledged allegiance to the King of Great Britain, and the said King has not only withdrawn that protection, but commenced, and still continues to carry on, with unabated vengeance, a most cruel and unjust war against them, employing therein, not only the troops of Great Britain, but foreign mercenaries, savages, and slaves, for the avowed purpose of reducing them to a total and abject submission to the despotic domination of the British parliament, with many other acts of tyranny (more fully set

forth in the declaration of Congress), whereby all allegiance and fealty to the said King and his successors are dissolved and at an end, and all power and authority derived from him ceased in these colonies; and whereas it is absolutely necessary, for the welfare and safety of the inhabitants of said colonies, that they be henceforth free and independent States, and that just, permanent, and proper forms of government exist in every part of them, derived from and founded on the authority of the people only, agreeable to the directions of the honorable American Congress: we, the representatives of the freemen of Pennsylvania, in general convention met for the express purpose of framing such a government, confessing the goodness of the great Governor of the universe (who alone knows to what degree of earthly happiness mankind may attain by perfecting the arts of government) in permitting the people of this State, by common consent, and without violence, deliberately to form for themselves such just rules as they shall think best, for governing their future society, and being fully convinced that it is our indispensable duty to establish such original principles of government as will best promote the general happiness of the people of this State and their posterity, and provide for future improvements, without partiality for, or prejudice against, any particular class, sect, or denomination of men whatever, do, by virtue of the authority vested in us by our constituents, ordain, declare, and establish the following *Declaration of Rights and Frame of Government* to be the CONSTITUTION of this commonwealth, and to remain in force therein forever, unaltered, except in such articles as shall hereafter, on experience, be found to require improvement, and which shall, by the same authority of the people, fairly delegated as this frame of government directs, be amended or improved for the more effectual obtaining and securing the great end and design of all government, hereinbefore mentioned.

## CHAPTER I.

*A Declaration of the Rights of the Inhabitants of the State of Pennsylvania.*

“1. That all men are born equally free and independent, and have certain natural, inherent, and unalienable rights, amongst which are the enjoying and defending life and liberty, acquiring, possessing, and protecting property, and pursuing and obtaining happiness and safety.

“2. That all men have a natural and unalienable right to worship Almighty God according to the dictates of their own consciences and understanding; and that no man ought to, or of right can be compelled to attend any religious worship, or erect any place of worship, or maintain any minister, contrary to or against his own free will and consent. Nor can any man who acknowledges the being of God be justly deprived or abridged of any civil right as a citizen, on account of his religious sentiments. And that no authority can or ought to be invested in or assumed by any power whatever, that shall in any case interfere with, or in any manner control, the right of conscience in the free exercise of religious worship.

“3. The people of this State have the sole, exclusive, and inherent right of governing and regulating the internal police of the same.

“4. That all power being originally inherent in, and consequently derived from, the people, therefore all officers of government, whether legislative or executive, are their trustees and servants, and at all times accountable to them.

“5. That government is, or ought to be, instituted for the common benefit, protection, and security of the people, nation, or community, and not for the advantage of any single man, family, or set of men, who form a part only of that community: And that the community have an indubitable, unalienable, and indefeasible right to reform, alter, or abolish government in such manner as shall be by the community judged most conducive to the public weal.

“6. That those who are employed in the legislative and

executive business of the State may be restrained from oppression, the people have a right, at such periods as they may think proper, to reduce their public officers to a private station, and supply the vacancies by certain and regular elections.

“7. That all elections ought to be free; and that all freemen, having a sufficient common interest with, and attachment to, the community, have a right to elect officers, or be elected into office.

“8. That every member of society has a right to be protected in the enjoyment of life, liberty, and property, and therefore is bound to contribute his proportion towards the expense of that protection, and yield his personal service, or an equivalent thereto; but no part of a man's property can be justly taken from him, or applied to public uses, without his own consent, or that of his legal representatives: Nor can any man who is conscientiously scrupulous of bearing arms be justly compelled thereto, if he will pay such equivalent: Nor are the people bound by any laws but such as they have in like manner assented to for their common good.

“9. That, in all prosecutions for criminal offences, a man hath a right to be heard by himself and his council, to demand the cause and nature of his accusation, to be confronted with the witnesses, to call for evidence in his favor, and a speedy public trial by an impartial jury of the country, without the unanimous consent of which jury he cannot be found guilty: Nor can he be compelled to give evidence against himself: Nor can any man be justly deprived of his liberty, except by the laws of the land, or the judgment of his peers.

“10. That the people have a right to hold themselves, their houses, papers, and possessions, free from search or seizure; and therefore, warrants, without oaths or affirmations first made affording a sufficient foundation for them, and whereby any officer or messenger may be commanded or required to search suspected places, or to seize any person or persons, his or their property, not particularly granted, are contrary to that right, and ought not be granted.

“11. That in controversies respecting property, and in suits between man and man, the parties have a right to trial by jury, which ought to be held sacred.



“12. That the people have a right to freedom of speech, and of writing and publishing their sentiments: therefore the freedom of the press ought not to be restrained.

“13. That the people have a right to bear arms for the defence of themselves and the State; and, as standing armies in the time of peace are dangerous to liberty, they ought not to be kept up: And that the military should be kept under strict subordination to, and governed by, the civil power.

“14. That a frequent recurrence to fundamental principles, and a firm adherence to justice, moderation, temperance, industry, and frugality, are absolutely necessary to preserve the blessings of liberty, and keep a government free: The people ought, therefore, to pay particular attention to these points in the choice of officers and representatives, and have a right to exact a due and constant regard to them from their legislators and magistrates, in making and executing such laws as are necessary for the good government of the state.

“15. That all men have a natural inherent right to emigrate from one state to another that will receive them, or to form a new state in vacant countries, or in such countries as they can purchase, whenever they think that thereby they may promote their own happiness.

“16. That the people have a right to assemble together to consult for their common good, to instruct their representatives, and to apply to the legislature for redress of grievances by address, petition, or remonstrance.

## CHAPTER II.

### *Plan or Frame of Government.*

“SECTION 1. The Commonwealth or State of Pennsylvania shall be governed hereafter by an assembly, the representatives of the freemen of the same, and a president and council, in manner and form following, —

“SECT. 2. The supreme legislative power shall be vested in a house of representatives of the freemen of the Commonwealth or State of Pennsylvania.

“SECT. 3. The supreme executive power shall be vested in a president and council.

“SECT. 4. Courts of justice shall be established in the city of Philadelphia, and in every county of this State.

“SECT. 5. The freemen of this Commonwealth, and their sons, shall be trained and armed for its defence, under such regulations, restrictions, and exceptions as the General Assembly shall by law direct, preserving always to the people the right of choosing their colonel, and all commissioned officers under that rank, in such manner, and as often, as by the said laws shall be directed.

“SECT. 6. Every freeman of the full age of twenty-one years, having resided in this State for the space of one whole year next before the day of election for representatives, and paid public taxes during that time, shall enjoy the right of an elector: Provided, always, that sons of freeholders of the age of twenty-one years shall be entitled to vote, although they have not paid taxes.

“SECT. 7. The House of Representatives of the freemen of this Commonwealth shall consist of persons most noted for wisdom and virtue, to be chosen by the freemen of every city and county of this Commonwealth respectively. And no person shall be elected, unless he has resided in the city or county for which he shall be chosen two years immediately before the said election; nor shall any member, while he continues such, hold any other office, except in the militia.

“SECT. 8. No person shall be capable of being elected a member to serve in the House of Representatives of the freemen of this Commonwealth more than four years in seven.

“SECT. 9. The members of the House of Representatives shall be chosen annually by ballot, by the freemen of the Commonwealth, on the second Tuesday in October, forever (except this present year); and shall meet on the fourth Monday of the same month, and shall be styled *The General Assembly of Representatives of the Freemen of Pennsylvania*; and shall have power to choose their speaker, the treasurer of the State, and their other officers; sit on their adjournments; prepare bills, and enact them into laws; judge of the elections and qualifications

of their own members ; they may expel a member, but not a second time for the same cause ; they may administer oaths or affirmations on examination of witnesses, redress grievances, impeach state criminals, grant charters of incorporation, constitute towns, boroughs, cities, and counties : And shall have all other powers necessary for the legislature of a free state or commonwealth : But they shall have no power to add to, abolish, or infringe any part of this constitution.

“SECT. 10. A quorum of the House of Representatives shall consist of two-thirds of the whole number of members elected ; and, having met and chosen their speaker, shall each of them, before they proceed to business, take and subscribe, as well the oath or affirmation of fidelity and allegiance hereinafter directed, as the following oath or affirmation ; viz., —

“‘I —— do swear (or affirm) that, as a member of this Assembly, I will not propose or assent to any bill, vote, or resolution, which shall appear to me injurious to the people ; nor do or consent to any act or thing whatever that shall have a tendency to lessen or abridge their rights and privileges, as declared in the constitution of this State ; but will in all things conduct myself as a faithful, honest representative and guardian of the people, according to the best of my judgment and abilities.’

“And each member, before he takes his seat, shall make and subscribe the following declaration ; viz., —

“‘I do believe in one God, the Creator and Governor of the universe, the Rewarder of the good, and the Punisher of the wicked. And I do acknowledge the scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be given by divine inspiration.’

“And no further or other religious test shall ever hereafter be required of any civil officer or magistrate in this state.

“SECT. 11. Delegates to represent this State in Congress shall be chosen by ballot, by the future General Assembly, at their first meeting, and annually forever afterwards, as long as such representation shall be necessary. Any delegate may be superseded at any time by the General Assembly appointing another in his stead. No man shall sit in Congress longer than two years successively, nor be capable of re-election for three

years afterwards: And no person who holds any office in the gift of Congress shall hereafter be elected to represent this commonwealth in Congress.

“SECT. 12. If any city or cities, county or counties, shall neglect or refuse to elect and send representatives to the General Assembly, two-thirds of the members from the cities or counties that do elect and send representatives, provided they may be a majority of the cities and counties of the whole State, when met shall have all the powers of the General Assembly as fully and amply as if the whole were present.

“SECT. 13. The doors of the house in which the representatives of the freemen of this State shall sit in general assembly shall be and remain open for the admission of all persons who behave decently, except only when the welfare of this State may require the doors to be shut.

“SECT. 14. The votes and proceedings of the General Assembly shall be printed weekly during their sitting, with the yeas and nays on any question, vote, or resolution, where any two members require it, except when the vote is taken by ballot; and, when the yeas and nays are so taken, every member shall have a right to insert the reasons of his vote upon the minutes, if he desire it.

“SECT. 15. To the end that the laws, before they are enacted, may be more maturely considered, and the inconvenience of hasty determinations as much as possible prevented, all bills of public nature shall be printed, for the consideration of the people, before they are read in General Assembly the last time for debate and amendment, and, except on occasions of sudden necessity, shall not be passed into laws until the next session of Assembly; and, for the more perfect satisfaction of the public, the reasons and motives for making such laws shall be fully and clearly expressed in the preambles.

“SECT. 16. The style of the laws of this Commonwealth shall be, ‘Be it enacted, and it is hereby enacted by the representatives of the people of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, in general assembly met, and by the authority of the same.’ And the General Assembly shall affix their seal to every bill as soon as it is enacted into a law; which seal shall be kept



by the Assembly, and shall be called *The seal of the laws of Pennsylvania*, and shall not be used for any other purpose.

“SECT. 17. The city of Philadelphia, and each county in this Commonwealth respectively, shall on the first Tuesday of November in the present year, and on the second Tuesday in October, annually, for the two next succeeding years, to wit, the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-seven, and the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight, choose six persons to represent them in General Assembly. But as representation in proportion to the number of taxable inhabitants is the only principle which can at all secure liberty, and make the voice of a majority of the people the law of the land, therefore the General Assembly shall cause complete lists of the taxable inhabitants in the city and each county in the commonwealth respectively, to be taken and returned to them, on or before the last meeting of the Assembly, elected in the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight, who shall appoint a representation to each in proportion to the number of taxables in such returns; which representation shall continue for the next seven years afterwards, at the end of which a new return of the taxable inhabitants shall be made, and a representation agreeable thereto appointed by the said Assembly, and so on septennially forever. The wages of the representatives in General Assembly, and all other State charges, shall be paid out of State treasury.

“SECT. 18. In order that the freemen of this commonwealth may enjoy the benefit of election as equally as may be, until the representation shall commence, as directed in the foregoing section, each county, at its own choice, may be divided into districts, hold elections therein, and elect their representatives in the county, and their other elective officers, as shall be hereafter regulated by the General Assembly of the State. And no inhabitant of this State shall have more than one annual vote at the general election for representatives in Assembly.

“SECT. 19. For the present, the Supreme Executive Council of this State shall consist of twelve persons, chosen in the following manner: The freemen of the city of Philadelphia, and of the counties of Philadelphia, Chester, and Bucks respec-

tively, shall choose by ballot one person for the city, and one for each county aforesaid, to serve for three years, and no longer, at the time and place for electing representatives in General Assembly. The freemen of the counties of Lancaster, York, Cumberland, and Berks, shall, in like manner, elect one person in each county respectively, to serve as counsellors for two years, and no longer. And the counties of Northampton, Bedford, Northumberland, and Westmoreland respectively, shall, in like manner, elect one person for each county, to serve as counsellors for one year, and no longer. And, at the expiration of the time for which each counsellor was chosen to serve, the freemen of the city of Philadelphia, and of the several counties in this State respectively, shall elect one person to serve as counsellor for three years, and no longer; and so on every third year forever. By this mode of election and continual rotation, more men will be trained to public business, there will in every subsequent year be found in the Council a number of persons acquainted with the proceeding of the foregoing years, whereby the business will be more confidently conducted; and, moreover, the danger of establishing an inconvenient aristocracy will be effectually prevented. All vacancies that may happen in the Council, by death, resignation, or otherwise, shall be filled at the next general election for representatives in General Assembly, unless a particular election for that purpose shall be sooner appointed by the president and Council. No member of the General Assembly, or delegate in Congress, shall be chosen a member of the Council. The president and vice-president shall be chosen annually, by the joint ballot of the General Assembly and Council, of the members of the Council. Any person having served as a counsellor for three successive years shall be incapable of holding that office for four years afterwards. Every member of the Council shall be a justice of the peace for the whole commonwealth, by virtue of his office.

“ In case new additional counties shall hereafter be erected in this state, such county or counties shall elect a counsellor, and such county or counties shall be annexed to the next neighboring counties, and shall take rotation with such counties.

“The Council shall meet annually, at the same time and place with the General Assembly.

“The treasurer of the State, trustees of the loan-office, naval office, collectors of the customs or excise, judge of the admiralty, attorneys-general, sheriffs, and prothonotaries, shall not be capable of a seat in the General Assembly, Executive Council, or Continental Congress.

“SECT. 20. The president, and in his absence the vice-president, with the Council, five of whom shall be a quorum, shall have power to appoint and commissionate judges, naval officers, judge of the admiralty, attorney-general, and all other officers, civil and military, except such as are chosen by the General Assembly or the people, agreeable to this frame of government, and the laws that may be made hereafter; and shall supply every vacancy in any office, occasioned by death, resignation, removal, or disqualification, until the office can be filled in the time and manner directed by law or this constitution. They are to correspond with other States, and transact business with the officers of government, civil and military; and prepare such business as appears to them necessary to lay before the General Assembly. They shall sit as judges to hear and determine on impeachments, taking to their assistance, for advice only, the justices of the Supreme Court. And shall have power to grant pardons, and remit fines, in all cases whatsoever, except in cases of impeachment; and, in cases of treason and murder, shall have power to grant reprieves, but not to pardon until the end of the next sessions of Assembly; but there shall be no remission or mitigation of punishments on impeachments, except by act of the legislature. They are also to take care that the laws be faithfully executed. They are to expedite the execution of such measures as may be resolved upon by the General Assembly; and they may draw upon the treasury for such sums as shall be appropriated by the House. They may also lay embargoes, or prohibit the exportation of any commodity for any time, not exceeding thirty days, in the recess of the House only. They may grant such licenses as shall be directed by law; and shall have power to call together the General Assembly, when necessary, before the day to which they shall stand ad-



journed. The president shall be commander-in-chief of the forces of the State, but shall not command in person, except advised thereto by the Council, and then only so long as they shall approve thereof. The president and Council shall have a secretary, and keep fair books of their proceedings, wherein any counsellor may enter his dissent, with his reasons in support of it.

“SECT. 21. All commissions shall be in the name and by the authority of the freemen of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, sealed with the State seal, signed by the president or vice-president, and attested by the secretary; which seal shall be kept by the Council.

“SECT. 22. Every officer of State, whether judicial or executive, shall be liable to be impeached by the General Assembly, either when in office, or after his resignation, or removal for mal-administration. All impeachments shall be before the president and vice-president and Council, who shall hear and determine the same.

“SECT. 23. The judges of the Supreme Court of Judicature shall have fixed salaries, be commissioned for seven years only, though capable of re-appointment at the end of that term, but removable for misbehavior at any time by the General Assembly; they shall not be allowed to sit as members in the Continental Congress, Executive Council, or General Assembly, nor to hold any other office, civil or military, nor to take or receive fees or perquisites of any kind.

“SECT. 24. The Supreme Court, and the several courts of common pleas of this Commonwealth, shall, besides the powers usually exercised by such courts, have the powers of a court of chancery, so far as relates to the perpetuating testimony, obtaining evidence from places not within this State, and the care of the persons and estates of those who are *non compos mentis*, and such other powers as may be found necessary by future General Assemblies, not inconsistent with this constitution.

“SECT. 25. Trials shall be by jury, as heretofore. And it is recommended to the legislature of this State to provide by law against every corruption of partiality in the choice, return, or appointment of juries.



“SECT. 26. Courts of sessions, common pleas, and orphans' courts, shall be held quarterly in each city and county; and the legislature shall have power to establish all other courts as they may judge for the good of the inhabitants of the State. All courts shall be open, and justice shall be impartially administered, without corruption or unnecessary delay. All their officers shall be paid an adequate but moderate compensation for their services: And if any officer shall take greater or other fees than the laws allow him, either directly or indirectly, it shall ever after disqualify him from holding any office in this State.

“SECT. 27. All prosecutions shall commence in the name, and by the authority, of the freemen of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania; and all indictments shall conclude with these words, ‘*Against the peace and dignity of the same.*’ The style of all process in this State shall be, *The Commonwealth of Pennsylvania.*

“SECT. 28. The person of a debtor, where there is not a strong presumption of fraud, shall not be continued in prison, after delivering up, *bona fide*, all his estate, real and personal, for the use of his creditors, in such manner as shall be hereafter regulated by law. All prisoners shall be bailable by sufficient securities, unless for capital offences, when the proof is evident, or the presumption great.

“SECT. 29. Excessive bail shall not be exacted for bailable offences; and all fines shall be moderate.

“SECT. 30. Justices of the peace shall be elected by the freeholders of each city and county respectively; that is to say, two or more persons may be chosen for each ward, township, or district, as the law shall hereafter direct: And their names shall be returned to the president in Council, who shall commissionate one or more of them for each ward, township, or district so returning, for seven years, removable for misconduct by the General Assembly. But if any city or county, ward, township, or district in this Commonwealth, shall hereafter incline to change the manner of appointing their justices of the peace, as settled in this article, the General Assembly may make laws to regulate the same, agreeable to the desire of a

majority of the freeholders of a city or county, ward, township, or district so applying. No justice of the peace shall sit in the General Assembly, unless he first resign his commission; nor shall he be allowed to take any fees, nor any salary, or allowance, except such as the future legislature may grant.

“SECT. 31. Sheriffs and coroners shall be elected annually in each city and county by the freemen; that is to say, two persons for each office, one of whom for each is to be commissioned by the president in Council. No person shall continue in the office of sheriff more than three successive years, or be capable of being again elected during four years afterwards. The election shall be held at the same time and place appointed for the election of representatives: And the commissioners and assessors, and other officers chosen by the people, shall also be then and there elected, as has been usually heretofore, until altered or otherwise regulated by the future legislature of this State.

“SECT. 32. All elections, whether by the people, or in General Assembly, shall be by ballot, free and voluntary: And any elector who shall receive any gift or reward for his vote, in meat, drink, monies, or otherwise, shall forfeit his right to elect for that time, and suffer such other penalty as future laws shall direct. And any person who shall directly or indirectly give, promise, or bestow any such rewards to be elected, shall be thereby rendered incapable to serve for the ensuing year.

“SECT. 33. All fees, licence money, fines, and forfeitures heretofore granted, or paid to the governor or his deputies, for the support of government, shall hereafter be paid into the public treasury, unless altered or abolished by the future legislature.

“SECT. 34. A register's office for the probate of wills, and granting letters of administration, and an office for the recording of deeds, shall be kept in each city and county: The officers to be appointed by the General Assembly, removable at their pleasure, and to be commissioned by the president in Council.

“SECT. 35. The printing-presses shall be free to every person who undertakes to examine the proceedings of the legislature, or any part of government.

“SECT. 36. As every freeman to preserve his independence (if without a sufficient estate) ought to have some profession, calling, trade, or farm, whereby he may honestly subsist, there can be no necessity for, nor use in, establishing offices of profit, the usual effects of which are dependence and servility (unbecoming freemen) in the possessors and expectants, faction, contention, corruption, and disorder among the people. But, if any man is called into public service to the prejudice of his private affairs, he has a right to a reasonable compensation: And whenever an office, through increase of fees, or otherwise, becomes so profitable as to occasion many to apply for it, the profits ought to be lessened by the legislature.

“SECT. 37. The future legislature of this State shall regulate entails in such a manner as to prevent perpetuities.

“SECT. 38. The penal laws, as heretofore used, shall be reformed by the legislature of this State as soon as may be, and punishments made, in some cases less sanguinary, and, in general, more proportionate to the crimes.

“SECT. 39. To deter more effectually from the commission of crimes, by continued visible punishment of long duration, and to make sanguinary punishment less necessary, houses ought to be provided for punishing by hard labor those who shall be convicted of crimes not capital, wherein the criminals shall be employed for the benefit of the public, or for reparation of injuries done to private persons: And all persons, at proper times, shall be admitted to see the prisoners at their labor.

“SECT. 40. Every officer, whether judicial, executive, or military, in authority under this commonwealth, shall take the following oath or affirmation of allegiance, and general oath of office, before he enter on the execution of his office: The oath or affirmation of allegiance. *‘I —— do swear (or affirm) that I will be true and faithful to the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania: And that I will not directly or indirectly do any act or thing prejudicial or injurious to the constitution or government thereof, as established by the convention.’* The oath or affirmation of office. *‘I —— do swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of —— for the —— of ——, and will do equal right and*

*justice to all men to the best of my judgment and abilities, according to law.'*

"SECT. 41. No public tax, custom, or contribution shall be imposed on or paid by the people of this State, except by a law for that purpose: Before any law be made for raising it, the purpose for which any tax is to be raised ought to appear clearly to the legislature to be of more service to the community than the money would be, if not collected; which being well observed, taxes can never be burdens.

"SECT. 42. Every foreigner of good character, who comes to settle in this State, having first taken an oath or affirmation of allegiance to the same, may purchase or by other just means acquire, hold, and transfer land or other real estate, and, after one year's residence, shall be deemed a free citizen thereof, and entitled to all the rights of a natural born subject of this state, except that he shall not be capable of being elected a representative, until after two years' residence.

"SECT. 43. The inhabitants of this State shall have liberty to fowl and hunt in seasonable times on the lands they hold, and on all other lands therein, not enclosed; and in like manner to fish in all boatable waters, and others not private property.

"SECT. 44. A school or schools shall be established in each county by the legislature, for the convenient instruction of youth, with such salaries paid to the masters by the public as may enable them to instruct youth at low prices: And all useful learning shall be duly encouraged and promoted in one or more universities.

"SECT. 45. Laws for the encouragement of virtue, and prevention of vice and immorality, shall be made and always kept in force, and provision shall be made for their due execution: And all religious societies or bodies of men, heretofore united or incorporated for the advancement of religion and learning, or for other pious and charitable purposes, shall be encouraged and protected in the enjoyment of the privileges, immunities, and estates which they were accustomed to enjoy, or could of right have enjoyed, under the laws and former constitution of this State.

"SECT. 46. The declaration of rights is hereby declared to



be a part of the constitution of this Commonwealth, and ought never to be violated on any pretence whatever.

“SECT. 47. That the freedom of this Commonwealth may be preserved inviolate forever, there shall be chosen by ballot by the freemen in each city and county respectively, on the second Tuesday in October, in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty-three, and on the second Tuesday in October in every seventh year thereafter, two persons in each city and county of this State, to be called, *The Council of Censors*, who shall meet together on the second Monday of November, next ensuing their election; the majority of whom shall be a quorum in every case, except as to calling a convention, in which two-thirds of the whole number elected shall agree; and whose duty it shall be to inquire whether the constitution has been preserved inviolate? And whether the legislative and executive branches of government have performed their duty as guardians of the people, or assumed to themselves, or exercised other or greater powers than they are entitled to by the constitution: They are also to inquire whether the public taxes have been justly laid and collected in all parts of this Commonwealth, in what manner the public monies have been disposed of, and whether the laws have been duly executed. For these purposes they shall have power to send for persons, papers, and records; they shall have authority to pass public censures, to order impeachments, and to recommend to the legislature the repealing such laws as appear to them to have been enacted contrary to the principles of the constitution: These powers they shall continue to have for and during the space of one year from the day of their election, and no longer: The said council of censors shall also have power to call a convention, to meet within two years after their sitting, if there appear to them an absolute necessity of amending any article of the constitution which may be defective, explaining such as may be thought not clearly expressed, and of adding such as are necessary for the preservation of the rights and happiness of the people: But the articles to be amended, and the amendments proposed, and such articles as are proposed to be added or abolished, shall be promulgated at least for months

before the day appointed for the election of such convention, for the previous consideration of the people, that they may have an opportunity of instructing their delegates on the subject."

This constitution was amended in 1790, again in 1838; and subsequent amendments were made in 1850, 1857, and 1864.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### PENNSYLVANIA DURING THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

Emblems of Royalty burned—Lord Howe—Letters to Washington and Franklin—Franklin's Reply—Washington's Letter—Gen. Sullivan's Message—Committee appointed to confer with Howe—Battle at Trenton—Battle of Princeton—Arrival of Lafayette—Defeat at Brandywine—Removal of Congress—British in Philadelphia—They spare the Old Elm—Washington's Enemies—Commissioners from Great Britain—France acknowledges American Independence—Sir Henry Clinton succeeds Sir William Howe—British evacuate Philadelphia—Victory of Monmouth—Benedict Arnold—Indian Warfare—Continental Money—Treaty of Peace.

THE Declaration of Independence having been made, and a State constitution adopted by the people, to take the place of the Provincial charter from the king of Great Britain, and hostilities commenced, this is the proper place to record the part which Pennsylvania took in the American Revolution.

Four days after the Declaration of Independence, "The committee of safety and that of inspection in Philadelphia marched in procession to the State House, where the declaration was read to the battalions of volunteers and a vast concourse of the inhabitants of the city and county; after which the emblems of royalty were taken down from the halls where justice had hitherto been administered in the king's name, and were burnt amidst the acclamations of the crowd, while merry chimes from the churches, and peals from the State House bell, proclaimed liberty throughout the land."<sup>1</sup>

At this crisis, Lord Howe came forward with his commission for restoring peace. He appears to have been a brave man, possessed of much nautical skill, a good disciplinarian, of an ingenuous disposition, and sincerely desired to bring about

<sup>1</sup> Bancroft, vol. ix. p. 32.

peace and harmony between the Americans and Great Britain. So sanguine was he that he should accomplish this great event, that, on his arrival at Halifax, he told Admiral Arbuthnot, "that peace would be made before ten days." He seems to have misunderstood his commission, and thought he had power to conclude peace on almost any terms, whereas his commission authorized him only to pardon individuals on their return to the king's protection; nor could he grant amnesty to any rebellious communities, until they laid down their arms, and dissolved their governments. He soon discovered that the Americans were not disposed to make peace upon any such terms. He was very anxious to have intercourse with Washington, and, on the second day after his arrival, sent a flag of truce, with a letter addressed to Washington as a private man. Washington "acted with a dignity becoming his station," by declining to receive the letter. Lord Howe was grieved and disappointed at this rebuff. He sent a second letter to Washington, which was also rejected, because its address was ambiguous; but the British adjutant-general was allowed to enter the American camp for the purpose of coming to some terms about the American prisoners. It was agreed that the prisoners should have the rights of humanity; and he then asked that his visits might be accepted as the first overture of the commissioners towards making peace, and stated that they had great powers. To this Washington made the following reply, "From what appears, they have power only to grant pardons; having committed no fault, we need no pardon. We are only defending what we deem to be our indisputable rights."

To Franklin, whom Lord Howe had known in England, he stated, "the great objects of his ambition" were to promote lasting peace and union. Franklin consulted Congress, and then made this pertinent reply: "By a peace to be entered into between Britain and America as distinct states, your nation might recover the greatest part of our growing commerce, with that additional strength to be derived from a friendship with us; but I know too well her abounding pride and deficient wisdom. Her fondness for conquest, her lust of



dominion, and her thirst for a gainful monopoly, will join to hide her true interests from her eyes, and continually goad her on in ruinous distant expeditions, destructive both of lives and treasure.

"I have not the vanity, my lord, to think of intimidating by thus predicting the effects of this war; for I know it will, in England, have the fate of all my former predictions, — not to be believed till the event shall verify it.

"Long did I endeavor, with unfeigned and unwearied zeal, to preserve the British empire from breaking. Your lordship may remember the tears of joy that wet my cheek, when, in London, you once gave me expectations that a reconciliation might soon take place. I had the misfortune to find those expectations disappointed, and to be treated as the cause of the mischief I was laboring to prevent. My consolation under that groundless and malevolent treatment was, that I retained the friendship of many of the wise and good men in that country, and, among the rest, some share in the regard of Lord Howe.

"The well-founded esteem and affection which I shall always have for your lordship makes it painful to me to see you engaged in conducting a war, the great ground of which, as expressed in your letter is, 'the necessity of preventing the American trade from passing into foreign channels.' Retaining a trade is not an object for which men may justly spill each other's blood. The true means of securing commerce is the goodness and cheapness of commodities; and the profit of no trade can ever be equal to the expense of compelling it by fleets and armies.

"This war against us is both unjust and unwise: posterity will condemn to infamy those who advised it; and even success will not save from some degree of dishonor those who voluntarily engaged to conduct it. I know your great hope in coming hither was the hope of being instrumental in a conciliation; and I believe, that, when you find that impossible on any terms given you to propose, you will relinquish so odious a command." Lord Howe, upon the reception of this letter, was disappointed, vexed, and chagrined.

After the loss of the battle on Long Island, Washington, being somewhat disheartened from the defeat, the smallness of his troops, and the tardiness of Congress in raising more, wrote them a discouraging letter. Gen. Sullivan had been taken prisoner in this battle; and Lord Howe received him on board "The Eagle," treated him with great hospitality, approved his being immediately exchanged for Gen. Prescott (a British general who was then a prisoner at Philadelphia), stated how exceedingly difficult it still was for him to recognize Congress as a legal body, spoke of his strong desire to bring about peaceful relations: in fine, such was his address, that Sullivan volunteered to act as a messenger between him and the American Congress. Soon after the troops passed over from Long Island, Sullivan followed on parole. He informed Washington what he was intending to do, who, though disapproving of his mission, did not prohibit it. Upon Sullivan's introduction to Congress, John Adams exclaimed "Oh the decoy duck! would that the first bullet of the enemy in the defeat on Long Island had passed through his brain!" The effect of Lord Howe's courtesy upon Sullivan was so great, that he affirmed to Congress, Howe asserted "He was ever against taxing us; that he was very sure America could not be conquered; that he would set aside the acts of parliament for taxing the colonies and changing the charter of Massachusetts."

As he had no written message from Lord Howe, but relied wholly on his memory, Congress directed that he should commit to writing what he had to say, which he accordingly did, and presented the following: "That, though Lord Howe could not at present treat with Congress as such, he was very desirous as a private gentleman to meet some of its members as private gentlemen; that he, in conjunction with Gen. Howe, had full powers to compromise the dispute between Great Britain and America; that he wished a compact might be settled at this time; that in case, upon conference, they should find any probable ground of an accommodation, the authority of Congress must be afterwards acknowledged."

Although some of the members of Congress considered this message as an insult, yet a majority adopted the following

“Resolve, that the Congress, being the representatives of the free and independent States of America, could not send their members to confer with him in their private characters; but, ever desirous of peace on reasonable terms, they would send a committee of their body to learn whether he had any authority to treat with persons authorized by them, what that authority was, and to hear his propositions.”

Sullivan was deputed to take this resolution to Lord Howe; and Benjamin Franklin, John Adams, and Edward Rutledge were appointed a committee to confer with him. Accordingly, Lord Howe sent his barge for them, received them with great courtesy, spread before them an excellent collation, and informed them that he could converse with them only as private citizens; to which John Adams replied, “Consider us in any light you please, except that of British subjects.” Howe then said he trusted this interview would prepare the way for the return of the Colonies to the king; whereupon Rutledge stated what Sullivan had reported to Congress, “That he would set the acts of parliament aside, because parliament had no right to tax America, or meddle with her internal polity.” To this he replied, “That Sullivan had extended his words much beyond their import; that while the king and ministry were willing that instructions and acts of parliament complained of should be revised, his commission in respect to them was confined to powers of consultation with private persons.” Franklin, the Sage of Pennsylvania, closed the interview by representing, “That it was the duty of good men on both sides of the water to promote peace by an acknowledgment of American independence, and a treaty of friendship and alliance between the two countries.”

The committee returned to Philadelphia, and reported to Congress, that Lord Howe had made no proposition of peace, except upon the return of the Colonies to their allegiance to Great Britain, and that his authority extended no farther than to grant pardons upon submission. Congress took no action upon this report; and thus Lord Howe's second attempt to promote reconciliation proved as abortive as his first.

“The close of the year 1776 was a gloomy period of the

war. Gen. Washington, with the remains of an army constantly diminishing by desertion, and the expiration of the terms of enlistment, had retreated through New Jersey, before the British army under Howe and Cornwallis, and crossed into Pennsylvania. The enemy posted themselves along the Jersey side of the Delaware, waiting for the ice to form a bridge by which they might cross to Philadelphia. The Americans guarded the ferries from New Hope to Bristol. The militia from the eastern part of Pennsylvania flocked to Washington's standard with spirit and in considerable numbers. On the night of the 25th of December, Gen. Washington, with a force of only twenty-four hundred men, boldly pushed across the Delaware, and attacked the Hessian regiments at Trenton, capturing nearly a thousand men, and six cannon. Washington recrossed with his prisoners into Pennsylvania, refreshed his troops, and then returned to Trenton, where he was joined by Gen. Cadwallader and Gen. Mifflin, who crossed the Delaware each with about eighteen hundred Pennsylvania militia.

"The battle of Princeton took place within a week subsequently, after which the army went into winter-quarters at Morristown, N.J.

"In July, 1777, the British army embarked at New York for the Delaware or Chesapeake Bay, evidently intending an attack on Philadelphia. Gen. Washington immediately marched the army into Pennsylvania, and encamped near Germantown, waiting to know more definitely the intentions of the enemy. It was at this time that Washington first met Lafayette, who had recently arrived in Philadelphia. Lafayette, invited by Washington, at once took up his quarters with the commander-in-chief, and shared all the privations of the camp. The British army, commanded by Sir William Howe, landed at the head of Elk, on the 25th of August, 1777, and moved in two divisions, under Lord Cornwallis and Gen. Knyphausen, towards Chad's Ford, on the Brandywine. Washington marched his army, in fine spirits, through the streets of Philadelphia, and took up a position along the left bank of the Brandywine, at Chad's Ford, and at the Birmingham meeting-house, four miles above. Here a general action took place on the



11th of September, in which great gallantry and military skill were displayed on both sides; but the Americans were finally routed, and retreated that night to Chester. The day after the battle Washington retreated to Philadelphia, and encamped near Germantown. After a day's rest, he crossed the Schuylkill, and proceeded on the Lancaster road, intending again to meet the enemy. On the 16th of September both armies prepared with great alacrity for battle; but a heavy rain coming on, which wet the arms and ammunition of the Americans, they were compelled to abandon the design of an engagement, and retreated to French Creek. Gen. Washington recrossed the Schuylkill, and encamped on Perkiomen Creek, and Gen. Wayne was sent to annoy the flanks of the enemy. It was while he was on this service that the memorable affair at the Paoli occurred. Having thus driven Wayne from his rear, and destroyed a quantity of stores at Valley Forge, Gen. Howe came across the Schuylkill without opposition, and entered Philadelphia on the 26th of September, at the head of a detachment of British and Hessian grenadiers. The remainder of his army encamped at Germantown. The royalists in Philadelphia welcomed Gen. Howe with transports of joy; and, during the winter, the British officers were regaled with luxury and festivity.”<sup>1</sup>

Congress, immediately after the battle of Brandywine, removed to Lancaster.

Of the condition of our soldiers who were held as prisoners during the occupancy of Philadelphia by the British, we give the following account from one of their number as given to Watson, and found in his “Annals of Philadelphia:”<sup>2</sup>—

*Jacob Ritter's Facts of the Prisoners at the Walnut-Street Prison.*

“*The British Provost,*’ so called, in Philadelphia, was the same building since called the Walnut-street Prison. It was then newly constructed and unfinished. At that place there were about nine hundred Americans held as prisoners, under the charge of the infamously cruel commissioner, Capt. Cunningham, then a wicked and passionate Irishman of about sixty

<sup>1</sup> Day's Historical Collections of Penn., vol. i. p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> See vol. ii. p. 300.

years of age, — a florid, full-bodied man. These prisoners were those captured at Brandywine and Germantown. Numbers of them died there of *hunger and cold*, and were daily carried out and interred in the Potter's Field, now the Washington Square, close by. It seems strange to me that a case of such suffering to our countrymen, effected chiefly by the malignity of such a wretch as Cunningham, should not have been more spoken of by Philadelphians. We had often heard of the sufferings of the prisoners at the New York provost under his control; but scarcely a Philadelphian of middle age has ever heard a word concerning our countrymen's sufferings at Philadelphia. This seems strange when compared with what I am now to relate from facts told me in May, 1833, by Mr. Jacob Ritter, aged seventy-six years, a German by descent, born near Quakertown, Bucks County, who was himself one of the inmates of that Golgotha and charnel-house in the time above mentioned, then a good man and true, and since a public friend.

"He had been in the battle of Brandywine, and was found, while sick, in a farmhouse, by the Hessians, who beat and kicked him as a 'rebellor,' and bore him off to the city. At this place, he and the others were *three days and nights* without any food. He saw one soldier who had eaten nothing *till his fifth day*, when he saw him get a piece of rye bread; and he actually saw him gently topple off his seat on the prison-steps, dead, while he was in the act of eating.

"Mr. Ritter says he was often wantonly beaten and bruised severely by the butt end of Cunningham's whip; and at other times he was affectedly flattered and caressed, and offered many jingling guineas to join his Majesty's service. He did not strike or abuse men's persons in the presence of other British officers, but on such occasions would content himself with grossly abusive language.

"On one occasion Mr. Ritter saw a poor, starving Virginian, who had been several days without food, looking wistfully at some biscuits which had been sent to some newly arrived *citizens*, prisoners brought in on suspicion. Moved by compassion for the distress of the starving man, and almost forgetting his own similar need, he made out to slip unperceived to where

they lay in a keg; and, getting one, he gave it to the man, at the same time cautioning him not to eat it all, but to break it up finely, mix it with water, and then to make it a prolonged meal by *tasting* it for a whole day.

"As the winter advanced, the prisoners became excessively cold. They had no extra coverings for sleeping; and, the window-panes being much broken (shivered to pieces by the blowing-up of 'The Augusta,' man-of-war, at Red Bank), the snow and cold entered therein freely. They huddled together for warmth; but with that they also became common companions of their lice and vermin. He did not perceive any of our officers on furlough as coming among them as visitors; and he did not know of any arrangement of any of our citizens as benefactors. He had seen soup brought for them, and set down at the prison-door in vessels, which, when seen by Cunningham on his visit, have been kicked over, with a curse on the rebel dogs. On such an occasion, he has seen the poor, starved prisoners, when near enough to profit by it, fall upon their knees and hands, and eagerly lap up the wasted liquid.

"Ritter had seen several pick and eat grass-roots, scraps of leather, chips, pieces of the rotten pump, &c., to assuage and abate their hunger. Those who had any friends in the city got to fare better, after they could contrive to let them know their wants. So he was helped by his aunt Kline, and eventually got released through the influence of friends. It was a common measure with Cunningham, when visiting them, to carry his large key, and to knock any one on the head who chanced to offend him. On one such occasion, the struck person fell and bled, many often dying. Those who died, eight to twelve in twenty-four hours, were to be seen dragged along the floor by the legs to the dead-cart. It was common to see several watching for the chance of rats from the rat-holes, which, when captured, were eaten, both for staying hunger, and also to make reprisals upon an enemy that often disturbed their sleep, and otherwise annoyed them.

"Ritter also says their supply of provisions never became regular; for instance, they never had any issue of *salt* meat. Occasionally he has seen what seemed to have been a diseased

beef or cow, brought dead in a cart, and shot down on the ground in all its dung; which was eagerly cut up, by some was eaten raw, and by some was cut in strips to dry and cure, as they had no regular vessels for cooking. In his own case, after some days, he got an earthen porringer, in which he made some food by boiling or simmering some musty flour in water; his fire was made of old shoes and bones; (he once saw a load of chestnut come;)—he thought he never ate any thing so good as it seemed. This example was followed by others. Many borrowed his porringer. In one case of their eating the rotten wood and paint from the pump, they mixed it with pump water.

“Some of them let down little bags or baskets from the prison-windows to the street to get a little contribution in that way; but it was but little. They received potato-skins in that way, and gladly used them. Once a small-headed man got his head out through the bars to beg; and while in the act, and unable to draw his head in again, he was seen by Cunningham, who fell to whipping him.

“He never saw or knew of any of the citizens of Philadelphia ever visiting the prisoners to relieve them. Of all the Friends in the city, he never knew or heard of but one that ever came there upon benevolence to help them. He knew of no relief extended to them by the ladies or women. His old aunt was a resolute woman, who either came to assist him, or sent relief by her little son. The only act of seeming gentleness he ever witnessed from Cunningham was upon the winning address of a starving drummer-boy. He begged him to consider his case of starvation, his youth, and his inability to do the British any injury. After some inquiries by Cunningham, he said he might go if he would kneel down and kiss the prison stone steps. He did it instantly and earnestly; and, claiming his reward, the persecutor let him go with a laugh. None of the American officers ever visited them. He did not know of any of the prisoners as driven to enlistment. There were times when Cunningham acted with peculiar bursts of passion, in such cases wantonly whipping, with his horsewhip, whoever came across his way.

“The foregoing was confirmed in Poulson’s paper of the 25th



August, 1834, 'told on the occasion of the death of Capt. Samuel Waples, of Accomac County, Virginia, who, it states, had been taken prisoner, as a lieutenant in the Ninth Virginia Regiment, at the battle of Germantown, and *was confined* in the common jail of the city of Philadelphia, where he suffered many privations, being kept for *three days and nights without any kind of sustenance*;' but he soon made his escape therefrom, and succeeded in passing the lines, and reaching Washington's camp at Valley Forge."

The following is an extract from a letter by a lady to the same author, referring to the conduct of the British officers during 1777 and '78:—

"The officers, very generally, I believe, behaved with politeness to the inhabitants; and many of them, upon going away, expressed their satisfaction that no injury to the city was contemplated by their commander. They said that living among the inhabitants, and speaking the same language, made them uneasy at the thought of acting as enemies.

"At first provisions were scarce and dear, and we had to live with much less abundance than we had been accustomed to. Hard money was, indeed, as difficult to come at as if it had never been taken from the mines, except with those who had things to sell for the use of the army. They had given certificates to the farmers, as they came up through Chester County, of the amount of stores they had taken; and, upon these being presented for payment at headquarters, they were duly honored. My mother received a seasonable supply in this way, from persons who were in her debt, and had been paid for what the army had taken.

"The day of the battle of Germantown, we heard the firing all day, but knew not the result. Towards evening they brought in the wounded. The prisoners were carried to the State-house lobbies; and the street was presently filled with women taking lint and bandages, and every refreshment which they thought their suffering countrymen would want.

"Gen. Howe, during the time he staid in Philadelphia, seized and kept for his own use Mary Pemberton's coach and horses, in which he used to ride about the town. The old officers

appeared to be uneasy at his conduct ; and some of them freely expressed their opinions. They said, that, before his promotion to the chief command, he sought for the counsels and company of officers of experience and merit, but now his companions were usually a set of boys, the most dissipated fellows in the army.

“ Lord Howe was much more sedate and dignified than his brother, really dignified ; for he did not seem to affect any pomp or parade.

“ They were exceedingly chagrined and surprised at the capture of Burgoyne, and at first would not suffer it to be mentioned. We had received undoubted intelligence of the fact in a letter from Charles Thomson ; which fact the superior officers acknowledged as a truth.

“ The streets seemed always well filled with both officers and soldiers, and I believe they frequently attended different places of worship ; but Friends’ meetings were not much to their tastes. They had their own chaplains to the different regiments, which appeared to us a mere mockery of religion. Parson Badger was chaplain to the artillery ; and he was billeted at John Field’s, who, with his wife, were very plain Friends in our neighborhood. The house was very small, and he had the front-room up stairs ; and as he was a jolly, good-tempered person, he was much liked by the young fellows, who used to call to see him after parades.

“ When they left the city, the officers came to take leave of their acquaintance, and express their good wishes. It seemed to us that a considerable change had taken place in their prospects of success between the time of their entry and departure. They often spoke freely in conversation on these subjects.”

Although the British committed many depredations at the time they were quartered in Philadelphia, yet they spared the old elm under which William Penn was said to have made his famous treaty with the Indians. “ This tree was long revered by the colonists and Indians. During the Revolutionary war, the British general Simcoe, who was quartered at Kensington, so regarded it, that, whilst his soldiers were felling the trees of the vicinity for fuel, he placed a sentinel under it, that not a

branch of it might be touched. In 1810 it was blown down ; and cups, workstands, and other articles of furniture, were made from it, to be preserved as memorials. It was then ascertained to be two hundred and eighty-three years old, having been one hundred and fifty-five years old at the time of the conference.”<sup>1</sup>

Washington, great and disinterested as he had shown himself, was not without enemies. In 1777 they attempted to prejudice Congress and the minds of the people against him. Their object was to place the chief command in the hands of some one, perhaps more adventurous, but less prudent ; and they so far succeeded, that for a time his reputation suffered : but this was but temporary ; and he soon shone forth more brilliantly than ever.

In the year 1778 commissioners were sent over from Great Britain to attempt a reconciliation ; but their efforts were unsuccessful. They tried many arts and intrigues to induce the citizens to become reconciled to the British Government. Among other things, they offered ten thousand pounds sterling, and the best office in the Colonies, to Joseph Read, then Member of Congress, and afterwards President of the Executive Council of Pennsylvania, if he would forsake the Americans, and join the British. He readily replied, “I am not worth purchasing ; but, such as I am, the King of Great Britain is not rich enough to do it.”

The 6th February, 1778, France openly acknowledged the independence of America by a treaty with the commissioners, Franklin, Deane, and Lee, who were then in Paris. Congress was then in session at York, whither they had removed from Lancaster. This joyful news reached them on the 2d of May of the same year. Sir William Howe returned to England in the spring of this year ; and Sir Henry Clinton became his successor in command at Philadelphia. Fearing that a French fleet would blockade the Delaware, Clinton evacuated Philadelphia on the 18th of June, and marched across New Jersey to New York. Washington immediately moved his troops from his winter-quarters at Valley Forge, and pursued the enemy, and, on the 28th of June, gained a brilliant victory at Monmouth.

<sup>1</sup> Notice by Sir B. West, reported by R. Vaux, Esq., member of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, 1825.

Gen. Benedict Arnold was left in command, with a small detachment, at Philadelphia. While here, he married into a distinguished Tory family, and doubtless, through the influence of his wife and her relatives, commenced that intimacy with the British officers, which resulted in the betrayal of his country, and stamped his name with infamy.

At this time the Six Nations of the Indians, together with some other western tribes, had been induced by the British to take up arms against the Americans. The garrison at Pittsburg was increased, and Fort McIntosh was built at the mouth of Beaver River. At the urgent call of Congress to protect the north and west branches of the Susquehanna, the inhabitants of Northumberland County and Wyoming Valley had sent all their fighting men from their homes. While they were in this defenceless condition, a cruel slaughter by the savages fell upon them in July. Col. John Butler with a party of Tories, a detachment of Sir John Johnson's Royal Greens, with a large body of Indians, came down the Susquehanna, and destroyed the settlements of the Wyoming Valley. A few old men who had remained at home, and some soldiers on a visit from the army, opposed the enemy; but their courage was greater than their prudence. The large number of the enemy overpowered them. They were completely routed. Many of them were slain in the battle, others captured, and put to death with the tomahawk. Col. Dennison, with a few others, fled to the fort; and, by a capitulation with them, the women and children were spared, and allowed to depart. Their cottages were burnt, and their widows and orphans, with little clothing and scanty provision, journeyed sixty miles through the mountains to Stroudsburg.

Soon after this battle, Col. Hartley, with a small detachment of soldiers, went up the Susquehanna, destroying all the Indian villages. Just at this time a band of Indians and Tories fell upon Fort Freeland, on the west branch of the Susquehanna, fourteen miles above Northumberland, forced the garrison to capitulate, and took the armed men captives.

In June, 1779, Gen. Sullivan, with an army, ascended the Susquehanna, and destroyed the Indian towns on the Tioga and Genesee Rivers; but this only enraged the savages, and caused



them to make still further attacks upon the Americans. During all the remainder of the war, they were constantly roving through the frontier settlements, leaving their track marked with blood and desolation.

In January, 1781, the Pennsylvania troops stationed at Morristown revolted. Thirteen hundred of the men paraded without their officers, threatened to march to Philadelphia, and apply to Congress to redress their grievances. The ground of their complaint was detention beyond the time of their enlistment, deprivation of clothing and provisions, and payment in depreciated currency. The British generals, taking advantage of this revolt, endeavored to induce them to enlist in the service of their king. This they refused to do, and arrested the messengers as spies. Gens. Wayne and Reed, the latter being president of the Assembly of Pennsylvania, pacified them by assurance that their case should be presented to Congress, and their grievances redressed.

The Continental currency had so far depreciated as to have become almost worthless, as one hundred dollars would buy but a yard of silk, and a cow cost five hundred dollars. In this state of affairs, Congress decided that it would be unwise and futile to make further issues of this kind of money. Robert Morris, a Pennsylvanian, who had been chief financier during the war, suggested to Congress, in May 1781, a plan for a Bank of North America, which institution was accordingly incorporated by them on the 31st of December of the same year. The State of Pennsylvania also granted it a charter. This bank proved of great service in relieving the finances, and promoting the commercial interests, of the country. The charter granted it by Pennsylvania was revoked in 1785; but the bank still continued its operations under its Congressional charter; and in 1787 the legislature of Pennsylvania again renewed it.

Benjamin Franklin, on the 10th July, 1782, stated to Richard Oswald, agent of the British ministry, the following terms on which peace could be made between America and Great Britain: "Independence full and complete in every sense to the thirteen States, and all British troops to be withdrawn from them; for boundaries, the Mississippi, and on the side of Can-

ada as they were before the Quebec act of 1774; and, lastly, a freedom of fishing off Newfoundland and elsewhere as in times past."

Accordingly a treaty of peace to this effect was signed at Paris, Nov. 30, 1782, by John Adams, Benjamin Franklin, John Jay, and Henry Laurens, on the part of the United States, and Mr. Fitzherbert and Mr. Oswald on the part of Great Britain. The definite treaty was signed Sept. 30, 1783.

In this long and bloody contest, Pennsylvania, with Benjamin Franklin at the head of her patriots, did her full duty with her sister States, and may claim equal honors in the establishment of the American Republic.

## CHAPTER XV.

### PENNSYLVANIA IN THE WARS SUCCEEDING THE REVOLUTION.

Warfare with the Western Indians — Whiskey Rebellion — War of 1812 — Defenceless State of the Northern Borders — Commodore Perry's Victory — British War-Ships in the Delaware — The Governor's Call — Patriotic Response — Burning of the Capitol — War with the Florida Indians — Efforts to quiet the South — Southern Trade — Patriotism of her People — Gov. Curtin — Anecdotes of Quakers — James Buchanan — Secession Ordinance — Lincoln's Election — Attack on Fort Sumter — Call for Troops — Ready Response — Simon Cameron — Thaddeus Stevens — Reserve Corps — Rebel Invasion — Gen. Meade — Battle of Gettysburg.

PEACE having now been concluded between Great Britain and America, and Pennsylvania having become a sovereign State, her warfare for many years was only with the Indian tribes of the West, — the Delawares, Twigtrees, Wyandots, &c., — who had been sent into the Ohio wilds. "A bloody and barbarous warfare was carried on against these tribes, by successive expeditions of M'Intosh in 1778, of Broadhead in 1780, of Crawford in 1782, of Harmar in 1789, of St. Clair in 1791, and of Wayne in 1792 to 1795. In addition to these larger expeditions, there was an under-current of partisan hostilities constantly maintained between the white savages of the frontier and the red, in which it is difficult to say on which side was exhibited the greatest atrocity." From this state of affairs there was no safety in settling west of the Ohio and Alleghany Rivers, until after the treaty with Gen. Wayne, Aug. 3, 1795.

Pennsylvania, having no further fighting to do with Great Britain or the Indians, managed to get up a little war within her own bounds. This was called the "Whiskey Rebellion," and arose from opposition to a tax of fourpence on each gallon of whiskey, which had been imposed by Congress. In the

western counties, where many of the inhabitants were engaged in the manufacture and sale of whiskey, the opposition was particularly violent; and from 1790 to 1794 extreme measures were adopted to evade the law, and prevent the government officers from doing their duty. The United States Marshal was obliged to flee for his life; and Gen. Neville's house, where he had been harbored, was burned. Matters grew rapidly worse; and there was but little security for life, especially to those who favored the law.

Meanwhile, Government did all it could to conciliate the inciters of the rebellion. The laws were modified, proclamations were issued, and an amnesty offered, but all uselessly; and at length, in 1794, Pres. Washington asked the co-operation of the governments of the neighboring States to quell the disturbance; and in the autumn of that year, twelve thousand men from Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia, advanced upon the insurgents, by way of Bedford and Cumberland. Gov. Lee of Virginia took the command; under him were the governors of Pennsylvania and New Jersey. This force soon caused them to succumb. Some of the leaders who were found were taken to Philadelphia for trial. No blood was shed; and thus happily ended the Whiskey Rebellion.

Next came the war with Great Britain in 1812, in which Pennsylvania performed her full share, sustaining the national government, in conjunction with the majority of the States, in its action, which many portions of the country opposed, deeming it wholly unnecessary. When Pres. Madison issued his call for troops, Pennsylvania gave a ready response, and immediately set about recruiting soldiers for the army, and freely offered money also.

The Western campaign, in the opening year of the war, resulting so disastrously as it did for the American forces, left this State in its north-western part, particularly the settlements on Lake Erie, in a defenceless condition; so that the enemy could at any time make an invasion upon our territory bordering on the Lakes. Government, therefore, decided to construct a fleet to co-operate with the army in Ohio, under Gen. Harrison, and in the summer of 1812 commenced building at Erie, vessels for



service upon the lake. By Dec. 12 two boats were on the stocks, and by spring the whole fleet was to be completed. The squadron on Lake Erie was given in command to Commodore Oliver H. Perry, who accordingly arrived at Erie on the 27th of March, and pushed forward the work of building the fleet with all possible speed; but the inconveniences to which he was subjected in procuring supplies and mechanics were so great, that it was not until August, 1813, that his vessels were ready to leave the harbor. Capt. Elliott, with a party of seamen, joined him; and on the 12th of August the fleet sailed from Erie for the headquarters of the army at Seneca, on the banks of the Sandusky. On the 10th of September the British squadron was discovered outside the harbor; and the American vessels got under way, and went to challenge it. Then ensued that battle which was crowned with so signal a success for the American arms. Perry's force consisted of nine vessels, with fifty-four guns, four hundred and ninety men, including officers: of these, a hundred and sixteen were on the sick-list. The British numbered six vessels, with sixty-three guns (thirty-five of which were of long range), with thirty-two officers, and four hundred and seventy seamen. Notwithstanding all these advantages in their favor, by four o'clock in the afternoon of that day every British vessel had surrendered to Perry; and before sunset he had sent his famous despatch to Gen. Harrison, "WE HAVE MET THE ENEMY, AND THEY ARE OURS."

In the summer of 1814 British war-ships appeared in the Delaware and Chesapeake, which much alarmed the inhabitants of Philadelphia and the south-eastern counties adjacent. The governor issued a proclamation, calling for volunteers, and ordered a draft to be made in the counties threatened. These calls were both promptly responded to. Encampments were formed about Philadelphia; and a series of earthworks were thrown up on the roads along the Delaware, and from Chesapeake Bay, and mounted with all available ordnance. The governor also wrote letters to all the prominent citizens of the State, asking their co-operation; and, among many other hearty responses, we cite Jacob Grosh of Lancaster County, who in a few days was ready to march at the head of a company of a

hundred and seven men. Nor were the women of the State behind in doing their share, making knapsacks and garments, and encouraging by their brave words. Miss Rosanna Bidleman presented a flag made by them for a company of sixty men, under Abraham Hone as captain, with these words, "Under this flag march on to victory and to glory." When the report of the burning of the Capitol at Washington reached Easton, the people assembled upon the public square to the ringing of bells and the beating of drums, and took active measures to support the government, by immediately organizing companies, and sending them to the camps on the Delaware and shores of Lake Erie. After this despicable act, the enemy committed many depredations in the States of Delaware and Maryland, plundering the people, burning their houses and villages; but they did not cross over into Pennsylvania. The State militia, numbering several thousand, were encamped along the Delaware until the end of the year, when Pennsylvania, being no longer invaded, contributed no further, except her quota of money and men.

Passing over the six-years' war with the Florida Indians, which was a bloody one, and the Mexican war, in which Pennsylvania did her share with her sister States, we approach the great Civil War, sometimes called the "War of Rebellion," or the "War for Slavery," in which she acted a prominent and conspicuous part.

Immediately after the election of Abraham Lincoln to the Presidency, every possible effort was made by the Northern and Middle States to pacify the South. To accomplish this purpose, Pennsylvania, and especially the city of Philadelphia, made equal efforts with other Northern States and cities. Even Mayor Henry, one of the best mayors Philadelphia ever had, was so anxious for peace, and to avert war, that he told Henry Ward Beecher, when he visited the city to lecture upon the abolishing of slavery, "Mr. Beecher, I advise you not to lecture: I cannot assure you that the house will not be pulled down over your head."

This was unjust and pusillanimous, nevertheless it was no more than might have been expected from the position of the State (it being the keystone between the North and the South),

and from Philadelphia, the great manufacturing city of the nation, whose trade was largely at the South. In addition to this proximity and commercial interest, Philadelphia was intimately connected with the South by family relations and intermarriages. Nowhere was the prejudice against the negro stronger than in this city, and nowhere did the desire to conciliate the South show itself more visibly than here. Many of our politicians, and prominent merchants and ministers of the gospel, not only were silent themselves against slavery, but strove anxiously to prevent others from opening their mouths upon this subject. Even after the firing upon Fort Sumter, the first gun of which was the knell of slavery, little was allowed to be said against that patriarchal institution; and when Pres. Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand men to quell the Rebellion, even then the cry was, "It is a war for union; and slavery has nothing to do with it." And although our State readily responded to this message of the President, and many were ready to volunteer to save the Union, yet very few admitted that slavery was the cause of the Rebellion. Nor was it until the dead bodies of their sons and fathers and brothers were brought home for them to look upon, that the people generally began to open their eyes to the enormity of the Southern institution. Taking into account the relative position of our State, and the Southern trade above alluded to, it is remarkable that the people should have been so deeply interested and patriotic as they showed themselves in the war, after it was fully commenced.

At this period Andrew J. Curtin was governor of Pennsylvania, a man fully equal to the duties circumstances called him to perform. He was active, energetic, and decided; and the vast labor he performed during the war will redound to his credit, and that of our Commonwealth, to the latest posterity.

It is a universally acknowledged principle that Quakers will not fight; yet there are many anecdotes related of them at the commencement of the war, and, indeed, during its whole continuance, in which they aided essentially, though indirectly, in carrying it on. It was said, very soon after the first troops were raised, and almost before Government had made provision

for them, one of the Quakers went to the governor, and said, "Andrew, thee knows that we do not believe in fighting, and thee knows, also, that we do believe in feeding the hungry and clothing the naked; and now, if thee knows of anybody that needs clothing and food, here are five hundred dollars, which thee will appropriate to these objects." It was also stated that a son of a Quaker, when he had determined to go to the war, and had donned his soldier's dress, visited his old Quaker aunt to bid her farewell. The old lady said to him, "James, it seems to me thee has got on a strange dress." James replied, "Yes, aunt, I am going to the war." After a pause, and with apparent deliberation, the good old lady replied, "Well, James, if thee really feels it to be thy duty to go to the war, I hope thee'll not be shot in the *back*." Truth demands us to say, that, in relieving the wants and sufferings of the soldiers during the entire war, no class of our citizens were more ready or indefatigable than the denomination called Quakers.

James Buchanan, the only native of Pennsylvania who has ever filled the presidential chair, was of Scotch-Irish parentage, born in Franklin County, April 22, 1791. He was elected a member of the Legislature in 1814, and re-elected the following year. In 1820 he was chosen member of Congress from Lancaster, and represented that district eleven years, when he accepted the appointment of minister to Russia, under Jackson's administration. On his return, in 1833, he was elected to the United States Senate, serving until 1845, when he was made secretary of state by Pres. Polk. Under Pres. Pierce he was minister to England, returning to this country in 1856, and in the autumn of that year was elected president of the United States. He died June 1, 1868.

South Carolina, which had always been a restless State, had undertaken a rebellion during Pres. Jackson's administration, under the name of *nullification*, and had appointed the day in which she was going out of the Union to establish a government of her own. Gen. Jackson sent down a proclamation, the purport of which was, "If you do not become quiet down there in Charleston, I will let loose the dogs of war upon you;" and so well aware were they that he would shoot or hang every rebel



of them, that they never knew when the day came that they were to go out of the United States government. Although no man was ever more vilified than that old hero, when a candidate for the presidency, yet his fame has been constantly growing brighter from the day of his death to the present time; and when this second rebellion commenced in the same State, under Jefferson Davis, every good citizen said, "Oh! I wish we had Gen. Jackson for president." This might well be said; for, had he been president at that time, that rebel State would have been as quiet under this rebellion as she was under that of *nullification*. Unfortunately for the nation, Pres. Buchanan was a very different man from Pres. Jackson. He (Buchanan) did not believe a sovereign State could be coerced: the consequence was, he did nothing to quell the disturbance.

On the 20th of December, a convention of delegates from South Carolina adopted an "Ordinance of Secession" from the Union, and within ten days from this act seven States had seceded. These States called a convention to meet at Montgomery, Ala., for the purpose of establishing a new government. Their delegates assembled, adopted a constitution, appointed Jefferson Davis president, Alexander H. Stephens vice-president: other officers were also appointed; and thus was organized the government of the "Confederate States of America."

The 4th of March, 1861, Pres. Lincoln was inaugurated; and an attack was made upon Fort Sumter the 12th of April following: on the 15th was the president's proclamation, calling for seventy-five thousand troops. The quota of Pennsylvania was fourteen thousand; but, within ten days from the issue of the proclamation, she sent twenty-five regiments, well equipped, numbering 25,975 men.

The public men of this Commonwealth were quite as ready to maintain the rights of the nation as those of any other State. They urged the president to call for an army of the loyal citizens, sufficient to crush the rebellion at once. Simon Cameron, then secretary of war, advised calling out five hundred thousand soldiers. Thaddeus Stevens of Lancaster, our great patriot, recommended the government to place an army of a million men in the field, to declare the slaves free, and

put them into the Union army. Had this sage advice been followed, the war would have been a short one, and many lives and much treasure saved to the nation.

A special meeting of the State legislature was called on the 15th of May, and they passed a bill providing for the organization of troops, to be called the "Reserve Corps of the Commonwealth." George A. McCall was appointed major-general of the corps; and John F. Reynolds, George G. Meade, and O. E. C. Ord, brigadier-generals. This corps comprised fifteen regiments, numbering nearly sixteen thousand men, — thirteen regiments of infantry, one of cavalry, and one of artillery. After the battle of Bull Run, on the 21st of July, they were enlisted into the national service; and, for the three years they were in the field, their gallant conduct in the fiercest battles gave them a world-wide reputation.

After Gen. Lee, with his whole army, crossed the Potomac, on the 15th of June, 1863, he placed small forces at Carlisle, Gettysburg, Wrightsville, and York: the main army was stationed near Chambersburg. The detachment at York took possession on the 27th of June, and the next day reached the Susquehanna at Wrightsville; and, to prevent their crossing, the bridge was set on fire by the Pennsylvanians on the opposite side at Columbia. On hearing that the rebels were in Pennsylvania, and that the bridge at Columbia had been burned, the people of Philadelphia were in great terror. The banks sent their money, and many of the merchants their most valuable goods, to New York; and all of the inhabitants who could conveniently do so left the city; and the air was full of rumors that the whole rebel army would be there soon. Another part of the enemy entered Carlisle the same day. These forces created great havoc, breaking up all the railroads about the Susquehanna on the west, and Harrisburg on the south, besides burning the bridges in the vicinity.

On the 30th of June, Lee moved with his force from Chambersburg, called in all his detachments, and concentrated the entire army at Gettysburg.

Gen. Hooker, who had been in command of our forces, was superseded by Gen. Meade on the 28th of June. Carleton, in

his "Four Years of Fighting," gives the following description of him: "Gen. Meade was unknown, except to his own corps. He entered the war as brigadier in the Pennsylvania Reserves. He commanded a division at Antietam and at Fredericksburg, and the Fifth Corps at Chancellorsville.

"Gen. Meade cared but little for the pomp and parade of war. His own soldiers respected him, because he was always prepared to endure hardships. They saw a tall, slim, gray-bearded man, wearing a slouch hat, a plain blue blouse, with his pantaloon tucked into his boots. He was plain of speech, and familiar in conversation. He enjoyed in a high degree, especially after the battle of Fredericksburg, the confidence of the president.

"I saw him soon after he was informed that the army was under his command. There was no elation, but, on the contrary, he seemed weighed down with a sense of the responsibility resting on him. He stood silent and thoughtful by himself; and few of all the noisy crowd around knew of the change that had taken place. No change was made in the machinery of the army, and there was but a few hours' delay in its movement."

At the time Gen. Meade took command of the Army of the Potomac, it consisted of seven army corps of infantry and one of cavalry, numbering in all about ninety-five thousand men.

When Gen. Meade learned where the rebel army was, he immediately broke up his camp at Frederick, Md., and marched for Pennsylvania, determined to fight the enemy wherever he found him; and on the 1st of July, having heard of the position that Lee had taken, he ordered Gen. Reynolds, commander of the First Corps, to march forward with the First and Eleventh Corps, and occupy Gettysburg.

At the time Gen. Reynolds was ordered to move on Gettysburg, the advance divisions of Hill were near that town. That night Gen. Buford, with six thousand cavalry, was between Hill's division and Gettysburg; and, at nine o'clock the next morning, he met the Confederates on the Chambersburg road, near Willoughby's Run. Here they had a skirmish. Reynolds had stopped at Marsh Creek, and immediately advanced with

his own corps, followed by Howard's, with those of Gens. Sickles and Slocum within hailing distance. Little past ten o'clock he heard the sound of fire-arms, which proved to be an attack upon his advance division, under command of Gen. Wadsworth. He passed rapidly through the village, across the fields, from the Emmettsburg road, under Seminary Ridge, there to relieve Gen. Buford, who had hitherto kept the enemy in check. Reynolds directed Gen. Cutler to place his brigade in position on each side of the Chambersburg road, and across a railway grading near a deep cut; but, before this could be done, the enemy were upon them, when a volley of musketry from the regiment of J. W. Hoffman, Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania, opened the great battle of Gettysburg.

The "Iron Brigade" of Meredith was ordered to charge into a wood on the left of the road, in rear of the Seminary, and attack Hill's right, under Gen. Archer. At this time a Mississippi brigade attacked the three regiments of Cutler's brigade, on the Chambersburg road, behind the woods on Seminary Ridge. Hall's battery was thus left uncovered; and the gunners were compelled to retire, leaving one cannon behind. The skirmishers of Cutler's two other regiments, near the woods just named, were disputing the passage of Willoughby's Run. Fortunately, the "Iron Brigade" came down in that direction, under the personal command of Reynolds, flanked Archer's, captured that officer and eight hundred men,<sup>1</sup> and re-formed on the west side of the stream. Gen. Reynolds had dismounted at the corner of the woods, and was carefully observing the movement of the troops, when a bullet from a sharpshooter passed through his neck. He fell forward upon his face, and died in a few minutes.

Of the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania Regiment, Lossing thus speaks: "The regimental flag of the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania, bearing the disk badge of the First Army Corps, of red color, with seven holes in it, as evidences of the strife in which it was engaged, was presented to the Loyal League by Col. Hoffman, on the 15th of December, 1863. In their house it is preserved as a precious memento of one of the most noted regiments of

<sup>1</sup> Lossing's Civil War, vol. iii. p. 60.



Pennsylvania. Under the leadership of Col. (afterward general) Hoffman, it became perfect in discipline, and ever ready for daring service. In Pope's Army of Virginia, at Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and Grant's campaigns, in 1864, it was always conspicuous. So much was the commander loved and honored by the officers and men of his regiment, that they presented him an elegant sword, in 1863, on which were inscribed the names of the battles in which the regiment had been engaged; namely, Sulphur Springs, Gainesville, Manassas, South Mountain, Antietam, Union, Fredericksburg, Rappahannock, Chancellorsville, Beverly Ford, and Gettysburg."<sup>1</sup>

Gen. Doubleday arrived upon the field just as Reynolds fell, and took command of his troops. He sent the "Iron Brigade" back to the woods, and also a force to attack Davis, and save Hall's battery. They saved the battery, captured Davis with his Mississippians, and also their battle-flag; and, with his full brigade, he took a position farther to the right, the better to withstand the Confederate lines. It was now noon. The whole of the First Corps was posted on Seminary Ridge, under the command of Doubleday. The remainder of Hill's corps was rapidly coming up. At this time, Gen. Rodes, with the advance division of Ewell's corps, hastened forward, swung round, and took a commanding position on the ridge, just north of the town, and connecting with Hill on his right. By this position they seriously threatened the Federal right, held by Cutler. Doubleday sent Robinson's division to aid Cutler, with Baxter's and Paul's brigades, to take position at the Mummasburg Road. There a severe fight was sustained for some time, which finally resulted in the capture of three North Carolina regiments.

Up to this time, the First Corps of the Federal Army, and the advance divisions of Hill's and Ewell's corps, had been engaged. The battle, however, soon assumed a broader field and grander proportions. Howard's corps heard its sounds in front, pressed forward rapidly, and came upon the field a little past meridian. On the rebel side, Pender's division had already come up to strengthen Hill; and Early's division had now

<sup>1</sup> See Lossing, vol. iii. p. 60.

arrived to strengthen Rodes. Gen. Howard, arriving at this time, and ranking Doubleday, took command of all the troops on the field. He had left Gen. Steinwehr's division on Cemetery Hill, and placed Gen. Schurz in temporary command of his own corps. He put Barlow's and Schurz's divisions on the right of the First Corps, in front of Early; and thus, to meet a simultaneous attack from the north and west, he extended the Federal line about three miles. This was an unfortunate necessity, as it attenuated the line, but one which could not well have been avoided. Rodes now occupied the key-point of the whole field from his position near the northern extremity of Seminary Ridge; so that, when the Confederates advanced in a body, Rodes, assisted by a battery, threw into disorder the right portion of the First Corps, and the left of the Eleventh, by dashing down between them. As the Nationals were thus driven into the village, it was an easy matter for Early, who had pushed Barlow back, to capture the three thousand men, mostly of the Eleventh Corps, which he did. The remainder of them retreated, halting on Steinwehr's right and front. The First Corps, whose left Doubleday still held, now fell back, and removed all the artillery and ambulances, and placed themselves on Steinwehr's left and rear. Thus while Ewell was occupying Gettysburg, and Hill was upon Seminary Ridge, our National troops were on Cemetery Hill in strong position, awaiting with great anxiety the arrival of the corps of the Army of the Potomac.

Gen. Meade, who was then at Taneytown, hearing of the position of affairs, ordered Gen. Hancock to leave his corps with Gen. Gibbons, proceed to Gettysburg, and take command of the troops, with full powers to offer battle where the advance of the army was, or to change position towards Pipe Creek. Gen. Hancock, having inspected the ground occupied by the troops, reported to Gen. Meade that he was satisfied with their position. Thus ended the first day's fighting in favor of the rebels; and they claimed a victory.

The further fighting at Gettysburg has been so well described by Prof. Jacobs in a little book published by Lippincott & Co., that we make the following quotation:—

“They were boastful of themselves, of their cause, and of

the skill of their officers, and were anxious to tell us of the unskilful manner in which some of our officers had conducted the fight which had just closed. When informed that Gen. Archer and fifteen hundred<sup>1</sup> of his men had been captured, they said, 'To-morrow we will take all these back again; and, having already taken five thousand (!) prisoners of you to-day, we will take the balance of your men to-morrow.' Having been *well fed, provisioned, and rested*, and successful on this day, their confidence knew no bounds. They felt assured that they should be able, with perfect ease, to cut up our army in detail, fatigued as it was by long marches, and yet scattered; for only two corps had as yet arrived. Resting under this impression, they lay down joyfully on the night of the first day.

"What the feeling of our little army, as yet consisting of only two corps, was on Wednesday evening, we are unable to state. To us it seemed as if the rebels would really be able to accomplish their boast. We were disheartened, and almost in despair. But our men, who, whilst retreating through the town, seemed to be confused and frightened, coolly and quietly fell into position on the hill, when they found themselves supported by two lines of battle formed by Steinwehr, and by a sufficiency of artillery already in place. They saw the pursuing rebels suddenly brought to a stand by the raking fire poured into them by our men on the hill.

"Soon after the battle had begun, the residents of the west end of the town were advised by Gen. Reynolds to leave their residences, that the shot and shell of the enemy might not reach and injure them, and to retire to a position to the north and east of the borough. Some, who, in accordance with this advice, left their houses, found to their sorrow, when afterwards they returned, that they had been pillaged, during their absence, by the rebels; whilst most of those who remained at home during the battles of the three days were enabled to save their property from destruction. Whilst actual fighting was going on, many of the women and children went into the cellars as places of greatest security; and nothing can be more remote from the truth than the gratuitous slander put forth by some reckless

<sup>1</sup> Difference between Lossing's and Jacobs's statement, 700.

newspaper scribblers, and extensively published abroad, that the male inhabitants ran off, like a set of cowards, and permitted the women and children to do as best they could. The truth requires us to state, that only a few of the male inhabitants were absent from home, and they were either government officers, or such as had gone away with their goods or horses to places of security. No one, as far as we know, had forsaken his home and family through fear or cowardice.

“Wednesday night and Thursday morning were devoted, by both armies, to making active preparations and arrangements for a renewal of the terrible and bloody conflict. Breastworks were constructed, rifle-pits dug, and artillery and the different corps placed in position.

“Gen. Slocum arrived with the Twelfth Corps before midnight. Upon him now devolved the chief command, until the arrival of Gen. Meade, early in the morning (one o’clock, A.M.). Gen. Meade entirely approved the act of Gen. Howard in the selection of his position. . . .

“Early on Thursday morning the rebels began to give evidence of an impression, on their part, that they might possibly have some hard work to do on that day, although, on the previous evening, they had spoken so lightly of it. They had ascertained that our little band had been strongly re-enforced during the night and early morning. They commenced barricading Middle Street on its south side, from the Seminary Ridge on the west to Stratton Street: they also broke down the fences on the north side, in order to enable them to bring up re-enforcements and to send back their men, without subjecting them to a raking street-fire from ours, the houses and stables serving as a protection to them. On the previous evening they had expected to attack and cut up our army in detail. But, as the great body of the Army of the Potomac had already arrived, this hope had vanished; and they saw that the contest would be a hard and bloody one between the two armies in their united strength. . . .

“The enemy had driven our men before them; and, endeavoring to come in between Round Top and Little Round Top, they advanced to the summit of the latter. At six, P.M., Gen. Craw-



ford's division of the Fifth Corps, consisting of two brigades of Pennsylvania Reserves, having until this time been held in reserve, went into a charge with a terrific shout, and drove the rebels down the rocky front of that hill, across the valley below, and over the next hill, into the woods beyond, taking three hundred prisoners. This was the favorable moment, and the whole rebel column was forced to retire. In this charge, the rebel General Barksdale fell on the hill opposite Little Round Top."

Thursday's fighting ended much more favorably to the Union army, still final victory seemed doubtful. Friday, July 3, the Union artillery opened upon the rebels at the place where they had penetrated our lines the preceding evening. A general attack of infantry followed at sunrise. Both armies fought desperately. At eight o'clock there was a short cessation, when fighting was renewed with the utmost vigor. The Union soldiers made terrible havoc, crowded the enemy back until they finally drove them over our breastworks in utter confusion. From eleven, A.M., to one, P.M., there was but little fighting. Each army seemed waiting to see what the other was about to do. Just after one, P.M., the silence was broken; and not less than one hundred and fifty guns on each side belched forth the messengers of death. The most terrible thunderstorm was nothing to be compared to the succession of crashing sounds which rent the air.

Although the college was a hospital, which, according to the military law of all civilized nations, should not have been used for any hostile purpose, yet Gen. Lee reconnoitred the position of our army from its cupola. From this inspection he evidently discovered that the point held by Hancock was the weakest.

At 2.30, P.M., Pickett's division of Longstreet's corps emerged from the woods of the Seminary Ridge, and moved towards our left centre, where Hancock commanded. This division of the rebel army was supported on the left by Pettigrew's brigade, and on the right by Wright's and Wilcox's brigades. As this mass of men moved on, when they had passed about one-third of the space between the two armies, the Union batteries, which had been covered by a grove, opened a tremendous fire of shell

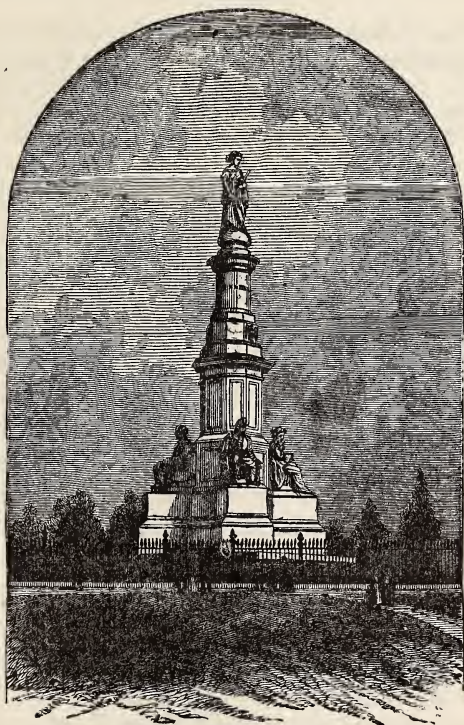
and grape upon them. They seemed staggered for a few moments, then they advanced with terrific yellings. In a moment, as it were, an awful roar proceeded from a discharge of thousands of muskets and rifles. Then the line staggered in front, and a few rebels were seen moving backwards. Two men were seen carrying a single battle-flag. Men and officers fled, flying before our victorious army. A rebel corps appeared rapidly advancing towards the Seminary Ridge. The Union soldiers waited quietly until the rebels came to the Emmettsburg Road, and then opened so tremendously upon them, that they fell like the grass before the scythe. The rebel soldiers had been made to believe that they were fighting only with the Pennsylvania militia; but they were now undeceived, and, in utter astonishment, exclaimed, "The Army of the Potomac!" Nevertheless, they still pressed on, and came up to the mouth of the Union army's cannon, and were swept down by hundreds. As they wavered under this terrible fire, Gen. Webb shouted out, "Boys, the enemy is ours!" and, as if in a moment, thirty-five hundred rebel soldiers were made prisoners, and fifteen stands of colors were taken. One of Pickett's generals, who had been wounded, upon half rising to look around him, exclaimed, "The whole division has disappeared as in a moment." Two of the Union generals, Hancock and Gibbon, were wounded in this engagement. The rebel General Garnett was killed, and Gens. Kemper and Armistead were wounded, the latter mortally.

"To complete our victory on our whole line, the Pennsylvania Reserves were called upon to make a charge upon a battery which the enemy had been using to annoy them, placed on the hill just in front, and from which they had been driven the evening before. Our men took the battery, three hundred prisoners, and five thousand stands of arms, and drove the enemy half a mile beyond the line they had occupied during the day. This took place about five, P.M., and with it terminated the battle of Gettysburg."

Thus ended the three-days' fighting at Gettysburg, resulting in the entire defeat of the rebel army. Lee gathered up the remnants of his soldiers, and hastened to recross the Potomac.

From this defeat, the rebel army never recovered. All they accomplished afterwards was like Micawber "waiting for something to turn up."

In this decisive victory, fought upon our soil, our glorious Commonwealth is well entitled to a full share of praise. Two of her generals, Meade and Hancock, were honored sharers in commanding those patriotic soldiers, who, by their vigorous fighting, not only drove the rebels from the soil of Pennsylvania, but also saved the nation.



SOLDIERS' MONUMENT. (GETTYSBURG.).

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE SURFACE AND PRODUCTIONS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Face of the Country — Geology — Lakes and Rivers — Climate — Soil and Productions — Anthracite Coal — Where found — Mining-Operations — Mouth of a Coal Mine — Coal Shute, Dumper, and Breaker — Face of a Coal-Breaker — Picking Slate at a Screen — Total Product of Anthracite — Bituminous Coal — Where found — Mines — Product of Bituminous Coal.

**F**ACE OF THE COUNTRY. — Pennsylvania exhibits a greater diversity of surface than any other State in the Union. Its mountains occupy the southern, central, and eastern counties; and, although they are all portions of the great Appalachian chain, they are named for the different locations near which they are found. They cover about one-fourth of the State, running in parallel ridges from north-east to south-west. They never rise to any great altitude, being seldom over two thousand feet. Just below Easton, on the Delaware, is the South Mountain; north-west of that are the Blue, or Kittatinny Mountains, and the Broad Mountain, lying south of the north branch of the Susquehanna. Across the river, this mountain is known by the name of Tuscarora; just beyond is Siding Hill, nearly south of Juniata River; and now we come to the Alleghany Mountains proper, which separate the Atlantic slope and the Mississippi Valley. Laurel and Chestnut Ridges are two very small ones, crossing the Ohio slope. Of the height of these mountains, South Mountain is less than one thousand, and the Blue Mountain within fifteen hundred feet. Broad Mountain is said to be higher at its immediate base than the Alleghany range, but is less in elevation above the sea. The valleys between these various ridges are in some cases very narrow, at others broadening out to a distance of fifteen or



thirty miles. The entire range covers a space of two hundred miles; and this is the point of the greatest width the Alleghany range attains in its course from Maine to Alabama. The north of the State presents high and rugged hills: the west is also hilly, and the south-east and south-west moderately so, but at times level. The rivers in the western part of the State sometimes have shores many hundred feet in height; and the valleys show that they were formed by running water.

**GEOLOGY.**—The south-eastern portion of Pennsylvania, taking in the southern parts of Bucks and Montgomery, all of Philadelphia and Delaware, and the southern portions of Chester, Lancaster, and York Counties, is filled with rocks belonging to the stratified primary class, which are interspersed by regular veins of unstratified rocks, as granite, sienite, &c. In Chester and Montgomery Counties, north of this belt, are marble and limestone; and farther north, considerable gneiss, talc, and mica slate are found. Yet farther north, stretching across the State, from the Delaware River, above Trenton, to the Maryland line, is red sandstone. This is traversed by dikes of trap-rock or greenstone. The rock is usually composed of felspar and hornblende, and is an igneous production. Another belt of primary rock, generally called South Mountain, commences just below Easton, stretches south-west-erly to the Maryland line. Above the primary rock is a layer of white sandstone, and above this a broad belt of limestone. The next rock is slate, overlying the limestone; and next above the slate is a stratum of white or gray, sometimes reddish or greenish, silicious sandstones. In this formation is found the fossiliferous iron ore so extensively worked in the State. Next comes an argillaceous slaty-blue limestone, of moderate thickness. In some bands of this, abundance of fossil remains are discovered, with occasional iron ore. The next formation above is a coarse-grained, yellowish-white sandstone, in which are many fossils: some iron is also found in it. We now come to strata of slate of dark gray, greenish, and olive color, intersected with argillaceous sandstone of a green color. Above this last formation are brown-red shales and sandstone mingled with buff and gray layers, which are good building-material.

Over these is seen hard coarse gray sandstone, in which are pebbles, with frequent bands of dark slate of a green cast. We now approach the rocks bearing coal; but although occasionally carbonaceous slate, and even scales of coal, are found, still we are hundreds of feet below the true coal-bearing regions. The coal formation includes all the anthracite and bituminous region; but above and between it and the coal are red shales and sandstone. Directly below the coal is a series of massive strata, consisting of light-colored sandstone and coarse silicious collections. No coal *is ever* found below this last formation. The seams of coal are separated by soft argillaceous clay of a bluish tint, or light gray sandstone, or by dark-colored slate and shales.

Dr. George Smith, in his "Geology of Delaware County," says, "Of the magnificent series of deposits entombing the remains of a succession of organized beings, found in other sections of our country, this county does not present a single stratum. Our rocks were either formed before such beings were called into existence, or every trace of their remains has been effaced by the great subterranean heat to which they have been subjected." Dr. Smith's work deserves the careful perusal of all our citizens.

LAKES AND RIVERS. — Lake Erie is the only lake worthy to be noticed, and bounds the State on the north-west for about fifty miles. Delaware River separates the State from New Jersey and Delaware, flowing south, and empties into Delaware Bay. Large ships can enter its waters as far as Philadelphia, ninety-six miles from the sea, and sloops and steamboats to Trenton, thirty miles farther up. The Susquehanna is the largest river in the State; but it is navigable only at high water in the spring and autumn. It enters Pennsylvania from New York, crosses the entire State, dividing it into two unequal portions, the larger one being on the west. It is very slightly affected by the tides, from its rapid descent to Chesapeake Bay, into which it flows. West Branch and Juniata from the west, and the Swatara and Conestoga from the east, are tributaries of the Susquehanna. The Lehigh and Schuylkill, between the Susquehanna and Delaware, flow from the latter, and are

each about one hundred miles in length. The Ohio is in the western part of the State, extending about fifty miles. It is formed by the conjunction of the Alleghany and the Monongahela. It is navigable for large steamers to Pittsburg, which is its head. The length of the Alleghany is about three hundred miles; but it is navigable only at high water for small steamers, for two hundred miles. The Monongahela is two hundred miles long, but is navigable for only sixty miles at high water. The Youghiogheny and the Beaver are small unimportant rivers; the former being a branch of the Monongahela, and the latter of the Ohio. Canals are found more or less on these rivers, with the exception of the Monongahela and Youghiogheny.

CLIMATE. — It is a well-known fact, ascertained by travellers, that, in ascending a mountain, the change in the climate is very similar to that of migrating north. As we travel north, the climate gradually lowers; and a visible effect is perceived as respects vegetation. The trees are smaller and more shrubby; the fruits are less numerous, and not so large and fair; until, pursuing our journey towards the north pole, we arrive at a point where there are no trees, no fruit, no vegetation whatever. So, also, as we ascend a mountain, though the trees are large at its base, and the soil fertile, yet, as we advance upward, trees diminish in size, fruit becomes more scanty and less perfect, until, upon arriving at a certain height, vegetation entirely disappears.

Pennsylvania, from the fact of its level surface in many parts, and mountains in others, may be said to possess almost every variety of climate. In a hot day Philadelphia is the hottest place to be found north of the torrid zone. With a nearly level surface lying between the Delaware and Schuylkill Rivers (especially the old part of it), it presents very much what seems like the focus of a burning-glass, and the heat becomes almost unendurable. It is not strange, therefore, that all the inhabitants of this city who can, leave it for Cape May, Atlantic City, Newport, and the mountains. The latter, at their bases and at a moderate ascent, afford some of the most cooling and healthful retreats that can be found in any State of the Union. Hence



Cresson and Altoona, and many other places bordering the mountains, are among the most beautiful and comfortable resorts, far superior in general to any bordering upon the ocean, and more conducive to health. A gentleman in Philadelphia once said to the writer, "I have spent my summers in Newport for twenty-five years; but the last summer I spent at Cresson, and I derived more benefit from it than I ever received in Newport: hereafter I shall always go to the mountains in summer."

The climate of Pennsylvania is subject to more sudden changes in the eastern than in the western part of the State. There seems to have been but little change in the climate since the shores of the Delaware were first settled by Europeans; for they inform us, that then, one winter was so mild, that vegetation was green; and the next, that our great river, the Delaware, was frozen over. The present inhabitants can testify to somewhat the same experience, as, even in January and February, the weather has been so mild, that vegetation has begun to revive, and, as early as the month of May, we have had several days in succession so hot as to be very uncomfortable; and, in a succeeding winter, the river was frozen over, and cold weather extended late into the spring.

**SOIL AND PRODUCTIONS.** — Among the old thirteen States, no richer or more productive soil existed than was to be found in Pennsylvania. And even up to 1860 she ranked first in her production of wheat, rye, and grass-seeds, and exceeded any Northern or Middle State in Indian corn; and in buckwheat, orchard fruits, butter, hay, oats, and slaughtered animals, was second only to New York, although she is doubtless now superseded by many of her Western sisters. Still it is a question whether any State in the Union can show a more productive soil than in Lancaster County, or those farther west, and in the valleys between the mountains. Other productions are barley, live stock, cheese, wool, pease, beans, Irish potatoes, market produce, tobacco, flax, beeswax, honey, maple-sugar, with some molasses, silk, hops, hemp, wine, and sweet-potatoes. Of the mineral productions much may be said.

**ANTHRACITE COAL.** — This alone is a vast source of wealth to the State. It is unquestionably, as has well been ascertained,



of vegetable origin. It is a singular fact that it should have remained so long undiscovered; and its discovery was quite as singular. There had been legends that coal was to be found in the Lehigh district, probably emanating from the Indians; and some of the German farmers of the early times contended always that coal was to be found in "certain places," although by the masses generally they were laughed at for their credulity. The following account of its discovery near Mauch Chunk is from Dr. James of Philadelphia, who in 1804 visited some land which he owned near Sharp Mountain. He was accompanied by a guide, Philip Ginter, who, upon arriving at the summit of Mauch Chunk, descended into small pits, having the appearance of the commencement of wells, from which he threw up pieces of coal for examination; and then, while he lingered in astonishment, the earnest man gave him this description of the original discovery:—

"He said, that, when he first took up his residence in that district, he built himself a rough cabin in the forest, and supported his family by the proceeds of his rifle, being literally a hunter of the backwoods. The game he shot, including bear and deer, he carried to the nearest store, and exchanged for other necessities of life. But, at this particular time to which he then alluded, he was without a supply of food for his family; and, after being out all day with his gun in quest of it, he was returning, toward evening, over the Mauch Chunk Mountain, entirely unsuccessful and disappointed. A drizzling rain beginning to fall, and night rapidly approaching, he bent his course homeward, considering himself one of the most *forsaken* of human beings. As he strode slowly over the ground, his foot stumbled over something, which, by the stroke, was driven before him. Observing it to be black, to distinguish which there was just light enough remaining, he took it up; and, as he had often listened to the traditions of the country of the existence of coal in the vicinity, it occurred to him that this might be a portion of that *stone-coal* of which he had often heard. He accordingly took it carefully with him to the cabin, and the next day carried it to Col. Jacob Weiss, residing at what was then known by the name of Fort Allen (erected under the

auspices of Dr. Franklin). The colonel, who was alive to the subject, brought the specimen with him to Philadelphia, and submitted it to the inspection of John Nicholson and Michael Hillegas, Esqs., and also to Charles Cist, a printer, who ascertained its nature and qualities, and authorized the colonel to pay Ginter for his discovery, upon his pointing out the precise spot where he found the coal. This was readily done by acceding to Ginter's proposal of getting through the patent-office the title for a small tract of land which he supposed had never been taken up, comprising the mill-seat on which he afterwards built the mill, which had afforded a lodging the preceding night, and which he afterwards was deprived of by the claim of a prior survey."

Even as early as 1787, coal had been known to exist in the neighborhood of Pottsville, and searches were constantly made for it; but it was so different from any that had previously been found, that it was deemed of no particular value, and, as no way could be devised to burn it, after a time the search was abandoned, until at last a blacksmith named Whetstone discovered some, and immediately made experiments upon it, to use in his shop; and so much did he interest the community, that inquiry into the character and extent of the deposit, and the possible uses it might be put to, began to be instituted. Among those who had faith in its existence was Judge Cooper; and it was through such persons as he that searches were continued, in the face of prejudice and discouraging circumstances. Among the first, if not the first, to make explorations, were the Messrs. Potts; but in no attempt were they successful. Upon their ceasing operations, William Morris became owner of the lands lying at the head of the Schuylkill; and, about the year 1800, he found coal, a considerable quantity of which he took to Philadelphia, where he was not successful in finding many to coincide with him in his belief of its utility.

For six or seven years from this time, no further notice was taken of this coal, when Peter Bastons made some discoveries of its deposit, while erecting the Forge in the Valley; and a blacksmith named David Berlin acted upon the suggestions of Whetstone, and tried to induce others to join him. In 1810 a

practical chemist made an analysis of this coal, and became convinced that it contained all the properties suitable for combustion; and, to illustrate his principle, he built a furnace on Front Street, between Philadelphia and Kensington, applying to it three strong bellows, and obtained such an immense *white-heat* from the coal as served to fully show its qualities, and ultimately gained its introduction into the city.

Two years later than this, Col. George Shoemaker and Nicholas Allen discovered coal on a piece of land, which in times past was called "Centreville," about one mile from Pottsville. They raised several wagon-loads of it, but could find no purchaser; and Mr. Allen, getting discouraged, sold out to Mr. Shoemaker, who carried ten wagon-loads to Philadelphia. But so great was the prejudice still felt against it, that, notwithstanding the successful experiment of the chemist, a few only could be found willing to purchase it; and, upon the trials which they made proving unsuccessful, he was denounced as a vile impostor; and, to escape arrest, he drove thirty miles out of his way, in "*a circuitous route, to avoid the officers of the law!*" But, fortunately, among the purchasers was a firm of iron factors in Delaware county, who announced a successful experiment through the newspapers; and from that time it grew in favor, and the intelligent portion of the community foresaw its future value.

The first successful experiment to *generate steam* with anthracite coal was made in 1825, at the iron works in Phoenixville.

Large quantities of anthracite coal are found in the counties of Schuylkill, Dauphin, Lebanon, Carbon, Northumberland, Columbia, and Luzerne, being in the middle part of the Eastern portion of the State. This region is watered by the rivers Susquehanna, Lehigh, and Schuylkill, and their numerous branches.

The whole area of the anthracite coal region extends over four hundred and seventy square miles, and is comprised in three great ranges, separated by mountains. Beginning at the southern, this range is seventy-three miles in length, and averages two miles in breadth. At the Lehigh River, where it begins, it is very narrow, but increases in width as we go westward. Near Minersville, about the centre of the range, it is

five miles wide, decreasing in width at the west of this place. At Tremont it is only three miles wide, from which it separates into two ranges, one coming to a point on the Susquehanna, and the other reaching into Lykens Valley. The area of this range is one hundred and forty-six miles. In it are comprised the Lehigh, Tamaqua, Pottsville, Swatara, the Lykens Valley, and the Dauphin regions. From this range, in 1867, 4,334,820 tons of coal were mined.

The next field, going north, is divided into two regions by the Locust Mountain: the one lying south of the mountain is Mehanoy; and the other, on the north, Shamokin. The former contains forty-one, and the latter, fifty square miles. From this field, in 1867, 3,307,327 tons were mined.

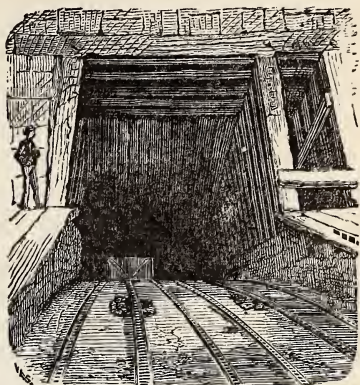
The northern range is the largest in all the anthracite region of Pennsylvania, being fifty miles in length, and averaging about four in breadth. Its form resembles a great trough, quite shallow at the eastern end, and deep at the western. This range comprises the districts of Carbondale, Scranton, Pittston, Wilkesbarre, Plymouth, Nanticoke, and Shickshinney. The product of this field in 1867 was 5,328,000 tons.

There are several smaller tracts lying between these, in what are called the Lehigh coal-basins, including Beaver Meadow, the Hazleton, the Big Black Creek, and the Little Black Creek. The area of these intersecting ranges is thirty square miles; and in 1867 the product was 2,954,989 tons.

In the process of mining coal, much and steady improvement has been made. The earliest plan was sinking shafts twenty to thirty feet, and hoisting the coal into large vessels, by a windlass; and when the water became troublesome, as it usually did below thirty feet, the shaft was abandoned, and another one sunk, and the same process repeated. This method was soon supplanted by *drifts* (openings above water level, which entered the mine with a surface inclined sufficiently to drain off the water). The openings of these drifts were made at the heads of veins on the sides of hills, and the coal brought out in wheelbarrows. In 1827 railways were introduced into mines; and in the accompanying cut is shown the mouth of a coal mine with its railways. From that time until 1834 coal was mined solely by drifts.



In the mean time, horse-power and the gin were substituted for the windlass; and by this improvement the water could be cleared from the shaft with greater facility, and the veins penetrated somewhat deeper. But, even with this advantage, it was to a comparatively shallow depth they were able to reach, and the coal was proportionately poor; for it has been clearly demonstrated that the coal found near the surface is never of as good a quality as that mined from very low depths.



MOUTH OF COAL-MINE.

After the introduction of railways, the cars of which were drawn by mules, a new impulse was given to mining, and its shipment largely increased, as these figures will show. In 1826 the amount was nearly 17,000 tons; in 1827, over 31,000; in 1828, 47,000; in 1829, 79,000; in 1830, 89,000; in 1831, 81,000. It was about this time that coal was used generally in stoves and grates, and now it was that the trade began to assume the gigantic proportions to which it has since grown. This sudden growth induced a vast amount of speculation, which, in many instances, was followed by such utter ruin, that, after a time, few ventured into mining-operations alone. Many coal companies were formed, and chartered by the Legislature; but the practical experience of those concerned in the trade soon aroused a strong opposition against them, and this feeling, from 1831 to 1839, was especially active, during which time the trade fell off at three separate periods in the amount of the annual product, from the years respectively preceding. This feeling against the monopolists was strengthened by the public journals; and these two causes combined saved the country from the evils which speculation always produces.

In the years 1838, 1839, and 1840, a patent for the smelting of iron ore by anthracite coal was obtained by Dr. Weisenheimer of New York, who afterwards disposed of it to Mr.

Crane; but upon discovering that a furnace which had been blown in at Mauch Chunk had used anthracite as fuel, and fearing litigation, he abandoned his enterprise. The furnace at Mauch Chunk continued its operations until 1840, having, in the mean time, been many times blown in; when, finally, it was discontinued. A furnace at Pottsville was started just prior to this time; and, as it was decidedly more thorough in its results, the citizens of that place claim the credit of having introduced it *successfully*. The erection of this furnace is due to Burd Patterson, Esq. This was soon followed by one in the vicinity, called the Valley Furnace; and after the passage of the tariff act, in 1842, they were multiplied all over the State, wherever coal and iron ore were to be mined.

To resume the process of mining: we will now describe it below water-level, which means that coal is mined at some point *below* the bed of the adjacent river, creek, or rivulet. The first step is to raise the water accumulated in the mine; and, for this purpose, a steam-engine and pumps are necessary, which must be stationed at the most favorable location, twenty or thirty feet north of the crop of the vein, and as near to a main railroad as possible, or so that a branch or lateral road can be laid from it to the place where the engine is to be erected, in order that a sufficient supply of water for the steam-boilers can be readily obtained. The descent into a mine is called a *slope*; and thus mines below water-level are called *slopes* in contradistinction to those above, called *drifts*. The engines are usually of from forty, fifty, and sixty horse-power, of horizontal high-pressure, and working with a slide-valve.

The location of the engine having been decided upon, a slope, or inclined plane, is driven down into the vein at the same angle of inclination; the thickness of the vein being usually excavated. The slope is wide enough to allow two railway-tracks, from thirty-six to forty inches wide each, to be laid, leaving room one side (sometimes on both) for the pumps, and travelling-road on the other (or sometimes between the two tracks) for the miners. The width of the slope is usually from eighteen to twenty-two feet. It is driven down about two hundred feet for the *first level*, then begin the gangways, running at right

angles from the slope, east and west. The slope and gangways form a capital T. The latter often extend three or four miles, having turnouts at intervals for trains to pass each other. They are about seven feet high, and wide enough for a railroad-track, on which a car containing from one to two tons of coal may pass freely.

These preliminaries having been arranged, then commences the digging out, or *mining, the coal*. On each side of the slope,

for a distance of thirty or forty feet, the coal is left undisturbed; and, in mining dialect, the coal thus left is called *pillars*, which often remain for a number of years to strengthen

and support the slope, as, in an extensive mine and a good vein, it is needed. There is also a *pillar*,

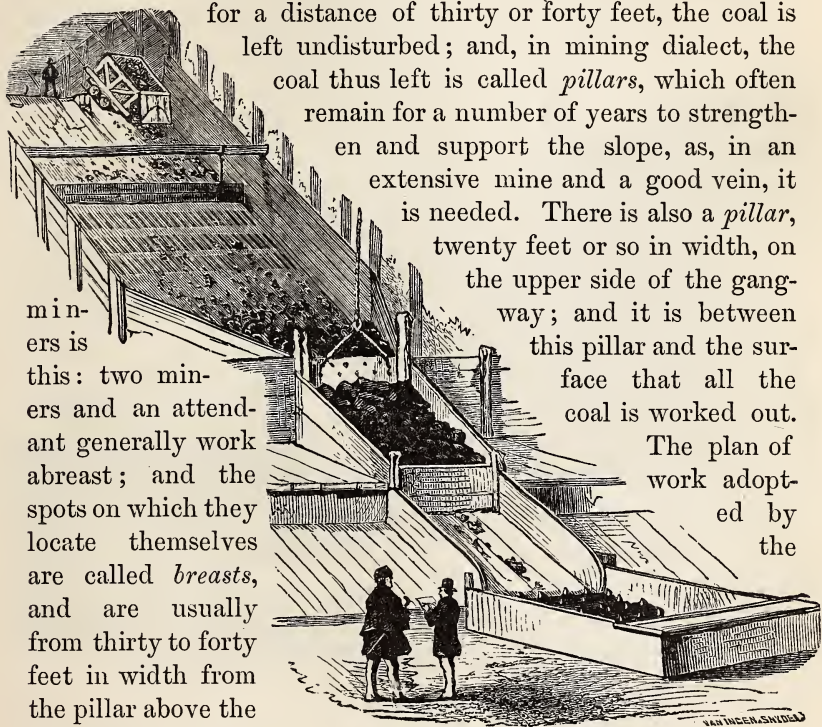
twenty feet or so in width, on the upper side of the gang-

way; and it is between this pillar and the surface that all the coal is worked out.

The plan of work adopted by the

miners is this: two miners and an attendant generally work abreast; and the spots on which they locate themselves are called *breasts*, and are usually from thirty to forty feet in width from the pillar above the gangway up to the surface. An open-

ing is then made in the pillar about the centre of the breast, four or five feet wide, and a *shute* is built through the whole extent of the breast, down which the coal slides into a car in the gangway, which, as soon as it is filled, is drawn by mules up to the mouth of the slope. At a given signal, it is drawn up to the mouth of a breaker, from whence it is dumped

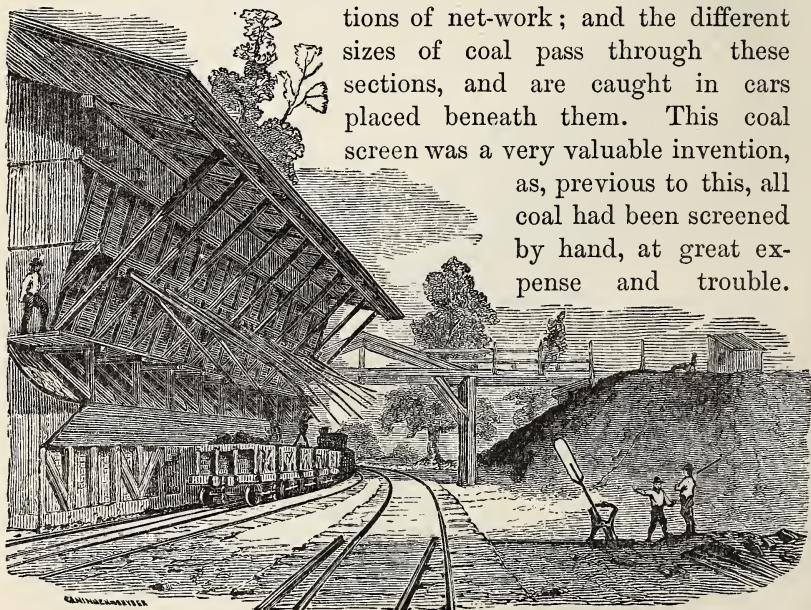


COAL SHUTE, DUMPER, AND BREAKER.



into a smaller shute, and falls into the breaker, which consists of revolving rollers with projecting teeth; and by this breaker it is broken into pieces of all sizes. Of a coal shute, dumper, and breaker used at the present time, a view will be had in the illustration. This gives the three combined; but in the succeeding cut a full view of the face of the coal-breaker is had, showing an empty car on its way back to the foot of the gangway, to be refilled.

From the rollers, the broken coal falls into screens, which also revolve. These screens are divided into four or five sections of net-work; and the different sizes of coal pass through these sections, and are caught in cars placed beneath them. This coal screen was a very valuable invention, as, previous to this, all coal had been screened by hand, at great expense and trouble.



FACE OF COAL-BREAKER.

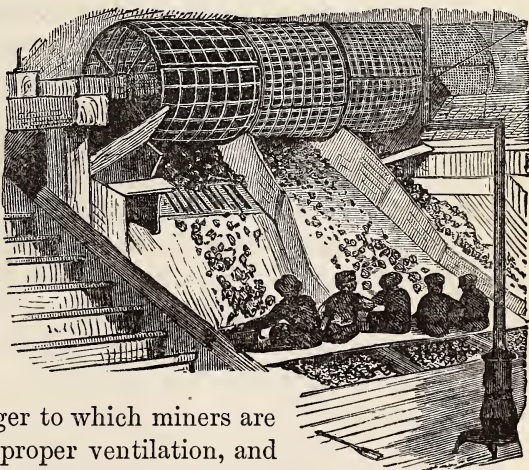
The screen was then from five to eight feet long, and from one and three-quarters to two and a half feet in diameter, and was placed in a frame slightly inclined. The coal entered at the elevated end; and the screen was turned round by hand, like a grindstone.

When breakers were introduced, the screens, as before, were made of bar-iron, riveted on frame-work. Much trouble was occasioned from their liability to break; and all work had to be



suspended while they were being repaired: but, after many mechanical experiments, a citizen of Pottsville invented a machine by which the very largest and thickest wire is wrought into shape by heavy machinery suitable for weaving. "Wire as thick as an ordinary ramrod is crimped by this process, which merely consists of a heavy hammer, suspended in frame-work, which is made to fall upon the wire placed under it, upon a surface allowing it to receive the particular *bend* desired, after which it is woven into frames of about three feet square. These frames are then placed over a large wooden cylinder, and rounded, when two or more sections are pointed and riveted together, which completes their circular form. The screen thus complete is removed from the bench, and joined with another of the same dimensions, but of larger or smaller net-work. These screens are remarkably durable, and are not the least feature which has tended to bring coal-breakers into universal use."<sup>1</sup>

We give a plate of a screen, in which are seen the different sections of net-work, and a group of boys engaged in picking out slate from the coal as it is dropped from these sections, after which the pure coal falls into its appropriate shutes, and is deposited in cars ready to receive it; and, when these are sufficiently full, the shutes are closed.



PICKING OUT SLATE.

The greatest danger to which miners are exposed is from improper ventilation, and gaseous explosions. Gas is constantly given out from coal, not only when exposed to heat, or unusual compression, but also under ordinary atmospheric conditions. A person entering a mine for the first time would

<sup>1</sup> Eli Bowen's Pictorial Sketch-Book of Pennsylvania, p. 190.

notice a peculiar singing noise, caused, without doubt, by the issue of gas from the coal. In mines of certain kinds of coal, the noise is unceasing. The quantity of gas produced varies very much according to the nature of the coal and the amount of atmospheric pressure. One coal-seam in England, said to be a particularly fiery one, threw out gas so rapidly, that by boring a little hole in the mineral, and applying a light, a jet flame would be produced. In this case the purity of the gas would prevent explosion; for it is only by admixture of atmospheric air that this can be brought about. It has been ascertained that the quantity of gas given out from four acres of coal "by singing" was ten thousand hogsheads per minute. Seams of coal vary much in this respect; some containing scarcely any gas at all. Besides this constant issue by singing, there is another way in which gas is met with; namely, in "blowers," or puffs of gas occurring at long cracks in the seams, or at faults in the bed, sometimes at mere holes. These "blowers" have sometimes been known to light the chief passages of mines for years, and are considered a safe way of using up the gas. But, when the works of a mine have been placed too near a fault, the pressure of gas has been so great as to force the coal forward, separating it from the main bed, and thus involving all in the mine in a general destruction.

In addition to these modes occurring in the natural state of the coal, constant accumulations in portions of mines already partially worked are found; and, where the roof is partly fallen, there is always much danger to be apprehended, as the gas must of necessity be mixed with atmospheric air, thus rendering it highly explosive. They are also found in faulted districts, where the seam is broken, the result of pressure at some remote time. The danger arises, in all these cases, from the fact that mining operations cannot be conducted without lights; and thus experiments have been directed to producing a lamp which would guard against any possible accident. About the year 1820, Sir Humphry Davy invented a lamp upon the principle that the explosion of gas would not pass through small tubes; and he found that the length of the tubes made no difference, but that wire gauze of the proper dimensions answered the same

purpose. Thus was obviated the necessity for an outside glass; and it could be taken among the most explosive substances without danger. The gauze was usually made of iron wire; and there were in it seven hundred and eighty-four holes to the square inch. Its superiority over other lamps was, that it gave more light, was more portable, with at least equal safety. Mr. George Stephenson, the engineer, invented a lamp called a "Geordie," which differed from the Davy lamp, in having a glass tube, which increased the light, and kept the flame steady, from its being protected from the air. This added to its safety while perfect; but the glass was liable to be broken, and then it became very dangerous. In some of the Belgian mines, a lamp called "the Muesseler lamp," was used; but it was complicated, and thus inferior to Sir H. Davy's. About this time the Clanny lamp was introduced; and several others have subsequently been invented; but they are all made upon the principle of the Davy lamp: among these are the Boty, the Eloin, the Glover, the Upton and Roberts, and the Hall and Fife.

Much improvement has been made in ventilating mines; and the means taken to check fire-damp, or *grisou*, dispose of much of the accumulation of gas. This is performed by a single workman, who, clothed in garments of moistened leather, his face protected by a mask, with spectacles of glass, crawls into the mine, holding forward a long pole with a lighted torch at the end, with which he sounds the irregularities of the roof, the front of the excavations, and sets fire to the *grisou*. But this is attended with much inconvenience and danger, as it has to be repeated many times a day in some mines. Then was devised the method of *eternal lamps*, which, being kept constantly burning, consumed the *grisou* as fast as it was produced; but this was soon abandoned on account of the production of carbonic acid and azote. At length the property possessed by platina in sponge, which facilitates the combustion of the hydrogen with which it comes in contact, was made use of; and pellets, composed of one part of platina, and two parts clay, were manufactured, and placed at the points where the *grisou* collected. But all these efforts offered only a temporary palliative, substituting for a great peril many lesser ones, which, although perhaps not as dangerous, were equally troublesome.



The mode of ventilation adopted in this region is this: Atmospheric air is admitted at the mouth of the slope; and this air, after penetrating the mine in every avenue, is drawn in a current through an escape-hole, having a burning furnace over it, by which a regular and intense heat is kept up. The draught thus given is very strong, as there is no other escape for it; and the noxious gases of the mine are carried along with it. If these gases are accumulated in places where the atmospheric air cannot penetrate, they are scattered by the miners, by canvasses, or banners; and, when there is not sufficient air, revolving fans worked by machinery are used; and thus the air is kept comparatively pure. The fan was introduced in 1857-58, in Pennsylvania, by John Louden Beadle, a practical and able mining engineer. He has since that time improved his fan, and system of ventilation; and it is now the best method known. Since the opening of the anthracite coal trade, all the regions of the State have produced 219,981,040 tons.

**BITUMINOUS COAL.** — The region in which this coal is found covers an area of nearly thirteen thousand square miles, and reaches through twenty-four counties. It is all found west of the Alleghany Mountains. Large mines have been opened in Bradford, Lycoming, Westmoreland, Washington, and Green Counties, and in several others. Pittsburg is the great centre of trade in the bituminous coal. This coal was discovered and used much earlier than the anthracite. It was first burned by the blacksmiths, and then in forges and furnaces, and lastly in public and private buildings. Large manufacturing establishments are to be found scattered over nearly the whole of its vast area. Great quantities of it are carried to the Ohio and Mississippi; and it is used in towns and cities from Pittsburg to New Orleans. In 1864 it is estimated that there were 5,839,000 tons of bituminous coal mined in Pennsylvania.

The production of bituminous coal for 1873 was 22,585,222 tons.



## CHAPTER XVII.

### PRODUCTION OF IRON AND OIL IN PENNSYLVANIA.

Pennsylvania compared with other States — Cornwall Hills — Counties, where found — Chester County — Prohibitory Law — Forges in Bucks County — Lebanon — Manufacturing Baptists — Maria Forge — Henry William Steigel — Valley Forge — William Denning — Various Forges — Anthracite Coal for Smelting — Jacobs's Creek — Dunbar Creek — Fairchance Furnace — Red Stone — Charcoal Furnaces — Bituminous Coal — Pig-Iron — Total Product — Geology of Petroleum — Naphtha — Venango County — Devonian Rocks — Daddow — Indians burn Oil — Excitement on Discovery of Oil — Oil Companies — Prospecting — Oil Creek — A Derrick.

THIS State has long had a high reputation for the production of iron. Indeed, so much has been said on this subject, that one is almost ready to suppose there was more iron ore in this Commonwealth than in any or all the other States in the Union. But such an idea is wide of the truth; for New York, New Jersey, Virginia, and several other States, are much more abundant in this ore than Pennsylvania. But, though less in quantity, the skilful manner in which she has developed her resources in this respect entitles her to the highest praise; and it must be evident that this commendation is justly bestowed from the fact that she produces more manufactured iron than all the other States combined. The most extended deposit of iron ore is found at Cornwall Hills, in Lebanon county; and some two hundred thousand tons are taken annually from its mines. In following out the net-work of railways, and describing the cities and towns along their various routes, reference will be made to the deposits of this ore. For the present, it is sufficient to say that considerable quantities are found in Chester, Lehigh, Lebanon, Berks, Cambria, Montgomery, Franklin, Clarion, Montour, Armstrong, Juniata, Blair,

Northampton, Indiana, Lancaster, Clearfield, Lycoming, Huntingdon, Cumberland.

The first effort made to make this ore available for manufacturing purposes was in Chester county, as early as 1720, where a forge, called Coventry, was erected; and in this forge was produced the first iron made from the native ore. These works are still in operation. About the same time, a furnace and forge were established at Manatawny, in Montgomery County. In the year 1723 the Assembly, upon petition of proprietors of iron-works, passed an act prohibiting the sale of "liquor and beer" in the vicinity of their premises.

The number of furnaces in blast in the Province, as early as 1728, was four, all producing iron for home purposes. A furnace known as the Warwick was erected on French Creek, in Chester County, in 1736. The Cornwall Cold Blast Furnace, which Peter Grubb erected in 1742, was much used during the Revolutionary War. Previous to 1743 a company purchased a tract of land at Durham, in Bucks County, and a furnace and forges were put in operation. In 1745 Colebrookdale furnace, in Lebanon County, commenced manufacturing iron.

Among the earliest manufacturers in the Province was a community of Baptists at Ephratah; and in 1750 there was carried on, under one roof, paper manufacturing, printing, book-binding; there were also a pearl-barley-mill, a grist-mill, and an oil-mill. This incident will illustrate the patriotic spirit which animated them in the great struggle for national independence: before the battle of Brandywine, Washington sent to Ephratah for paper with which to make cartridges. No paper was to be had; but these loyal Christians, without a murmur, loaded several wagons with sheets of an edition of "Bracht's Martyrs' Mirror," which was already printed for binding, and forwarded them to the army.

In 1753 Maria Forge was built at Weissport, in Carbon county, the pioneer of the Lehigh Valley in working iron ore; and this forge, having been rebuilt, is still in use.

A furnace called Elizabeth was erected about 1756, near Litiz, fourteen miles north of Lancaster. Henry William Steigel, a wealthy German baron, one of the proprietors, was

sole manager of it at one time; but, though expert and enterprising in mechanical arts, he was too risky and presuming for the inhabitants of that region, and he retained possession but a short time. He founded the village of Manheim in Lancaster County, in 1762, and built there large iron and glass furnaces. Near these works, and also in the neighborhood of Elizabeth Furnace, he erected castles which he mounted with cannon. One of these castles near Shaefferstown is still recognized as "Steigel's Folly." He was the first manufacturer in this country of stoves, which may still be seen in some of the old families of Lancaster.

Valley Forge, at the entrance of Valley Creek, where it empties into the Schuylkill, was in the glen where Washington encamped in the winter of 1777; and it was from this forge that the glen took its name. A cotton factory has long since superseded the forge.

In Cumberland and York Counties, many forges and furnaces were in operation prior to the Revolution. A blacksmith of Cumberland County, one William Denning, to manifest his zeal towards his country in her trying hour, manufactured a curious kind of wrought-iron cannon, consisting "of wrought-iron staves, hooped like a barrel, with bands of the same material: there were four layers of staves, breaking joint, which were firmly bound together, and then boxed and breeched like other cannon."

Those who are interested in viewing relics of this character, we refer to the Philadelphia Arsenal, where an unfinished specimen of this kind of ordnance is yet preserved.

About forty miles from Lancaster, there were, in 1786, forges, rolling and slitting mills, and seventeen furnaces. Gun-barrels were manufactured here; and a large amount of pig and bar iron was made in 1798.

Chester County, in 1798, had six forges; and Berks County, in the same year, had also six forges and the same number of furnaces. Even as early as 1733, a forge, called the Green Lane Forge, was erected on Perkiomen Creek, in this county; and in 1750 the Glasgow forges were built. These were followed by two bloomery forges,—one in 1788, and the other in 1790, which are both still in use.

After it was discovered that anthracite coal could be used in smelting iron, furnaces rapidly increased all through the State, as has been stated in the last chapter. The works in which this coal is thus used are divided into four groups. The Lehigh, in which is found the greatest amount of metal, comprehends all the establishments upon the Lehigh River and its tributaries. In 1864 there were in this group thirty furnaces; and, according to the State report for 1874, this number is increased to fifty.

The Schuylkill group is on the Schuylkill River and its tributaries. In 1864 it contained twenty-four furnaces; and statistics for 1874 show forty-seven.

The Upper Susquehanna group is above Harrisburg, on the Susquehanna River and its tributaries, and contained, in 1864, twenty-five furnaces. The State statistics show a gain of only one for 1874.

The Lower Susquehanna group is below Harrisburg, in the valley of the Susquehanna, and contained, in 1864, twenty-six furnaces: the number reported for 1874 is thirty-eight. The average consumption of iron ore and coal, for every ton of iron produced throughout the anthracite region, is, of the former, two and one-quarter tons, and, of the latter, two tons.

Of the furnaces west of the Alleghanies, the first one was built on Jacobs's Creek, about the year 1790. Cannon-balls were cast in this furnace in 1792. In 1794 Union Furnace was erected on Dunbar Creek, fourteen miles east from Brownsville; and, two years later, Fairchance Furnace was established at Uniontown, Fayette County. Another one was also located here in 1800, known as the "Red Stone." This and the preceding one were in operation in 1864, and in that year produced twelve hundred tons of iron.

Before the year 1839 iron had been made only in charcoal furnaces. These were first established in 1720, which gradually increased, until, in 1847, they reached their maximum; there being at that time one hundred and seventy in working order. Since that period, they have annually lessened. In 1854 the entire quantity of iron produced by charcoal was 116,000 tons. In 1865 the number of furnaces had de-



clined to seventy-two, fifty-nine of these being east, and thirteen west, of the Alleghany Mountains. The production of iron for that year was 58,670 tons; for the year 1867 it was increased to 60,155 tons, including 20,000 tons made in forges and bloomeries. In 1840 fifteen furnaces west of the Alleghanies used charcoal. In 1850 there were forty-six; but, of these, fourteen only were in operation in 1860. During these ten years previous, although several new ones were erected, the number closed counterbalanced them; for it was within this time that the bituminous coal engaged the attention of manufacturers, and furnaces worked by coke, or raw coal, began to be preferred.

As early as the year 1840 a furnace was built at Brady's Bend, in Armstrong County, in which iron was manufactured by coke, or raw bituminous coal, for the first time in Western Pennsylvania. This proved a successful experiment; and, at the end of five years, eight furnaces were worked with this coal. In 1865 there were forty coke and raw coal furnaces in the State, located in nine counties. Statistics for 1874 give thirty, with some counties added; while from others the furnaces have been removed.

The total production of pig-iron, and all made from anthracite, bituminous coal, and charcoal in 1867, was 839,496 tons; and, as shown by the United States census of 1870, the total product of iron ore was 1,095,486 tons.

#### OIL, OR PETROLEUM.

Oil, rock-oil, or petroleum, has been known and used, to some extent, in Canada, Burmah, Persia, and China, for ages. The lightest variety of what are scientifically called hydro-carbons has the name of naphtha. What is known as carburetted hydrogen embodies all the constituents of petroleum. When in this form, it is said to be possessed of its most volatile character. Petroleum is a compound of carbon and hydrogen; and the lighter kinds, in its native state, consist of about equal parts of carbon and hydrogen. Naphtha, cannot be confined in ordinary barrels, because the light hydrogen will find a way out, even through the pores of the wood; and, on coming to

the air, it soon becomes thick, forming bitumen, or a very heavy oil. Petroleum is only a heavier oil, containing more carbon, and less hydrogen, than naphtha. Thus it is found, that, in oil-wells, the upper oil is always heavier, thicker, and more valuable than that beneath, because it has lost a great part of its hydrogen. What are called the second oils — those found beneath the third sand-rock in Venango County of this State — are very light when found at the depth of six or seven hundred feet; but, when found at the depth of two or three hundred feet, they are heavier; and, when found at a depth of fifteen hundred feet, they exist as gas, or light naphtha. In whatever form they may exist in nature, when exposed to the atmosphere they become thick and heavy, and, whether in summer or winter, when long exposed to the air, they become solid, and form asphaltum, bitumen, cannel coal, bituminous coal, &c.

Oil has been found more abundantly in Venango County than in any other region of which we have any knowledge; and the rocks which bear it are comprehended under the Devonian period, and, consequently, are called the Devonian rocks. These rocks include the Catskill, Chemung, Portage, Genesee, Hamilton, Marcellus, Upper Helderberg, Schoharie, and Oriskany Counties of New York. They become much thinner in this locality than in other portions of the formation, being probably not more than from ten hundred to fifteen hundred feet in thickness. Daddow, in his "*Practical American Miner*," thus speaks of this region:—

"First, The several oil-bearing strata are here brought into a comparatively small thickness by the thinning of the sandstones from the east to the west, and the absence of the heavy limestones, which, farther to the south-west, overlie the Devonian oil-formation, and greatly increase the depth at which they exist. As before stated, the upper oils are always the thickest, heaviest, and most valuable, because the more volatile parts escape when near the surface. The middle oils, or those which exist at a reasonable depth from the surface,—say from three to six hundred feet deep,—are the most abundant, because at this depth it exists as naphtha, and contains the greater portion of its hydrogen; but, at a greater depth,—say

from one thousand to fifteen hundred feet, — the hydro-carbons exist principally in a state of gas, which to the present time has not been utilized. There may be exceptions to this depth in the West, since there we may expect heavy oils at a greater depth, on account of the lower temperature which always existed there.

“Second, The oil-formations of North-western Pennsylvania lie along the north-eastern outcrops of the Great Basin. Here the Devonian rocks approach the surface, bringing their oils within a practical depth below the influence of the atmosphere, which thickens, and above the chemical action which holds the hydro-carbons in a state of gas.

“Third, The even, undisturbed, and horizontal position of the strata in this region is extremely favorable to the existence or preservation of the oil in its fountains, which are thus sealed for use. The fine-grained texture of the sandstones, and their solid, unbroken spread, the close and tenacious strata of shales and slates, and the intercalating clays, prevent the escape of the gas or oil in exhausting quantities.

“Fourth, The middle position of this region, between the extreme heat of the East and the low temperature of the West, was favorable to the original formation of oil; and this we think one of the great secrets of the abundance of oils along the central portions of the Great Alleghany coal-field.”<sup>1</sup>

In the early settlement of Western Pennsylvania by the whites, there were traces of oil upon the rivers and in low places, which the Indians sometimes gathered up, and set on fire, when they worshipped the Great Spirit. They also used it as medicine, to which the whites gave the name of Seneca oil. If search had been made then, no doubt the oil would have been discovered. Who knows but that the “mountain of silver” described by the Indians to the first settlers may not yet be found within the bounds of our State?

When it was first announced that oil had been found in Venango County, I was in Philadelphia. In earlier life I had witnessed several seasons of speculation; as that of “Ohio,” and in “eastern lands,” in Maine, the “Multicaulus,” or

<sup>1</sup> See Practical American Miner, p. 656.

raising of silk-worms, &c. In these I had known many who had lost all their property. But these speculations were mere babes, and bore little or no comparison to the "oil-fever," after a few producing wells had been opened. The whole community was astir. Merchants, politicians, mechanics, physicians, clergymen, everybody seemed crazy. Fortunes had been made in a day. Millions more were to be speedily realized. The slow and common way of accumulating money had forever passed. Thanks were given, and "Te Deums" sung, for this wonderful discovery, just when it was most needed. The oil was to pay, and ten times more than pay, the cost of the civil war, then in progress. It was to draw all the hard money from the Old World, and concentrate the wealth of the Indies—East and West—in Pennsylvania. The days of toil and labor for her sons had passed, never more to return; and the days of silks, satins, jewels, diamonds, and all other embellishments for her daughters, were at hand. Companies for purchasing lands in Venango County, and developing wells, were formed.

"Thick as locusts on the  
Land of Nile,"

Men were drawn into this vortex, who never speculated before,—old men who had hoarded their earnings, men of character, ministers of the gospel, elders and deacons of churches, ladies, widows, members of churches, hasting to be rich. Land in Western Pennsylvania went up from a few cents an acre to thousands of dollars; and he who bought at the highest figure was sure to augment his fortune a thousand-fold. I met a clergyman one day all agog. "Why don't you go into this oil business," said he. "I made a thousand dollars this morning before breakfast. I am astonished that you do not go into it! Have you heard what brother N—— has made out of it? Why, he made a hundred thousand dollars in a week."

Any man could start a company; and, if he could get some good citizens of *character* to be president and directors, his fortune was made. Many such men are to be found in Philadelphia, and other parts of this State, to-day, who with sorrow,



shame, regret, and poverty, look back to that period of ill omen when they lent their names to aid what turned out to be one of the most foolish, wicked, victimizing systems of fraud and deception the world ever saw.

In the midst of this general excitement, *prospecting* for oil became sufficiently amusing, and one would have supposed the days of the old astrologers and necromancers had returned; for the "diviner's rod" and the "witch-hazel" were brought into requisition to point out just where the wonderful commodity was to be found; and so potent was this last-named article, that it would thus point, despite the strength of the man who held it to prevent it from so doing; and, in some cases, the attraction of the oil was so great, that the bark would be twisted from off it in his hand. What demonstration could be more convincing than this? Surely none, except the guidance of the "spirits," who also came in for their share.

Oil Creek, near Titusville, was for some time the centre of attraction for these fortune-seekers. It was a sterile and barren territory. Over rocks, and up the sides of mountains, and all along the creek, and these ascents, to their very tops, almost an innumerable number of derricks was erected. Instead of the desolation and wildness of the region, as it had ever been until this period, the number of the derricks, the smoke and steam of the engines, the clatter of the bull-wheels, the shouts of teamsters and miners, the running to and fro of men bespattered with mud, seemed to give activity and life to every thing.

As soon as a place for boring a well had been selected, the first thing to be done was to build a derrick, which was constructed in this way: Strips of plank were nailed together at the two edges, forming a half-square. Four of these were set up on end, twenty feet apart, leaning a little towards each other: strong cross-pieces and braces were spiked from one to the other. Another section was built on this, still leaning toward the centre; and section upon section was thus built, until the derrick was fifty-six feet high: when finished, it came nearly to a peak in the centre. Two iron pulleys were fixed upon a frame on the top. A strong floor was laid in the derrick; and pieces were nailed at one corner for a ladder to the top.

The samson-post, fifteen inches square, and thirteen feet long, was then made, with a tenon on one end of it. Then two large timbers, fourteen feet long, were fitted together like a cross, with a mortise cut in the centre where the sticks cross. These are called bed-timbers for the samson-post; and the mortise receives the tenon of it. After the cross-timbers were firmly embedded in the ground by digging, and the samson-post was set up in the mortise, strong braces were spiked from each end of the bed-timbers to the top of the post, which serve to render the post very firm. The next thing is a walking-beam (properly called a working-beam), twenty-four feet long, ten by sixteen inches at the middle, tapering out to eight inches square at the end. This working-beam was then placed on the top of the samson-post, by fitting the iron which had been bolted to the middle of the walking-beam into the iron which had been bolted to the top of the samson-post. These were so placed, that one end of the beam was in the derrick, over the centre of the spot where the well is supposed to be.

A sprightly and amusing writer (W. T. Adams), in an article on "Petrolia," further describes the apparatus used in boring for oil as follows: "It [the bull-wheel] is a turned shaft of wood, eight inches in diameter, and eight feet long, with a six-foot wheel set on near each end. The spokes of the wheels were left uncovered at the end, so that the men could take hold to turn the shaft, as a pilot does the wheel by which he steers a boat. The sides of the wheels facing each other were boarded up smoothly, so that the arms would not catch the rope while winding it on the shaft between the wheels. On the outside of one of the wheels was fastened a large grooved pulley: this was to receive a rope-belt from the engine to drive the bull-wheel. The men hung the bull-wheel by iron journals, or gudgeons, in each end of its shaft, so it would turn freely. It was placed in a frame between the legs of the derrick, at the side opposite the working-beam.

"The next thing was the band-wheel. This is set in a strong frame called the jack-frame, and placed so that one end of the band-wheel shaft comes directly under one end of the working-beam, — that end which is out of the derrick. The

band-wheel is six feet in diameter, and has a six-inch face, on which is to be placed the driving-belt of the engine. On one side of the wheel is a grooved pulley, like that on the bull-wheel, on which the rope-belt is to be run. On one end of the band-wheel shaft is a crank, which is to be connected with the end of the working-beam above by a pitman: when the crank turns, and the pitman is on, it will work the beam up and down.

“On the side of the band-wheel farthest from the derrick, they set up the sand-pump reel. As this reel is to wind a smaller rope on, it is made smaller than the bull-wheel shaft. The sand-pump reel is turned by a friction pulley on one end of it. The pulley can be moved in its frame, and made to bear against the face of the band-wheel, at a point where the driving-belt does not touch the face of the wheel. The frame of the reel is moved by a lever in the derrick, so as to force the friction-pulley against the band-wheel, or take it off, and stop the reel, at the pleasure of the man in the derrick. As the friction-pulley is much smaller than the band-wheel, the sand-pump reel turns very fast when the friction-pulley is ‘in gear.’”

Having thrown the reel out of gear by the lever in the derrick, the sand-pump rope is reeled on. “The engine and boiler were now put in place, a few feet from the band-wheel: a belt was put on from the driving-wheel of the engine to the band-wheel, and they were ready to ‘run.’ When the friction-pulley was forced against the band-wheel, the sand-pump reel would turn. When the pitman was put on the crank of the band-wheel, the working-beam would rock on the samson-post. When the rope-belt was put on the band-wheel, the bull-wheel would turn, and wind up the drill-rope. Thus the band-wheel could be used in three ways.

“The first thing in sinking a well is to drive the pipe. As far down as there is only earth or small stones, and until solid rock is met, iron pipe can be driven without drilling. To drive this pipe, the workmen set up in the centre of the derrick two strong plank slide-ways, twenty feet high, fifteen inches apart, taking care to make them perfectly perpendicular, and fasten them securely. Between these they hung a heavy pile-driver.

The loose end of the drill-rope was now carried up to the top of the derrick, passed through the big pulley, and down to the battering-ram between the slide-ways.

"The *drive-pipe* is cast iron, six inches inside diameter, and of various lengths, the walls or shell of the cylinder being about an inch thick.

"The end of the pipe first started into the ground is shod with steel, that it may better force its way; and the upper end is protected by a driving-cap, so that the pipe may not be battered or broken in driving.

"The first length of pipe was now set up between the slide-ways and the belt-rope run on the bull-wheel. The heavy ram was thus drawn up to the slide-ways, where a 'stop' knocked the rope loose from the ram; and it fell, with a powerful blow, on the top of the drive-pipe. By repeating this process, the pipe was forced downward."

We are elsewhere told, that, in boring for oil, "sometimes the drill opens a cavern filled with gas and oil, and they rush up suddenly: if the gas take fire, and the oil catches, there is no stopping it. A few years ago a well commenced to spout, and the gas spread, so that it took fire from the fire-box of an engine one hundred and fifty feet distant, before the men could run there to put the fire out. The gas and oil filled the air so suddenly with flames, that thirty men were burned to death. It was several days before the fire could be put out. On the Alleghany, there is a well which has been burning six or seven years: it lights up all the country round."

Sometimes, when oil is reached, a loud report, like that of a cannon, is heard, and the ground shakes; and men have even been prostrated by the discharge of oil and water flying high in the air.

The work is not done when the oil has been reached; for it is sometimes found so unexpectedly, and in such vast quantities, that it is very difficult to secure it. The fountain broken into sends forth its contents, roaring, foaming, and spouting oil and gas, fifty feet high.

The author above referred to states the following case of this kind: "The men at first tried to stop the stream entirely.





THE OIL REGIONS.

They took down the ponderous working-beam; and as many men as could take hold of it at the ends threw it over the mouth of the well, and tried to hold it there. The oil and water spirted and sprayed a hundred feet out each side, scattering the crowd of spectators. The working-beam, heavy as it was, was sent flying like a chip, in spite of the efforts of twenty men to hold it down on the well; and the men themselves were hurled in every direction, as if they were mere insects. They crept out of the deluge of oil and water, looking like so many mice who had fallen into a kettle of grease.

“After two or three days, however, the well seemed to abate its fury somewhat; then it began to put on another curious appearance. It gradually changed, from a steady flow, to an interrupted, spasmodic action. For a few moments it would spout with as great fury as ever; then it would gradually sink away, then, after a few moments of subsidence, increase in violence again. These periods of subsidence became more marked each time, until, in its quieter moments, the well spouted no higher than a man’s head. In one of these sleepy moments of the spouting monster, they succeeded in screwing on the goose-neck, and attaching to it the tanks and the pipe. Now they had the monster under control.”

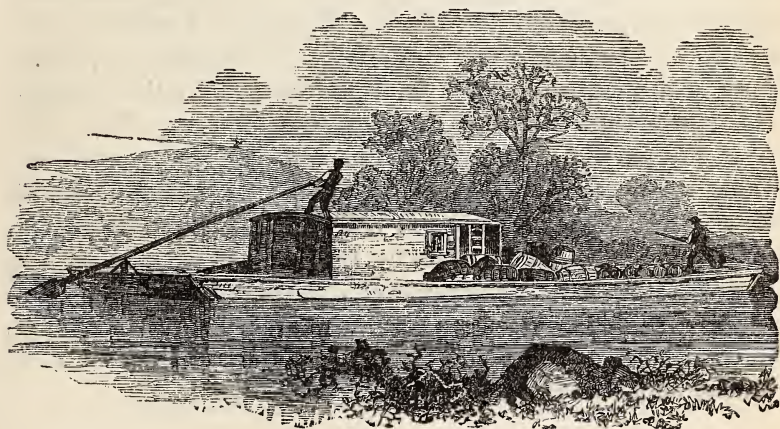
When a quantity of oil had been obtained, the next thing was to get it to market; and this was a great work. The first effort to be made towards accomplishing this was to tow flat-bottomed boats up Oil Creek. These boats were made flat, because this creek, though broad, is a shallow stream; and the current, though considerably strong, can ordinarily be stemmed, and these boats towed up against it. To do this, the horses are made to walk in the middle of the stream. This labor is severe, and these poor animals last but a short time.

After these boats have been towed up to the wells, they are loaded with the oil, and, taking advantage of pond-freshets, they are floated down to the Alleghany River, and thence to Pittsburg. The quantity of oil thus brought down upon one of these pond-freshets averaged from fifteen thousand to twenty thousand barrels.

Upon entering the Alleghany, the oil is transferred to a



larger and better class of boats. There were about four thousand men employed in this way in the oil-business ; and over a thousand boats were in use on the creek, with the addition of some thirty steamers, passenger and tow boats. After railroads were built in that section, the mode of transportation was by car-tanks, each car having two wooden ones, holding forty barrels each. The present method is iron, cylinder-shaped tanks with about the same capacity as the two wooden ones ; and on all the railroads engaged in this traffic there are 2,500 iron tank-cars, holding in all 212,500 barrels. The production of petroleum for Venango County in 1866 was 100,000,000 gallons ; in 1867 it reached 117,000,000 gallons ; and the entire



OIL EN ROUTE FOR PITTSBURG.

product in Pennsylvania from 1868 to 1872 inclusive was 25,923,000 barrels.

As already intimated, the oil-business was a somewhat uncertain one, having its ups and downs. The farmers in this remote part of the State were plain, every-day men, without much polish or refinement, though honest and industrious. When they found enormous prices offered for their lands, they were greatly surprised, and scarcely knew what to say. Some days large amounts were bid for their lands, and soon the prices fell. This was hard for them to understand. A story is

told of one of them who was offered a million dollars for his farm; but he refused to take it, with the hope of getting two million. He afterwards sold it for forty thousand dollars.

The same was the case with the price of oil. One day it would be up to eighty or ninety cents; and soon it went down to ten cents per gallon. This was a perplexing affair, as no man could tell whether he was rich or poor, no matter whether he had much oil or little. As land-owners and land-buyers were each astonished and wild with excitement, so was it with oil-sellers and oil-buyers. Although many men lost all they had in these operations, yet it was a fact that much oil was found, as above stated; and many were made rich by it. Men who had comparatively nothing, or next to nothing, soon found themselves possessed of millions. Petroleum became a great article of commerce; and the burning of kerosene, a purified form of this oil, superseded the use of whale oil, tallow candles, and spermaceti, and at the present time is more abundantly used for purposes of lighting than all the others combined. Once, within the recollection of the writer, whale-fishing for their oil was a vast business; and New Bedford, Nantucket, and many other places, became rich and flourishing by this means. Now little, comparatively, is done in this line; and these once great marts of commerce have gone into decay, so completely has coal-oil, or petroleum, taken the place of all others, both for lubricating and lighting purposes.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD AND POINTS OF INTEREST ALONG ITS ROUTE TO THE CAPITAL.

Mr. Sipes's Book — Richard Trevithick — George Stephenson — Road in Massachusetts — Honesdale — Columbia Railroad — Portage Road — Act for Pennsylvania Railroad — Road opened — Branches of New Jersey Division — Of Pennsylvania Railroad — Of Philadelphia and Erie Road — Mileage — Merion — Wynnewood — Eagle — Paoli — Malvern — Downingtown — Coatesville — Christiana — Gap — Kinzers — Lancaster — Mount Joy — Middletown — Columbia — Marietta — Harrisburg.

**M**R. WILLIAM B. SIPES has recently written, and D. M. Boyd, jun., General Passenger Agent of the Pennsylvania Railroad, published, a very valuable book, from which much information may be derived of this road and its connections.

Mr. Sipes, in his Introduction, has the following: "The problem of transportation is one that has taxed the ingenuity and resources of mankind from the earliest recorded history. As man progressed in civilization, the interchange of commodities and products between different countries, and consequent intercommunication, became necessities which had to be met. . . . During these early periods, roads were almost unknown, the tracks for trade being those of Nature alone; and it was left for chieftains of a later time — the Greeks, the Romans, the Carthaginians — to prepare ways for the movement of their legions and supplies, which were the first steps in improvements that the nineteenth century has perfected.

"The first introduction of any thing like the present railroad, and from which the latter was ultimately developed, was at the coal-mines in England, some time between the years 1602 and 1649. These consisted of wooden tracks, on which the coal-wagons were drawn by horses. The first road of this kind was

built at Newcastle-on-the-Tyne, and seems to have been the invention of a man named Beaumont. From there they gradually spread through the mining-districts of England, Scotland, and Wales; and improvements in their construction were from time to time made. Originally the roads were constructed entirely of wood. These were improved by having a plating or moulding of cast-iron placed upon them in the first half of the nineteenth century; and according to Mr. George Stephenson, the celebrated engineer, the first rails wholly made of iron were cast in 1766."

At Quincy, Mass., a road from the Ledges to Neponset River was constructed in 1827, similar to those used in the mining-districts of Great Britain. It was four miles in length, and was used solely for the purpose of transporting granite.

The first effort to construct a locomotive to run upon a railroad was made by Richard Trevithick, in 1804; and, although but partially successful, it demonstrated that locomotives could be put to practical use on railroads. George Stephenson, in 1814, built a locomotive, but, not being wholly satisfactory, he continued experimenting, until one was completed which took a premium of five hundred pounds sterling offered by the Manchester and Liverpool Railroad Company, and which was tested on their road, October, 1829. The first road in this country upon which a locomotive was used was that of the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company, at Honesdale, Penn.

One of the earliest efforts to build a road in America was made in Pennsylvania; but it went no farther than the incorporating a company, in 1823, to construct "a railroad from Philadelphia to Columbia, on the Susquehanna River, in Lancaster County, a distance of about eighty miles." She was not discouraged, however, at the failure of this enterprise; and, believing that it would succeed if it were made a public matter, she petitioned the Legislature to authorize the canal commissioners, who were about beginning "The Pennsylvania Canal," to examine the country for the road. In the following year (1828) the commissioners were directed to construct the road, *via* Lancaster; and two millions were appropriated for that purpose, and also to continue the work upon the canal. By this

act the commissioners were also appointed to survey a route over the Alleghany Mountain from Huntingdon to Johnstown. "In 1833 the canal commissioners were directed by law to complete the Columbia Railroad with a double, and the Portage with a single track, and to finish the main line of canal. This was promptly done; and in 1834 the entire line between Pittsburgh and Philadelphia was opened to trade and travel. The line, as finished, consisted of the Columbia Railroad, eighty-two miles in length, running from Philadelphia to Columbia, on the Susquehanna River; the eastern division of the canal, one hundred and seventy-two miles in length, extending from Columbia to Hollidaysburg; the Portage Railroad, from Hollidaysburg to Johnstown, a distance of thirty-six miles; and the western division of the canal, from Johnstown to Pittsburgh, one hundred and four miles in length, making an aggregate length of three hundred and ninety-four miles. The main line was now in successful operation; but it was too slow, too expensive to operate, and too complicated; and public attention was soon directed to the necessity of building a through line of railroad; but it was not until 1846 that any project assumed a tangible shape. On the 13th of April of that year, the act to incorporate the Pennsylvania Railroad Company was passed. The capital of the company was fixed at \$7,500,000, with the privilege of increasing the same to \$10,000,000. The company was authorized to build a road to connect with the Harrisburg, Portsmouth, Mount Joy, and Lancaster Railroad, and to run to Pittsburgh, or other place in the county of Alleghany, or to Erie, as might be deemed most expedient. The act also provided, that in case the company should have \$3,000,000 subscribed, and \$1,000,000 actually paid into its treasury, and have fifteen miles of its road under contract for construction at each terminus prior to the 30th of July, 1847, the law granting the right of way to the Baltimore and Ohio Road, from Cumberland, Md., to Pittsburgh, should be null and void. All these conditions were complied with; and on the 25th of February, 1847, Gov. Shunk granted a charter to the company; and on the 2d of August he issued his proclamation declaring the privileges granted the Baltimore and Ohio abrogated. This

action created considerable dissatisfaction in Alleghany and other south-western counties of Pennsylvania, and it required the lapse of time to satisfy those sections that it was for their advantage, as well as for the best interests of the State.<sup>1</sup>

The road was finally finished, and formally opened Feb. 15, 1854, thus completing a direct line over the Alleghany Mountains of three hundred and fifty-six miles.

#### PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD BRANCHES.

East Brandywine and Waynesburg Branch, Pennsylvania and Delaware Branch, York Branch, Mifflin and Centre County Branch, Bedford and Bridgeport Railroad, Bald Eagle Valley Branch, Hollidaysburg and Morrison's Cove Branch, Williamsburg Branch, Ebensburg Branch, Indiana Branch, Western Penn. Railroad, Butler Branch, South-west Pennsylvania.

#### PHILADELPHIA AND ERIE RAILROAD BRANCHES.

Lewisburg, Centre and Spruce Creek Branch, Danville and Hazleton Branch.

#### SUMMARY OF MILEAGE.

Pennsylvania Railroad and Branches . . .	1,651.3
West Jersey Railroad . . . . .	129.2
Cumberland Valley Railroad . . . . .	125.0
Pittsburg, Virginia, and Charleston Railroad, . . .	31.0
Alleghany Valley Railroad . . . . .	258.9
Oil Creek and Alleghany River Railroad . . .	121.0
Buffalo, Corry, and Pittsburg Railroad . . .	42.2
Northern Central Railway . . . . .	319.8
Baltimore and Potomac Railroad . . . . .	91.3
Alexandria and Fredericksburg Railroad . . .	34.4
Richmond and Danville Railroad . . . . .	441.7
Atlanta and Richmond Air-Line Railroad . . .	266.0
Pennsylvania Company . . . . .	1,715.4
Pittsburg, Cincinnati, and St. Louis Railway, . . .	1,150.7
St. Louis, Vandalia, Terre Haute, and Indianapolis Railroad . . . . .	238.0
Total miles of railroad owned, operated, or controlled by the Penn. Railroad Co. . .	6,615.9 <sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sipes's Pennsylvania Railroad, p. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Including all the roads and branches in and out of Pennsylvania.



Having thus described the Pennsylvania Railroad, and given an account of its origin and history, with its connections, we would now call the attention of the reader to some of the beautiful scenery and locations along the route of the main road.

MERION, 5 miles from the city of Philadelphia, is the country home of many of the merchants and retired gentlemen of that city, and from its accessibility by many lines of railroads, its fine scenery, its pure water, and the salubrity of its climate, offers great and varied attractions to pleasure-seekers.<sup>1</sup>

WYNNEWOOD, 6½ miles, is interesting from being named for Thomas Wynne, president of the first colonial assembly of Pennsylvania, who accompanied the colonists from Wales, and occupied land in the vicinity, which is still in possession of his descendants.

EAGLE, 15 miles, is the first station in Chester County; and from this point begins a panorama of beautiful views, with which the county abounds. The "Great Valley," of primitive limestone, is the most marked feature, being from two to four miles wide, crossing the county in a south-east and north-west direction. It is enclosed by moderately high hills, with extensive growths of wood; and from their tops can be had fine views of the highly cultivated farms in the valley below.

PAOLI, 19 miles, is delightfully situated on the border of Chester valley, and is a favorite resort for Philadelphians; and for their accommodation six trains are run daily to and from the city. It is an old settlement, and appears to have received its name from the tavern, which has always been its most important feature, and which was called in honor of Pasquale Di Paoli, the great Corsican general, born in 1726, who, at the age of twenty-nine, was chosen general-in-chief of the Corsicans, then in revolt against the Genoese. He was successful; and as his bravery could not but inspire the American colonies, who

<sup>1</sup> The distances on this road are taken from Mr. Sipes's book, and also those on its branch roads.

were striving to achieve their independence, they localized his memory by giving to this tavern and place his name. Gen. Anthony Wayne was born about a mile and a quarter south of Paoli, on the 1st of January, 1745.



PAOLI.

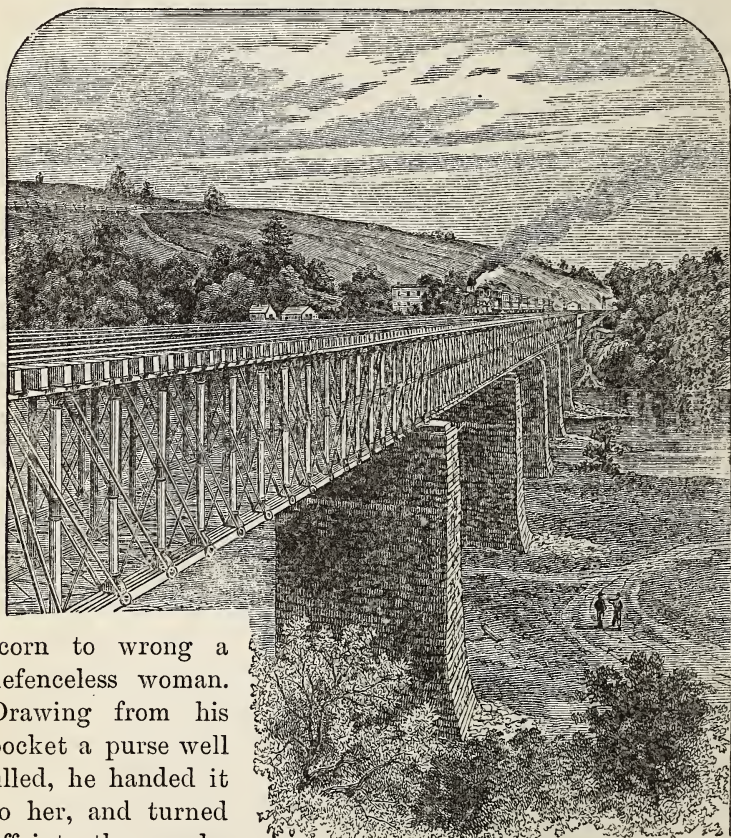
MALVERN, 21 miles, is the county-seat of Chester County. It is at this place that the highest point of land between Philadelphia and Chester valley is reached, the road here being five hundred and forty-five feet above tide-water, from which the descent into the valley is very sudden,—nearly two hundred feet in a distance of ten miles. Delightful glimpses of the farms below this abrupt declivity are obtained from the railroad. It was about half a mile south-west of this place, that that famous surprise of a detachment of the American Army, under Gen. Wayne, by the British Gen. Grey, occurred on the night of the 20th of September, 1777, known as the “Paoli Massacre.”

DOWNINGTON, 32 miles, is beautifully situated in a large vale on the Big Brandywine. A deed for a part of the ground is dated 1682, though it does not appear to have been settled until 1700. It was first called Milltown, because a mill was erected here on the Brandywine. It received its name from Thomas Downing. It was inhabited by several rich Quakers at the time of the Revolutionary war, and was considered a peculiarly staid, and highly respectable place, noted for its "spacious substantial houses, shaded by tall elms and pines, and situated in the midst of verdant yards and gardens." A modern historian describes it as "one of the very green spots that have been left unscathed by the mania of modern speculation. Not even the passage of the railroad along its southern border could seduce the old-fashioned citizens from their quiet, staid, and thrifty ways, into the delusive dream of making haste to be rich." "Even the temptation of being the county-seat was resisted; and although, at an early date, the commissioners had obtained the refusal of a single lot, not another lot in the vicinity would any one sell. They were opposed both to parting with their homesteads, and to the noise and brawling of a county-town."

It was used as a garrison for American troops during the Revolutionary war; and Richard Downing was the commissary. It was the scene of many incidents and hardships. The "Rob Roy of Pennsylvania," Jim Fitzpatrick, a blacksmith, filled this valley with rumors of his strange adventures. He was of Irish parentage, and in his youth very active and strong. He enlisted in the American army, but soon deserted, and roamed about as a Tory, committing many depredations, under the guise of loyalty to the king. While thus employed, he was seized by two soldiers, who were about taking him to Wilmington, where was a detachment of the army. He entreated them to let him return to his mother's house to get some clothing, whither they accompanied him. As soon as he had opened the door, he seized his rifle, and, presenting it to their breasts threatened to shoot them down unless they left immediately. A local historian has preserved the following, one of his peculiar deeds: "Meeting an old woman on her way to the city



with all her little stock of money, to purchase supplies, she, little dreaming who he was, made known to him her fear of meeting Capt. Fitz, and being robbed of her fortune. Fitz heard her patiently, and then informed her that he was the man she dreaded; but her fear was groundless, as he would



COATESVILLE BRIDGE.

scorn to wrong a defenceless woman. Drawing from his pocket a purse well filled, he handed it to her, and turned off into the woods, leaving the poor

woman overcome with her adventure and her good fortune."

COATESVILLE, 38 miles, is situated on the Brandywine, over which the railroad is carried upon a bridge, magnificently built of iron. It is eight hundred and thirty-six feet long, and seventy-three feet above the water. It is a growing place, and



in manufactures promises to rank among the first in the State. It has six iron-manufacturing establishments, which employ five hundred and fifty men, a number of paper-mills, several woollen and cotton mills, and other industries. This necessitates many stores and shops, and it also supports two national banks. The scenery on the Brandywine is very charming, which causes Coatesville to be much resorted to in summer, as also for its mineral spring situated about half a mile from the town. It contains six churches, two public halls, a seminary, and other public institutions. The first settlements were made very early by the Coates family, from Montgomeryshire, Eng., members of the Society of Friends, who came over soon after Penn., and for whom the town is named; and by the Bizallions, a French family; and the Flemings. All of these families have descendants still in the vicinity. It was incorporated as a borough Aug. 15, 1867. Population 2,025.

CHRISTIANA, 48 miles, is known in history as the scene of "The Riots" in 1851, caused by Maryland officers attempting to capture fugitive slaves. One Marylander was killed, and several, both white and black, were wounded. Many arrests were made by the civil authorities, and the prisoners were removed to Philadelphia for safe keeping and trial. The process of the court was very slow, and the prisoners were finally discharged. It is a place of great activity and considerable business.

GAP, 50½ miles, is the highest point on the road between Schuylkill and Susquehanna Rivers, the elevation being five hundred and sixty feet above tide-water. In olden time this region was a favorite resort for counterfeiters and other adventurers. Romance has connected their names with many extravagant stories. Many of these depredators served several years in the State prison; and, though their persons have long since passed away, yet the popular belief is, that their spirits "will not down," but that they still visit their old haunts, and are at their old tricks. Railroad-trains are said to have been seen here, which vanished like a flash; and even "Old Nick" himself is said to pay nightly visits to their engineers. Whatever may be the truth regarding these stories, the people about here are very honest, industrious, and frugal.

KINZERS, 53½ miles, is noted for having near it the only nickel mines worked in the United States. The company owning the mines employ one hundred and fifty men, and send off twelve hundred tons of matte every year. Matte is the nickel ore reduced to a mass by smelting. This mine, according to the census of 1870, returned a product of sixty-six thousand dollars.

LANCASTER, 69 miles. The county of this name was the first one named, after the three original counties into which Penn divided the Province. It was created by the Colonial Legislature the 10th of May, 1729. Lancaster, the shire-town, is beautifully situated in the midst of the richest and most fertile portion of the county. According to the accounts of early historians, the lower valley of the Susquehanna, at the time of the first white settlements, was a vast, uninhabited highway, through which hordes of hostile savages were constantly roaming, and where the different tribes had many bloody battles. A Cayuga chief told the Moravians of Wyalusing, in 1765, that the place they had chosen was an improper one, because all that country had been "stained with blood."

At Lancaster city, the first settlement in the county was made. It was then only a town, having no county limits; but, when it was formed into a county, the only building standing within the city limits was a tavern, with a sign of a hickory-tree, kept by one George Gibson.

Gov. Pownall visited Lancaster in 1754, and says the place then contained "five hundred houses and two thousand inhabitants; that it was a growing town, and making money, having then a manufactory of saddles and packsaddles." In 1734 Lancaster was made the seat of justice, and from that time grew rapidly in population and importance. It was a famous place for holding councils with the Indians, and making treaties with them. The early colonial records give many accounts of these assemblies. A large portion of the men whose names appear in the history of the Province of Pennsylvania visited Lancaster; and, in the annals of the State, it ranks second only to Philadelphia.

An annual fair was held at Lancaster on the first Thursday

and Friday in June. An old historian thus describes these fairs: "You could hardly see the street for the tables and booths, covered with merchandise and trinkets of every kind. There were silks, laces, and jewelry, calicoes, gingerbread, and sweetmeats, such as the ladies love; and that was the time they got plenty of them, too, for the young fellows used to hoard up their money for months together to spend at the fair. Then the corners of the streets were taken up with mountebanks, rope-dancers, and all the latest amusements. To see these, each young man took the girl that pleased him most; or, if he had a capacious heart, he sometimes took half a dozen."

Mr. Sipes, in his railroad volume, adds, "In every tavern there was heard the sound of a violin; and the dances were the crowning pleasure of all. Of taverns there appears to have been an abundance. One writer says that the portraits of half the kings of Europe, of many warriors and statesmen, and of numerous things, animate and inanimate, made the streets an outdoor picture-gallery."

Lancaster was incorporated as a borough June 19, 1777, and it was made the capital of Pennsylvania in 1799. It continued to be the capital until 1812, when the seat of the State government was removed to Harrisburg. It was incorporated as a city the 20th of March, 1818.

James Buchanan, fifteenth President of the United States, owned and lived upon an excellent farm, which, for its fertility and productiveness, he called Wheatland. It was in the immediate vicinity of the city; and here he died and was buried. Thaddeus Stevens, who filled a prominent place in the history of the United States, both before and during the Rebellion, was a citizen of Lancaster; and there his remains were interred.

Lancaster is a large manufacturing city. Six cotton-mills are in operation at present, in which thirteen hundred and fifty hands are employed. There are also extensive boiler-works, locomotive-works, comb-factory, several woollen and flour mills, large breweries, and a printing and publishing company employing one hundred and seventy-five hands. In the immediate vicinity of the city, several large iron-mines are worked. It has also three public halls, ten public and private banks,



several excellent hotels, a splendid court-house, a large prison, a children's home, a county poor-house, to which a hospital and lunatic asylum are attached. Its population is 20,233.

MOUNT JOY, 80 miles, is situated in a beautiful and fertile country, and is a flourishing place. It has manufactories of reapers, ploughs, carriages, edge-tools, a machine-shop, malleable iron-works, and a soldiers' orphans' school, containing two hundred pupils. It contains six churches, two national banks,



RESIDENCE OF JAMES BUCHANAN.

three hotels, and many good schools. The fine buildings of the Female Seminary, erected in 1837, are located near the railroad, by Little Chiques Creek.

MIDDLETOWN, 95½ miles, is the first station in Dauphin County, and is at the junction of the Harrisburg, Lancaster, and Columbia Railroads. It is an active, enterprising place; contains two furnaces, car-works, iron-works, boat-yards, paint-



works, and saw-mills. Iron ore and mineral paint abound in its immediate vicinity. A very large business is done in lumber. It has eight churches, a large public hall, and several good hotels. Emmaus Institute, "devoted to the education of poor orphan-children, who are to be carefully trained in the doctrines of the Evangelical Lutheran Church," is located at this place. Mr. Sipes says, "This institution owes its existence to the liberality of George Frey, a citizen of Middletown, whose life was marked with considerable romance. His true name was Everhart, and, a poor German lad, he commenced his career here as a farm-laborer. When he had accumulated a little money, he purchased a stock of trinkets, and started up the Susquehanna River to trade with the Indians. Passing the Blue Mountain, then the frontier of the white settlements, he was arrested by some soldiers as a runaway 'redemptioner' (a servant who had been sold for a time to pay his passage from Europe). In his broken language he declared to the soldiers, '*Ich bin frey!*' and finally convinced them that he was "free." Locating himself at Fort Hunter, where he became a favorite, the name of 'Frey' was given him, and by it he was afterwards known. He prospered as a trader, opened a store at Middletown, speculated extensively and judiciously, accumulated a large fortune, and with a part of it endowed this benevolent school. He died in 1808, leaving no children."

Middletown was laid out in 1755, upon the site of an Indian village, and received its name from being midway between Lancaster and Carlisle. In 1851 the adjacent town of Portsmouth was merged in it. Its population is 2,980.

COLUMBIA, 81 miles, is a borough of Lancaster County, on the Susquehanna. The town is on level ground, on the bank of the river, with high hills back of it. The river at this point is a mile wide, and from these hills presents a magnificent panoramic view.

Robert Barber, a Quaker, in 1727 purchased the first land from the proprietaries, and settled upon it the following year. The Indians were favorable to the whites coming, and gave them no trouble. Some of these Quaker pioneers were noted

for their intelligence and education, among whom was Susanna Wright, daughter of John Wright. She was a superior woman, educated in England. It is said of her, "She was consulted in all difficult matters, did all the writings necessary in the place, was charitable to the poor, and gave medicine gratis to all the neighborhood. She defended the cause of the Indians who were murdered by the Paxton Boys." Another noted woman of this place was Mary Ditcher, a German, who acquired a large amount of land, and sold it from time to time to the German emigrants. It is also said that this Mary Ditcher "used to go through the country, making what was then called improvements." "These improvements consisted in piling a few sticks together, setting them on fire, and hanging a pot over them. If she could then pay for the land, she was allowed to keep it." "She wandered through the wilderness in a sheep-skin dress, leading an old horse, — her only movable property, — with her knitting constantly in her hand."

It was contemplated, at one time, to make Columbia the county-seat. Robert Barber was then sheriff of the county, and built a prison near his house. It was built of logs, and remained standing many years. There is an anecdote connected with this prison, which forms the ground-work of Charles Reade's novel, "The Wandering Heir." The true Lord Altham, whose name was James Annesley, heir to the estates and title of Lord Altham in Ireland, was spirited away from that country when thirteen years of age, sent to America, and sold as a "redemptioner," or "slave." This sale took place in Philadelphia, where he landed, in 1728. "All the accounts agree in stating that he ran away from his master, was captured and imprisoned; that he had his troubles because of his master's daughter and a young Indian girl voluntarily bestowing their affections upon him; and that finally, after twelve years of servitude, he was discovered to be the rightful Lord Altham, was taken back to England by Admiral Vernon, and after the adventures and trial, as detailed by Reade, was declared to be the true heir. The circumstances of his discovery are thus related: Two Irishmen, named John and William Brodus, travelling the Lancaster road, stopped at the

house where James was in service. Entering into conversation with him, they discovered they were all from Dumaine, in the county of Wexford; and the Irishmen were convinced that the servant was James Annesley, the son and heir of Lord Altham. They volunteered to go back to Ireland, and testify to what they had discovered; and this they did, appearing as witnesses at the trial which followed the heir's return. It is also said that James was a great singer; and, when he was confined in the log jail at Columbia, the neighbors frequently visited the prison to listen to him. The events of his life furnished the groundwork for 'Guy Mannering,' 'Roderick Random,' and 'Florence Macarthy,' popular novels in their day. James, it would appear, was a man of no particular talent, and easily discouraged. After his heirship had been substantiated, he permitted his uncle, who had so greatly wronged and persecuted him, to remain in possession of his title. He married twice, had sons and daughters by both wives,—none of his sons, however, surviving him,—and died at the age of forty-five, the last of his line. The descendants of the wicked uncle inherited the title and estates.”<sup>1</sup>

Iron and its products are extensively manufactured here; and, in its various branches, about a thousand men are employed. There is also a manufactory of agricultural implements, an oil refinery, two planing-mills, and many other branches of industry. Population 6,461.

MARIETTA, 84 miles, extends along the bank of the Susquehanna two miles, and the scenery is very beautiful. It was incorporated as a borough in 1812.

The old Donegal Presbyterian Church, built in 1740, lies near the bounds of this borough. This was the parent of all the Scotch-Irish churches along the Susquehanna. An early historian says, “All this region was famous in early times, especially during the Revolution, for the convivial and sprightly spirit characteristic of the Irish. Fiddling, dancing and carousing, or what were then known as hup-sesaws, were as common as eating and drinking.”

Marietta has six iron furnaces, a rolling-mill, a manufactory

<sup>1</sup> Sipes's Pennsylvania Railroad, p. 103.

of enamelled and hollow ware, a foundery, two saw and planing mills, and does a large business in lumber. There are four iron-mines worked in the vicinity. Near Marietta, on the opposite side of the river, is "Wild-cat Glen," a romantic spot, now made use of by the Masonic fraternity as a summer resort.

HARRISBURG, 105 miles, is the capital of Pennsylvania. "It was originally settled by emigrants from the north of Ireland, an enterprising and daring race, who for many years defended the frontier against the Indians, and were conspicuous in many of the scenes of border warfare." Most of these emigrants were Presbyterians: their ministers were generally men of great learning and ability. They early founded schools, prominent among which was the "Log College," first established by William Tennant, near Philadelphia, in 1726. It consisted of a log-cabin, about fifty feet square, near Mr. Tennant's house; and he was the only instructor.

That eminent preacher, George Whitefield, when in America, visited this college, and in his journal says, "The place wherein the young men study, now is called, in contempt, 'The College.' To me it seemed to resemble the school of the old prophets; for their habitations were mean. From this despised place, seven or eight worthy ministers of Jesus have lately been sent forth: more are almost ready to be sent; and the foundation is now laying for the instruction of many others."

An early historian says of these same Scotch-Irish pioneers, "Having neither silver nor gold to give in founding institutions for the intellectual, moral, and religious improvement of the people, they gave what they had,—their time, labor, talents, and learning. They planted and watered, and under God their work prospered, the fruits of which were gathered and enjoyed not only in their own day, but by generations then unborn."

Harrisburg is beautifully situated in a rich territory, highly cultivated, abounding in iron ore, and covered with manufactories. The scenery in every direction is exceedingly fine. The first settlement was made about 1725, by John Harris, an Englishman, who fixed his habitation on the bank of the river; and here a son was born to him in 1726. He is said to have



been the first white child born in Pennsylvania west of the Conewago Hills. He was named for his father, John Harris, inherited his estate, and became the founder of Harrisburg.

According to the Rev. Col. Elder, John Harris, sen., was the first person who introduced the plough on the Susquehanna. By industry and frugality, he acquired a large property. He was well known throughout the Province; and his house was often visited by all classes of people, passing through the valley of the river. One day a band of Indians came to his house. They were all intoxicated, and wanted more rum, which he refused; and thereupon they seized, and bound him to a tree, intending to burn him. While they were kindling the fire, another band of Indians came up; and, after a fight between them, Harris was released uninjured. As a remembrancer of this event, he directed in his will that he should be buried at the foot of this tree. He died in 1748. His direction was carried out; and his remains and those of his children repose there.

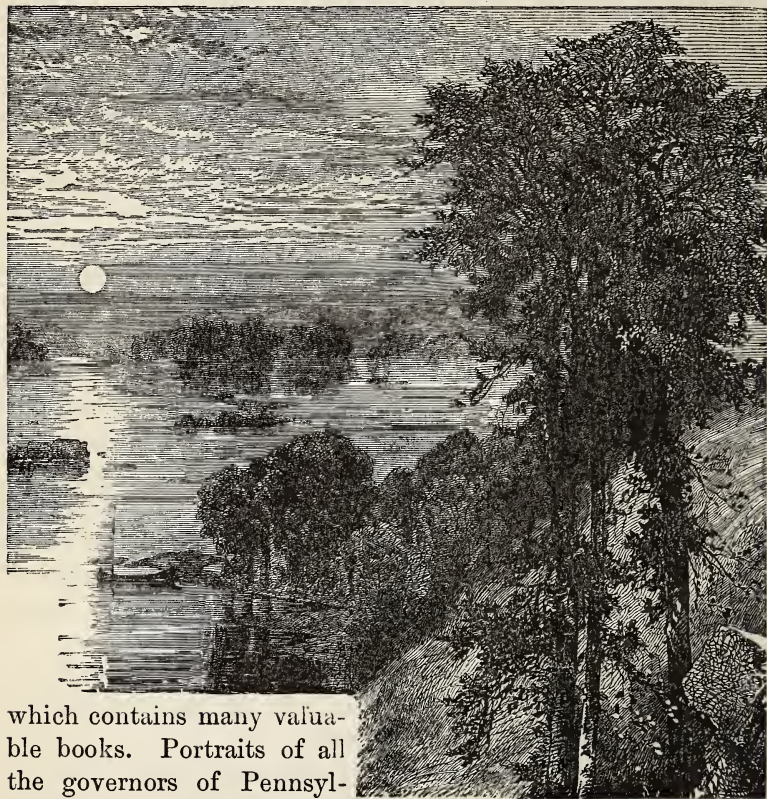
John Harris, jun., accumulated much wealth, and in 1775 loaned the government three thousand pounds. When the town of Harrisburg was laid out, in 1785, he conveyed to commissioners, whom he named, four acres of ground on Capital Hill, "in trust, for public use, and such public purposes as the legislature shall hereafter direct." He did this because he believed Harrisburg would be the Capital of Pennsylvania at some future time. He died in 1791.

In 1808 Harrisburg was incorporated as a borough; and the 21st of February, 1810, its founder's dream was realized by its being made the capital of the State.

In the late rebellion, when the advance portion of Lee's army reached the Susquehanna, opposite Harrisburg, the most intense excitement prevailed in the city, as it was supposed that the object of the invasion was to attack the capital of the State. The Pennsylvania archives were hastily packed, and transported to a place of safety; but, a retrograde movement having been made by the rebels, the capital remained safe without the shedding of blood.

The Capitol buildings are of plain red brick, without any

external ornament; and they occupy a fine position, surrounded by ornamental grounds, overlooking the Susquehanna and its delightful scenery. The interior of the buildings is well arranged: the halls for the Senate and House are very convenient. The most splendid room is occupied as the State Library,



which contains many valuable books. Portraits of all the governors of Pennsylvania, well preserved, hang in the executive department.

SUSQUEHANNA, NEAR HARRISBURG.

The walls are decorated with old curiosities and quaint documents, among which are ancient English charters, treaties between William Penn and others with the Indians, with the marks or hieroglyphics of these aborigines. In the old arsenal, a number of obsolete arms are to be seen, and near it a marble shaft, surmounted by a winged angel, erected in honor of Pennsylvania volunteers who fell in the Mexican war.

The city contains fifteen church edifices, representing all the religious denominations. It has an academy, a female seminary, and an excellent system of common schools, in which are five thousand pupils. The new Masonic Hall is one of the finest buildings in the State outside of Philadelphia and Pittsburgh.

Manufacturing of all kinds is largely carried on here ; the city being admirably located for this purpose, from the fact that the splendid railroad system radiates from it to every point of the compass, reaching the great anthracite and bituminous coal-mines, the rich veins of iron ore in the adjacent counties, and the fine agricultural country. Population 23,104.



## CHAPTER XIX.

### PLACES ON THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD FROM HARRISBURG TO THE TUNNEL OF THE ALLEGHANY.

Rockville — Marysville — Duncannon — Aqueduct — Newport — Millerstown —  
Mifflin — Lewistown — Newton Hamilton — Mount Union — Huntingdon —  
Tyrone — Altoona — Kittanning Point — Resting-Place — View from the  
Mountain.

**S**TARTING from Harrisburg the capital, which we described in the last chapter, and following the Pennsylvania Railroad to its termination at Pittsburg, we next name, —

ROCKVILLE, 110½ miles. Here the railroad comes to the Blue Ridge, or the Kittatinny Mountain, the first of the Alleghany range on the route. At this point the road crosses the Susquehanna on a bridge 3,670 feet in length. Looking up and down the river from this bridge, the prospect is exceedingly fine and magnificent. Just to the north are seen the high mountains, through which the river pours its waters down a huge break, forming the foaming, fretting rapids. Here the large bridge of the Northern Railway connects the villages of Dauphin and Marysville. Looking to the south, the river, nearly a mile wide, is seen, filled with islands, and bordered by fertile farms. The population of Rockville is 259.

MARYSVILLE, 113 miles. This town abounds in iron ore; and vast quantities of iron are manufactured within its limits. It was originally settled by Scotch-Irish emigrants, who, not possessing the pacific spirit of William Penn, had much trouble with the Indians. Whole families were massacred; and at one time nearly all the settlers were driven from their homes, but they soon returned, and exterminated the Indians. Population is 25,477. Number of manufacturing establishments 282, which employ 1,037 men. The capital invested \$1,438,174.



DUNCANNON, 119 miles, is the seat of the Duncannon Iron Company. It manufactures a large amount of pig and bar iron and nails. Near this place is a branch of the mountain, called "Profile Rock," which strongly resembles the human face. Passing on a mile above Duncannon, we come to the mouth of the Juniata River, and Dunkin's Island, a famous place in the early history of the State.

David Brainerd, a missionary among the Indians, informs us that a large Indian town was settled upon this island, and that the Indians used to make it a favorite place of resort. He tells us of an eccentric Indian, who made his appearance "in his pontifical garb, which was a coat of bear-skins, dressed with the hair on, and hanging down to his toes; a pair of bear-skin stockings; and a great wooden face, painted,—the one side half black, the other half tawny, about the color of an Indian's skin, with an extravagant mouth, cut very much awry; the face fastened to a bear-skin cap, which was drawn over his head. He advanced towards me with an instrument in his hand, which he used for music in his idolatrous worship, which was a dry tortoise-shell, with some corn in it, and the neck of it drawn on to a piece of wood, which made a very convenient handle." Some years later this island was the scene of many battles between the Indians and the whites. In 1756 all the whites abandoned it; and in 1760 a terrible fight occurred between them and the Indians. At one of these outbreaks, the wife of the owner of the island, to escape from the savages, swam the Susquehanna, taking her infant with her. This was a great feat, when it is considered that the river is here a mile wide. This island has since been a delightful and favorite summer resort: its attractions are many, and its air is pure.

AQUEDUCT, 123 miles, is the point at which the Pennsylvania Railroad leaves the Susquehanna River, and follows the "blue Juniata," through mountains and valleys, till it reaches the middle of the great Alleghany Mountains. This little river seems almost to have possessed strategic powers; for it pursues its winding course of a hundred miles, sometimes dashing boldly against the mountain wall, which it has torn asunder, sometimes winding around obstructions, and creeping slyly

through secret valleys and the dens of wild beasts. "At some points the mountains appear to have retired from the attacking current, leaving numerous isolated hills standing as sentinels to watch its progress. But the severed mountains, the towering embankments, and the sentinel-like hills, are all toned into form and moulded into shape by the action of the elements and the foliage of Nature, leaving no abrupt precipices, and but few naked rocks, to mar the uniform beauty. The valleys, and many of the hills, are brought under cultivation; and some of the latter rise in the distance, presenting alternate squares of yellow, green, and brown, showing the progress of agricultural industry, while their summits are crowned with clumps of forest-trees, indicating the luxuriance of the growth before the march of civilization invaded it. Every hour of the day, every change of the season, gives new tints to these mountains and valleys. The morning mist often shrouds them beneath its veil; and as this is penetrated and dispersed by the sun, cloud-like forms sail away towards the sky, pausing at times amid the higher summits, as if to rest before taking their final flight to join their sisters in the illimitable firmament. The tints of evening spread over them golden and purple halos; while deep and dark shadows sink into the water, and creep up the wooded embankments. Spring clothes the entire landscape in a tender green. Summer deepens this into a darker tint, and intersperses it with the yellow of the ripening harvest. Autumn scatters its gems over all, lighting up the forests with the many bright hues of the changing foliage; and winter brings its pure mantle of white, over which tower the ever-verdant pines, or repose dark beds of rhododendrons. In the river valley, almost every tree has its parasite in a Virginia creeper, festooning it from the ground to the topmost branch; and here and there a larger vine binds a number together, as if it had grown weary of its first love, and taken others to its embrace. At some places the road passes through broad, cultivated valleys, and at others it is built along ravines so narrow that its bed is carved out of the overhanging rocks. Now a mountain spur bars its way, and a tunnel is pierced through the obstacle; and, again, the river is so tortuous, that engineer-

ing skill disdained to follow it, and numerous bridges carry the roadway from bank to bank. Almost every mile of its course opens up new scenes, which present themselves to the traveller like the ever-changing pictures of a kaleidoscope.”<sup>1</sup>

NEWPORT, 132 miles, was known, from its first settlement in 1814, to 1820, as Reiderville, since which year it has borne its present title. It has a furnace, two steam tanneries, a planing-mill, foundery, grist-mill, saw-mill, a stone and earthen ware factory. It also has a large commission and mercantile business. About two miles from the station, iron ore is mined for local use. There are in the borough six churches, a bank, good schools, and several hotels. Population 945.

MILLERSTOWN, 138 miles, is a very old town, having been laid out as early as 1800. It is a great resort in summer; and its location, upon the bank of the Juniata, is very fine. It contains a furnace and foundery; and near it are worked iron-ore mines, employing about one hundred and seventy men. It contains two churches, three public halls, a bank, several good hotels; and the Juniata Valley Normal School, which has an attendance of about one hundred pupils. Population 533.

MIFFLIN, 154 miles, is the county-seat of Juniata County, which was separated from Mifflin by act of March 2, 1831. It is mountainous, interspersed with many beautiful and fertile valleys, chief of which is the Tuscarora, consisting of rolling hills of limestone and slate. Numerous streams water this county, and it is particularly famed for the purity of its air. Iron ore is abundant in all parts of it. The first settlements were made by Scotch-Irish, about 1749, who first built a fort, and cleared land, in Tuscarora Valley.

The settlers were much annoyed by the Indians, until the commencement of the Revolutionary war. It was in this county that the “Grasshopper War,” between the Tuscarora and Delaware Indians, occurred. These tribes lived on each side of the Juniata; and the children got into a dispute about some grasshoppers. The women took sides with the children, and from this the men were drawn into it; and, before it was settled, a bloody and relentless war was had, in which many

<sup>1</sup> Sipes's Pennsylvania Railroad, p. 118.

lives were sacrificed on both sides. It was not until after the Revolution, and the railroad was built, which followed the Pennsylvania canal, that any considerable improvement was visible, when agriculture and manufactures were stimulated, and its mineral wealth was developed to the present prosperous condition. The population of the county is 17,390. Its agricultural products are valued at \$1,097,659. It has 204 manufacturing establishments, employing 395 hands. Mifflin is on the left bank of the Juniata, upon a lofty elevation, and is connected with the railroad on the right by a bridge over the river. It was laid out by John Harris in 1791. The country immediately surrounding it is delightfully picturesque, and the views are charming. It contains the usual county buildings, three churches, two banks, two public halls, and three good hotels. It does a flourishing business with the adjacent regions, and ships considerable iron ore. Population 857.

LEWISTOWN, 166 miles, is the seat of justice of Mifflin County. Mifflin County was formed from Cumberland and Northumberland, by act of Sept. 19, 1789. It is about thirty-nine miles long from south-east to north-west, and about fifteen miles broad. It has many mountain ranges running through its entire length, which form beautiful and fertile valleys of slate and limestone land. These valleys are in a high state of cultivation, and present a rich appearance to the eye of the traveller as he speeds by on the iron road above them. The most noted of these valleys is Kishicoquillas, unsurpassed in variety of scenery, and productiveness of soil, making it the cynosure of a refined and cultivated class of people, who have resided here for a century. This valley was so named for an Indian chief, who had his cabin near where Lewistown now stands. He was a Shawnee, friendly to the whites; was influential in preserving the peace, which, before the defeat of Braddock, existed between the whites of the interior of Pennsylvania and the Indians; and he was held in high esteem by the Provincial officers. At the time in our early colonial history when the French missionaries were inducing the Indians to join them in their alliance against the English, upon making overtures to Kishicoquillas, he sternly refused, protesting that "no earthly



consideration could induce him to lift the tomahawk against the sons of Onas."

As early as 1755 Scotch-Irish settlers from the Cumberland Valley had made their homes in this county, but they suffered fearfully from the depredations of the Indians; and it was not until after the treaty of Fort Stanwix, in 1768, that this region was a safe abode for the whites. From that time the country was rapidly filled, and prosperity settled down upon the inhabitants.

It was in this valley, not many miles above Lewistown, that the celebrated Logan, the Mingo chief, lived. He is described as the best known Indian in Pennsylvania. He was the son of Shikellimy, a Cayuga chief, who lived at Fort Augusta, where Sunbury now stands, about 1742, and was converted to Christianity by the Moravian missionaries. His son was baptized by them, and named by his father for James Logan, then secretary of the Province. The Cayugas were one of the Six Nations; and Mingo being the name given by the Delawares to these tribes, it was bestowed upon Logan. Some anecdotes of him will best illustrate his sweetness of temper, sense of justice, and innate dignity of character. On one occasion a party visited him in his cabin, and engaged with him in shooting at a mark, at a dollar a shot. Logan lost four or five rounds, willingly declared himself beaten, and, going into his hut, brought out as many deerskins as he had lost dollars. But the party refused to take them, saying they had been his guests; that the shooting was but a trial of skill, and the bet merely nominal. Whereupon Logan drew himself up, and said, "Me bet to make you shoot your best; me gentleman; and me take your dollar, if me beat." They were forced to take the skins, or affront him; and so nice was his sense of honor, that he would not even receive a horn of powder in return. He supported his family by killing deer, and selling their skins, after they were dressed, to the whites. He had sold a number of skins to a tailor, receiving his pay in wheat, which, upon being taken to a miller, was found so useless that he refused to grind it. Failing in obtaining redress from the tailor, he placed the matter in the hands of a friend, who was a magistrate, who, after hearing the

case, decided in favor of the chief, and gave him a writ to hand the constable, assuring him that would bring the money. It seemed like magic to him, that this little paper would force the tailor into compliance; but when the magistrate showed him his commission from the king, and explained to him the process of civil law, Logan exclaimed, "Law good! Make rogues pay."

Logan left Kishicoquillas Valley in 1771, as the number of whites had so increased that game was no longer to be procured, by which his family could be supported. He located on the Ohio River, at the mouth of Yellow Creek, about thirty miles above Wheeling, where there were fewer white settlers, and game more plentiful. He was there joined by relatives, and Indians from Fort Augusta, became their chief, and seems to have exerted a wonderful influence. His whole family was massacred, at the commencement of the Shawnee war, in 1773, by a party of scouts, led by Daniel Greathouse, who attacked the village, murdered twelve of the inhabitants, and wounded six or eight more. Logan was absent at the time, and, when he returned, saw only smoking ruins of cabins and mangled bodies. His heart was broken, and; if his revenge was terrible, who can wonder? He buried his dead, cared for the wounded, and then joined the Shawnees in their work of destruction upon the whites, and wrought fearful mischief wherever he went. But his nobler instincts sometimes asserted themselves, as the following incident will show. During this war he one day came upon a field where three men were at work. One of them he killed outright; but the other two took to flight. One of these was soon overtaken; while the other, being more fleet, would probably have escaped, had he not turned to see where his pursuer was, and caught his foot in a root, falling to the ground with such force that he became insensible. When he recovered, he found himself bound, and Logan seated beside him. Then, taking him with him, Logan set out for the nearest Indian village. The prisoner said Logan spoke but little during the march, appearing downcast; but, upon arriving at the village, he gave the "scalp halloo;" and the Indians of both sexes, old and young, came running out to meet them. The prisoners

were made to "run the gantlet:" but Logan directed his prisoner how to act; and, by following his advice, he arrived in safety to the council-house, while the other one, not understanding the course to pursue, suffered terribly, and would have been killed if he had not been pulled into the council-house by the one already safe within. The next day a council was held, and it was decided to take the one first captured, who was an old man, into their tribe; but Logan's prisoner they determined to sacrifice. Logan spoke for an hour against this decision, and is reported as having been wonderfully eloquent; in voice, gesture, and fluency, surpassing even Patrick Henry. But in vain did he plead. They still continued their preparations, Logan all the while standing apart, with folded arms and stern face. Just as the fire was being kindled, he suddenly strode into the circle, cut the bands of the prisoner, and led him, without a word, into his wigwam. The Indians made no attempt to interfere; but signs of tumult arose, to which Logan paid no attention, and in a few hours it subsided.

The rigor with which this war was prosecuted by the whites brought the Indians to terms, and they sued for peace, to secure which Lord Dunmore appointed a council of all the hostile chiefs, Logan among the rest, to be held on the Sciota in 1774. Logan refused to attend the council, but sent this speech, preserved in Jefferson's "Notes on Virginia;" and although its authenticity has been doubted, yet as a specimen of Logan's eloquence, and as a whole, despite possible interpolations, it is undoubtedly genuine.

"I appeal to any white man to say if ever he entered Logan's cabin hungry, and he gave him not meat; if ever he came cold and naked, and he clothed him not. During the course of the last long and bloody war, Logan remained idle in his cabin, an advocate of peace. Such was my love for the whites, that my countrymen pointed as they passed, and said, 'Logan is the friend of the white man!' I had even thought to have lived with you, but for the injuries of one man, Col. Cresap, the last spring, who in cold blood, and unprovoked, murdered all the relations of Logan, not even sparing my women and children. There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any living

creature. This called on me for revenge. I have sought it: I have killed many. I have fully glutted my vengeance. For my country, I rejoice at the beams of peace. But do not harbor a thought that mine is the joy of fear. Logan never felt fear. He will not turn on his heel to save his life. Who is there to mourn for Logan? Not one."

After this war closed, Logan married a Shawnee woman, and moved to Detroit. He had become addicted to drinking; and, in one of his frenzies, he struck his wife down in presence of her tribe; and fearing he had killed her, and knowing the Indian law of retribution, he fled. As tradition has it, he met his wife's nephew with other Indians, and, supposing that this relative was about to avenge the murder, he prepared to defend himself, declaring he would kill all who opposed him. The nephew, in self-defence, shot him dead as he was dismounting from his horse.

In the vicinity of Lewistown there are several caves of great interest. Alexander's, in Kishicoquillas Valley, abounds in stalactites and stalagmites, and is a natural ice-house, preserving through the summer all the ice formed in the winter. Hanewall's, near McVeytown, is very vast in extent, and contains calcareous concretions: crude saltpetre has been found in it. Bevin's is on the summit of a limestone ridge. An Indian mound which was near the town, containing bones and arrow-heads, was destroyed by the construction of the canal. A mineral spring is in the vicinity, which is said to be very efficacious in bilious complaints.

Lewistown is beautifully situated on the left bank of the Juniata. It is well built: its private residences are very handsome, many of them tastefully decorated. It was laid out in 1790, and incorporated in 1795. It was the scene of a riot in 1791, growing out of a difference of opinion upon the action of a brigade-inspector, who refused to issue commissions to two militia colonels. There was also much excitement in a dispute between Mifflin and Huntingdon Counties, as to the western line of division between them. These disturbances were both settled without bloodshed.

It contains two furnaces, two tanneries, boiler-works, three



flour-mills, two carriage-factories. It has also six churches, an academy, several fine hotels, three banks, and extensive county buildings. Iron ore is much mined, and sand is quarried for the manufacture of glass. Population 2,737.

Between this place and Mifflin, the railroad passes through the Lewistown Narrows, formed by the Black Log Mountains on the south, and the Shade Mountain on the north. These are most awe-inspiring to the most indifferent traveller. The mountains rise abruptly, in many places to the distance of a thousand feet, having their sides covered with a thick growth of forest-trees, which give a deep gloom to the gorge. Occasionally the chain is broken, or ravines are hollowed into its sides, and the rocks stand boldly out; but generally Nature has kept her walls intact, with foliage over all. These are reflected in the waters below, like giant sentinels ever keeping watch.

NEWTON HAMILTON, 188 miles, is the site of the Juniata Valley Camp-Meeting Association grounds, belonging to the Methodists. They are beautifully situated, and vast numbers of people gather at the annual meetings.

MOUNT UNION, 191 miles, is the first station in Huntingdon County, and is at the entrance of Jack's Narrows, which are made by the river forcing its way through Jack's Mountain. This defile is wild and rugged, its sides being almost destitute of vegetation, leaving exposed gray and sombre rocks. These narrows were named "Jack Anderson's Narrows," from the fact that an Indian trader named John Anderson, and his two servants, were murdered here by the savages. Mount Union is much resorted to during the summer months. Population 535.

HUNTINGDON, 202½ miles, is the seat of justice of Huntingdon County. This county was formed from a portion of Bedford County, Sept. 20, 1787. It lies within the great central mountain chains of Pennsylvania. Broad Top Mountain is among the ranges, and is noted for its semi-bituminous coal. In mineral wealth the county ranks very high. It is rich and abundant in iron ore, and the supply of coal seems inexhaustible: it has also a large territory covered with sand, suitable for the manufacture of glass.

This county has been the scene of many depredations by the

Indians; and some of their first cabins, which the Indians claimed were built upon land belonging to them, were burnt by the proprietary government to satisfy the aborigines. The place is still called Burnt Cabins.

The exact time the white settlers came to the spot where the town stands is uncertain; but it was surveyed in 1756, and called "George Croghan's Improvement." It was known by the Indians at a very early period, and for years afterwards, as "Standing Stone," from a stone column which stood upon the flat below the present town where Stone Creek enters the Juniata River. It was covered with hieroglyphics, which, if they could have been deciphered, would have given more of aboriginal history than has yet been discovered. It is thought the Indians took this stone with them when they went West. Another stone was erected upon the spot, probably by white settlers, as many names of white men were cut upon it, and dates from 1768 to 1770. This stone was afterwards set up in the town, where it stood until it was broken by a drunken vandal, when a part of it was put in the foundation-wall of a house, and the remnant is now in the possession of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania.

The town is built upon the left bank of the Juniata, and occupies a lofty position. The scenery about it is of the most beautiful character; and as far as the eye can reach are hills and valleys, affording a perspective rarely seen. It was laid out in 1777 by Rev. Dr. William Smith, provost of the University of Pennsylvania. He named it in honor of Selina, Countess of Huntingdon, who had given much to the University. In 1796 it was incorporated as a borough. Merchandising is extensively carried on. It has two grist-mills, two carriage-manufactories, car-manufactories, boot and shoe and broom factories. There are nine churches, an academy, three select schools, a large public hall, two banks, several fine hotels, and county buildings. Population 3,034.

TYRONE, 223 miles, is the first station in Blair County. It is an outgrowth of the Pennsylvania Railroad, and was created a town in 1849. It has advanced rapidly, being advantageously located at the mouth of Little Bald Eagle Creek, thus becoming

the point from which a large portion of the trade of Clearfield and Centre Counties is shipped; and, since the construction of the Bald Eagle Valley and the Tyrone and Clearfield Railroads, it has become one of the most important stations between Pittsburgh and Philadelphia. It was named for the Tyrone Iron Works, about one mile east of it.

The scenery about Tyrone is fine; and Sinking Valley, about three miles east of it, is noted for its beauty of scenery, historic interest, and natural curiosities. It has lead-mines, which were discovered as early as the Indians and whites together occupied the land; but the mining of them has never amounted to much.

The town has eight churches, two banks, two public halls. Its business is extensive; and it contains two forges, a steam-tannery, and three planing-mills. Population 1,840.

\*ALTOONA, 237 miles, is in Blair County; and to the concentration of the business and workshops of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company here, is to be ascribed its remarkable growth, in fact, its existence. It is eleven hundred and sixty-eight feet above tide-water, and is at the base of the main Alleghanies. It was in 1849 that the railroad company selected it as the most favorable location for their shops, and it was then little more than a wilderness; but, as soon as it was publicly announced that it was to be used for this purpose, owners of the adjacent farms began to lay out and sell house-lots; and the differences which arose between the proprietors of the to-be city are the cause of the irregularity of its streets at present. At its foundation, the middle portion was named Altoona; the eastern, Greensburg; and the western, Loudensville. These names were all continued until 1867, when a city charter was granted.

It was incorporated as a borough on the 6th of February, 1854; and about this time the Logan House, which is as fine a hotel as any in the United States, was opened by the company to accommodate the great travel over this line. Churches had been erected, and a bank established, a year before this. In 1855 a newspaper was published; and on the 15th of December, 1859, gas and water were introduced.

The Pennsylvania Railroad Company has well cared for this

city of its creation. It has left nothing undone by which the workmen can be made happy and contented. There is a school for children, open at all times, maintained by it. It was the means of the introduction of water, and purchased the first steam fire-engine.

The scenery around Altoona is rugged, and at some points approaches grandeur. The views from Prospect Hill on the south, and Gospel Hill on the north, are varied pictures of mountain and valley, city and country; and from Wapsononoc, six miles distant, is obtained a view of the whole Juniata Valley.

During the late war, this place was selected, in the heat of summer, for a meeting of all the governors of the Union States, on account of its coolness, salubrity, and picturesque views. No location could have been more eligible for such a conference.

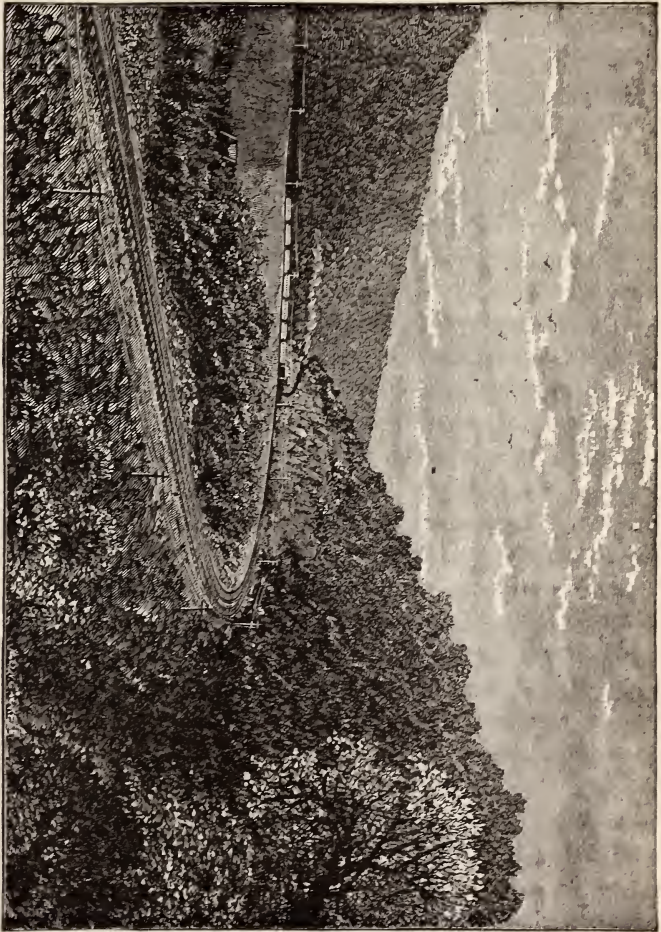
KITTANNING POINT, 242 miles, is the commencement of the Horse Shoe Curve; and as no language could better describe this triumph of engineering skill, by which the road is carried over the seemingly impassable chasms into which the valley separates here, we quote from Mr. Sipes, to whom we are already so largely indebted for descriptions of points along the road. "By a grand horseshoe-shaped curve, the sides of which are parallel with each other (giving trains travelling the same way the appearance of moving in entirely different directions), the road crosses both ravines on a high embankment, cuts away the point of the mountain dividing them, sweeps around the stupendous western wall, and leads away to a more tractable pass. The little dancing rivulet seen in the valley as the train rolls across it is the stream from which Altoona derives its supply of water. Reaching the new pass, the road continues its steady course through the very heart of the great dividing range of a continent." Population of Kittanning Point is about 150.

Having journeyed, in this chapter, along this king of railroads, from Harrisburg, the capital of Pennsylvania, through fertile fields and valleys, waving with yellow harvests and luscious fruits, and studded with fine villages, to the top of the Alleghanies, we will stop here to breathe its oxygenated air,



and view its picturesque scenery. Had Noah's ark "rested upon this Ararat," how long it would have remained undiscovered none can divine; and when his posterity would have found their way down to "the Plain of Shinar," or the Valley of the

HORSE-SHOE CURVE.



Juniata, or the Susquehanna, who can tell? Certain it is, one standing here feels lofty; and why should he not, when every inspiration of this air seems to "add" not "one cubit" only, but several, "to his stature"? Well may men grow to the size

of giants here, as the Vermont boys were called when they came down from her mountains to fight the British in the days of our Revolutionary war. What air do these mountaineers breathe! What sons of Anak we expect to find upon these Alleghany Mountains.

## CHAPTER XX.

### PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD FROM THE TUNNEL TO PITTSBURG, ITS TERMINUS.

Tunnel — Gallitzin — Cresson — Sonman — Portage — Johnstown — Cone-  
maugh Furnace — Nineveh — Blairsville Intersection — Hillside — Latrobe —  
Greensburg — Penn — Manor — Irwin — Braddock's — Wilkesburg —  
Liberty — Pittsburg.

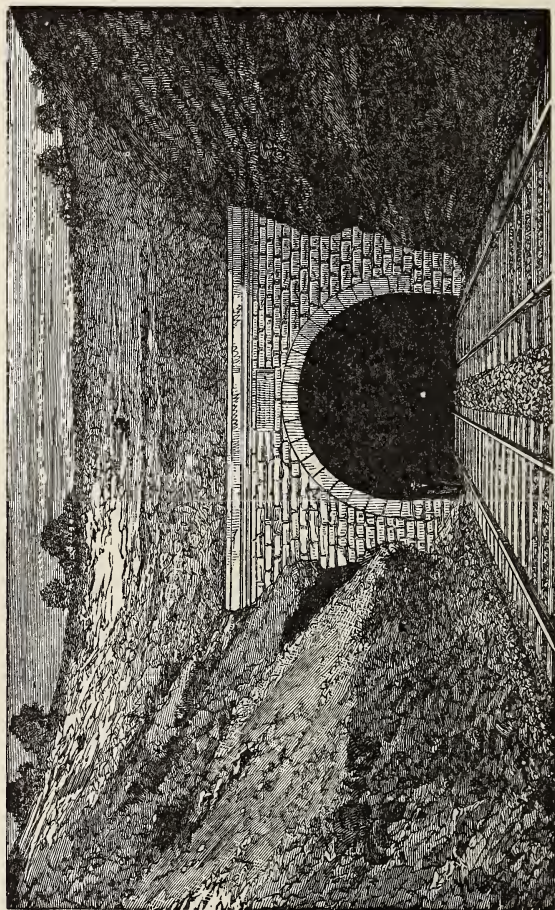
HAVING taken a REST, and breathed the pure air, and viewed the magnificent scenery (as stated at the close of the last chapter), at this vast elevation, we are now prepared to follow the iron horse as he plunges into the dark recesses of the mountain, through the masterpiece of human ingenuity; for unlike the Massachusetts tunnel of the Hoosac, which has proved a great "bore" in more senses than one, this has been a source of vast utility and emolument, not to Pennsylvania alone, but to the Western States. With every sense alert, we now enter the

TUNNEL, 248 miles. It is 3,612 feet long, and 210 feet high, and is securely arched. At its western end we reach the highest point on the road, 2,261 feet above tide-water mark.

GALLITZIN, 248½ miles, is the first station in Cambria County, which was formed from portions of Somerset and Huntingdon Counties by act of March 26, 1804. It has a rugged, uneven surface; and its soil, being of a cold character, is well adapted to grazing, and the raising of oats, rye, and potatoes. The Susquehanna rises in this county, and with Clearfield and Chest Creeks, which are tributary to it, affords advantages for lumber-rafting. Coal and iron ore are found in great abundance here, and are largely mined. Near the northern outskirt of this county there is an ancient fortification, supposed to be the work of the mound-builders of the Mississippi Valley.



The first settlements made in this county were about 1789, where the town of Loretto now stands, principally by Irish. Afterwards a colony of Welsh settled near Ebensburg, first laying out a town which they called Beulah, intending to make



ALLEGHANY MOUNTAIN TUNNEL.

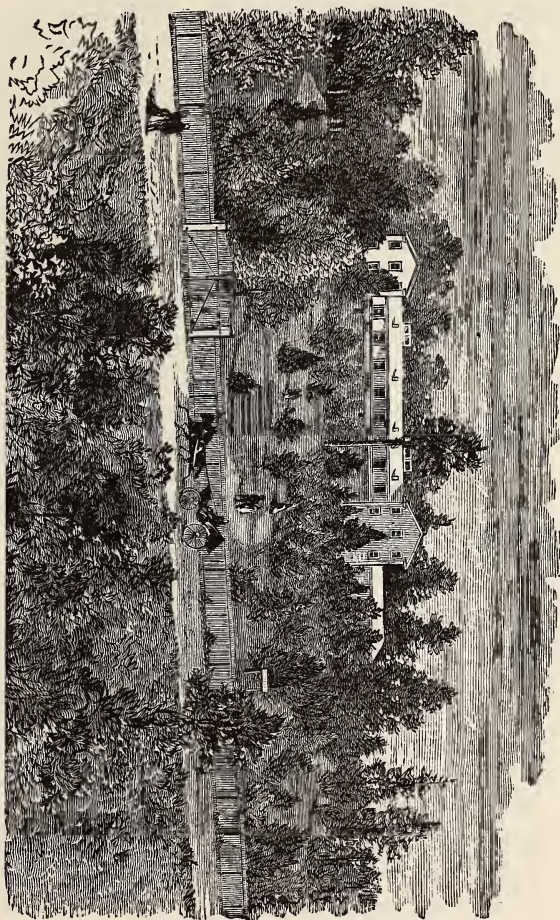
it the county-seat; but finally it was transferred to Ebensburg, and Beulah was abandoned.

Gallitzin takes its name from Prince Gallitzin, who came to this country from Germany, settling at Loretto, in 1789. He



held a commission in the Russian army from his birth, and was designed by his father for the soldier's profession. He had been sent to America to travel, as a finish to his studies, because the French Revolution rendered it unsafe to travel anywhere upon

MOUNTAIN HOUSE, CRESSON.



the continent; and, soon after his arrival in this country, he became deeply interested in religion, entered upon a course of studies under Bishop Carroll, and joined the Catholic priesthood. He was indefatigable in his labors for his colony, establishing

schools and churches; and, after a pastoral career of forty-two years, he died May 6, 1840, leaving a band of devoted Catholics.

Coal is mined extensively near this station, its production being about two million tons annually. It has two churches and a hotel. Population 1,000.

CRESSON, 252 miles, is noted as a summer-resort, and, from its accommodations and attractions, deserves to rank among the first in the United States. Situated upon the side of the mountain, at a distance of two thousand feet above the ocean level, there is a continual breeze, even in the midsummer days. Its edifices are large, well built, and comfortably arranged, with extensive and ornamental grounds. The principal one among these is the Mountain House, a very correct view of which is given in the plate. There are medicinal springs in its vicinity; and the drives about it are through unbroken forests of maple, hemlock, and beech. The country is indebted to Dr. R. S. M. Jackson, a well-known scholar and scientific man, for its knowledge of this health-giving spot. He spent years of labor and energy in planting here "a grand sanitarium, where the mentally and physically diseased dwellers in those moral excrescences on the body politic — great cities — could come and be cured by the action of God's pure air and water." Before his death, which occurred near the end of the rebellion, he was rewarded for all his toil by seeing the flourishing condition of the place.

SONMAN, 255 miles, is famed for extensive deposits of coal which exist here, of which seventy-five thousand tons are shipped annually.

PORTAGE, 250 miles, does a large business in lumbering; and great quantities of coal are mined. It was in the vicinity of this place the old Portage road was in operation, by which merchandise was transported in the boats of the Pennsylvania Canal over the mountains, by a system of levels and inclined planes; and the plate gives one of the many views of this old road, as seen from the cars in the descent from the summit of the mountain.

JOHNSTOWN, 276 miles, is beautifully situated, being wholly surrounded by mountains and hills, through which flow many

streams. This place was settled as early as 1791, by Joseph Johns, from whom it received its name. It occupies the site of the old Indian town Kickenapawling, and was the head of navigation on the Conemaugh. It has had a rapid growth, from the



PORTAGE ROAD.

fact that the country around abounds in coal, iron, fire-clay, and cement. The largest iron works in America, erected by the Cambria Iron Company, are located here. Vast quantities of steel and iron rails are manufactured by this company. Over



four thousand men are employed in these iron-works, and in mining coal and iron near this place.

The town is lighted with gas, has a public library, good schools, an opera-house, four banks, several handsome churches, a large public hall, and good hotels. Population 6,028.

CONEMAUGH FURNACE, 283 miles, is the first station in Westmoreland County.

NINEVEH, 285 miles, is noted for having thirty acres of bog-iron deposit near it, which extends to a depth of thirty feet.

BLAIRSVILLE INTERSECTION, 300 miles, is the point where the railroad emerges from the mountain ranges of Pennsylvania, and where it is carried across the Susquehanna River upon a long bridge. It has followed the valley of this river for one hundred and ninety miles. Here is the junction of the Western Pennsylvania Railroad, which runs to Alleghany City, being merely an addition of the Pennsylvania road. A branch road runs from Blairsville to Indiana, the county-seat of Indiana.

HILLSIDE, 304 miles, is in a rich agricultural country, which also abounds in coal. In Chestnut Ridge, near by, is the Great Bear Cave, which is thus described, in Mr. Sipes's railroad book,<sup>1</sup> by one who explored this great natural curiosity, and wandered through its winding chambers: "Leaving the cars at Hillside, we set out on foot for the cave. After a brisk walk of about a quarter of an hour, along a country road, which penetrated the foot-hills of the ridge, we struck out into a cow-path. This led us rather tortuously up the side of the mountain, over primitive boulders heaped together in the strangest confusion, across little mountain trout-streams rippling over moss-covered rocks, and trickling in diminutive cataracts into gorges where the sun never penetrates. We finally reached the summit of one of the lower hills. In front of us towered a high peak of the ridge. Winding around the base of this, for the distance of fifty rods, our guide suddenly stopped in the midst of a huge pile of rocks, and informed the party that we were at the mouth of the cave. Rocks to the right of us, rocks to the left of us; in front of us a solid wall of rock one hundred feet high; and below us, over the tops of

<sup>1</sup> Pennsylvania Railroad, p. 153.



the highest trees, we could see the valley of the Conemaugh away to the north and west. Just where we stood, it seemed as if, centuries ago, some mighty convulsion had torn away a portion of the mountain, and hurled the rocks in unutterable confusion at its base, where time had covered them with moss, and beautified them with shrubs and wild flowers." Entering the cave through a fissure in the loose rocks, the exploring-party proceeded on their way. Narrow passages in the rocks were threaded; low openings crept through; immense chambers, studded with stalactites, and inhabited by bats, explored; and fathomless chasms crossed, where the sound of running water was heard far down in the darkness. Some of the large rooms visited were named "The Snake Chamber," "The Altar Room," and "The Senate Chamber," because of peculiarities they presented; and a clear, running stream, of only a few inches in depth, and a dozen feet wide, was forded, the water of which was found to be cold and palatable, "with a strong odor of cinnamon." These explorations were continued for five hours, the party having travelled in that time, according to the twine they had used to guide them in the labyrinth (and, from the many windings and passage-ways, it is not considered safe to penetrate any considerable distance without the use of this means of finding the outlet again), nineteen hundred yards,—something over a mile. "Perhaps the most remarkable feature about the cave is the varied and diversified aspect of the different chambers and passage-ways, and the fact that the explorer is not confined to any particular route, but, after entering for a distance of one hundred yards, is permitted to strike off at almost any point of the compass. You will find the routes invariably different in the nature of the openings, and that all the passages communicate with each other. There is a story told of a young girl becoming lost in it many years ago. She had been stolen from her home by a band of gypsies who had encamped in the neighborhood of the cave, and had visited it several times in company with them. She effected her escape from the gypsies by taking refuge in the cave. Penetrating to a great distance, and being unable to return, she perished of starvation. Her bones were found years afterwards."

LATROBE, 313 miles, lies in the midst of a fertile and well-cultivated valley. Oliver W. Barnes, a civil engineer, laid out this town in 1851, since which time it has grown rapidly. Large deposits of coal have been recently discovered in the surrounding country. Several large companies have been organized for mining, and making coke. Near this place is St. Vincent's College for males, and St. Xavier's Academy for females.

The town has three banks, two public halls, seven churches, several good hotels, a grist-mill, and a planing-mill.

GREENSBURG, 323 miles, is the seat of justice of Westmoreland county. This county was separated from Bedford by act of Feb. 26, 1773, and at that time it comprised the whole of Western Pennsylvania. There is no better land in the State than is found in many of the valleys of this county. Bituminous coal of the very best quality underlies all the land in the county; and the most extensive and valuable operations in the United States are carried on within its limits. These extensive works have rendered Westmoreland County one of the richest in Pennsylvania. Up to 1758, this whole region was a wilderness; and the first opening through it was cut by Gen. Forbes's army in this year, when he made a successful expedition against Fort Duquesne. Upon the opening of this road, under the protection of the military, many pioneers entered this wilderness, and enjoyed quiet and security for five years.

It was in this region that the savage warfare to exterminate the whites, instigated by the celebrated Pontiac (a partial account of which has already been given in a preceding chapter) occurred in 1763; and to this we add the following: Forts Presque Isle, Le Boeuf, Venango, St. Joseph's, Michilimackinac, were taken, and all their inhabitants butchered. Forts Bedford, Ligonier, Detroit, and Pitt were saved. Fort Ligonier was attacked by the savages; but, finding it too strong, they determined to capture it by cutting off the supplies and re-enforcements from the east. Lieut. Blaine, the commander of this fort, bravely repulsed the savages, and held it until relief arrived. Col. Bouquet, with two regiments of regulars, had been sent to the rescue of Fort Pitt, and reached Ligonier about

the end of July. The Indians, hearing of his arrival, and understanding that he was going to Fort Pitt, moved into the wilderness to waylay him. At a place called Bushy Run, they lay in ambush for his advancing army; and here was fought one of the most bloody battles that ever took place in Western Pennsylvania. The savages in great numbers, well armed, and hid in the thick woods, for two days assaulted the weary soldiers of Bouquet. They appeared to be innumerable, and, when driven from one position, immediately appeared at another, and it seemed as though the English would be exterminated by them; but Bouquet knew the character of the savages well, and perfectly understood their mode of warfare. By simulating a retreat, he drew the savages into close quarters, and defeated, and drove them from the field. Sixty Indians, with several of their chiefs, were killed. Fifty of the English were killed, and sixty wounded.

Most of the settlers in this county were Scotch-Irish. They early gave attention to the subjects of education and religion. Some of their ministers were learned and eloquent; and they manfully endured all the hardships and privations of the new settlements, and, like Paul, they labored with their hands, as well as their heads, to sustain themselves. One of them gives the following description: "When I came to this country (in 1788), the cabin in which I was to live was raised; but there was no roof to it, nor any chimney or floor. We had neither bedstead nor table, nor stool, nor chair, nor bucket. We placed two boxes, one on the other, which served us for a table, and two kegs served us for seats; and, having committed ourselves to God in family worship, we spread a bed on the floor, and slept soundly till morning. Sometimes, indeed, we had no bread for weeks together; but we had plenty of pumpkins and potatoes, and all the necessaries of life: as for luxuries, we were not much concerned about them."

Greensburg was named for Gen. Greene of the Revolutionary army. It is built upon elevated ground, the Court House and other prominent buildings occupying the summit of the hill. It was incorporated in 1779. Its growth was slow for many years; but, since the completion of the railroad, it has

rapidly improved. Its inhabitants, for intelligence and refinement, will compare favorably with those of any part of the Commonwealth. It contains two banks, seven churches, an opera-house, two public halls, several good hotels, excellent schools, and a number of manufactories. Coal and coke works exist in the immediate neighborhood. Population 1,642.

PENN, 328 miles, does a large business in mining and shipping coal. This is the first place where coal-works for manufacturing illuminating gas went into operation; and the importance to which they have arrived in less than twenty years is marvellous. All the land about this station is underlaid with the finest quality of bituminous coal. It is mined very extensively; and the shipment by two companies alone amounts to more than three thousand tons annually, employing six hundred men. Penn contains two churches, a hall for the use of secret societies, hotels, and several stores and shops. Population 820.

MANOR, 333 miles, is so called from its location upon one of the tracts of land retained by the Penn family as private property as long as the royal charter given to William Penn and his heirs held good. Previous to the Declaration of Independence, there had been forty-four of these manors surveyed, which were held by them exclusively; and, as such, they were exempted from the regulations governing the rest of the colony.

The country about Manor is fertile and highly cultivated; and large loads of grain and cattle are sent eastward. It is not an incorporated village, and its population is about 300.

IRWIN, 332 miles, is important from its immense operations in coal. The shipment of three companies — the Penn Gas, the Westmoreland, and the Shafton, whose works are within ten miles of each other — amounts to more than a million tons annually; and they employ not less than a thousand men. A great number of villages have sprung up around it to accommodate the mining population. The land over these coal-beds is rich, and well improved. Irwin has four churches, a large public schoolhouse, a private banking-house, two public halls, and several hotels. Its population is 833.

BRADDOCK'S, 344 miles, takes its name from the fact that it was on this spot that Gen. Braddock was defeated by the Friends and Indians on the 9th of July, 1775.



WILKINSBURG, 347 miles, is just outside the corporate limits of Pittsburg. It lies in a fine agricultural region, and market-gardening is extensively pursued. There are coal-mines in its vicinity, which employ nearly three hundred men; and the annual shipment is about four thousand tons. The adjacent country is growing rapidly, many of the citizens of Pittsburg erecting handsome houses as summer residences. It is not yet incorporated, and has a population of about 1,100.

LIBERTY, 349 miles, is the location of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company's stock-yards and car-shops. It is being rapidly built up with handsome residences, and is, in fact, but a suburb of Pittsburg, which has, with such remarkable voracity swallowed up not only this station, but many surrounding places.

PITTSBURG, 354 miles, is the seat of justice of Alleghany County, and the western terminus of the Pennsylvania Railroad. Alleghany County was organized, part out of Westmoreland in 1788, and the remainder from Washington in 1789. The country is hilly, some of its hills rising to a considerable height. The soil is fertile, and much good land lies between the hills. It is a very healthy county. Many portions of it are exceedingly beautiful. An old historian says, "The richest gifts of Nature seem to have been bestowed by Providence upon this region; and the art of man has been most diligent in advancing the works of Nature, and developing her latent sources of wealth." Although the commercial and agricultural advantages of this county are very great, yet its mineral wealth is much greater.

\* The first effort to plant an English settlement in this neighborhood was made in 1748, when, at that time, Thomas Lee, one of his Majesty's Council in Virginia, organized an association with the design of locating upon the wild lands west of the Alleghany Mountains. Thomas Lee, Lawrence and Augustine Washington (brothers of George), a Mr. Hanburg of London, formed this association, which was chartered by the name of "The Ohio Company." The king granted to this company five hundred thousand acres of land, provided that two hundred thousand acres should be immediately selected, and held ten years free from quit-rent or tax to the king; and with a fur-

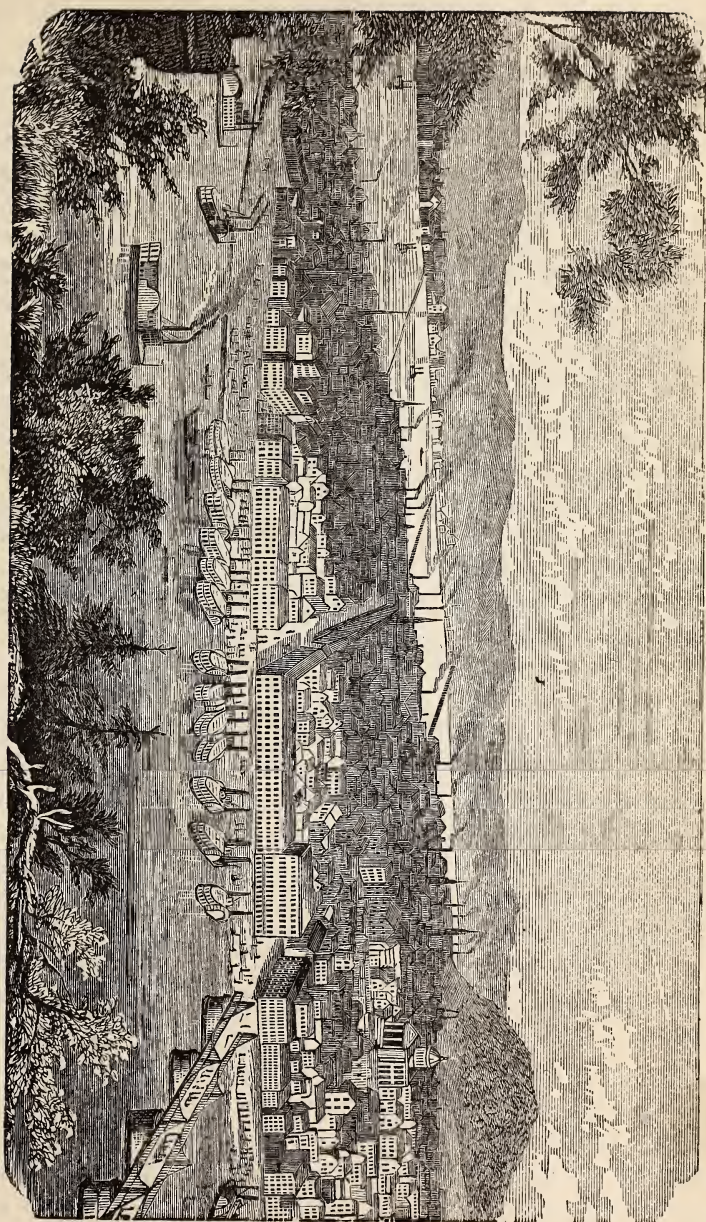
ther provision, that one hundred families should be settled upon them within seven years; the company bearing the expense, building a fort, and maintaining a garrison sufficient to defend the settlement. Under this charter the company commenced operations. In 1750 they sent out Christopher Gist to explore and report upon the country. He spent two years in visiting the western part of Pennsylvania, and other regions still farther west, now the States of Ohio, Tennessee, Kentucky, North Carolina, which were then all a wilderness. In July, 1752, Mr. Gist, with three commissioners from the Province of Virginia, made a treaty with the Indians at Logstown, near where Pittsburg now stands, by which treaty the Indians agreed not to disturb the settlements of the company south-east of the Ohio. But they declined to acknowledge that the English had any title to the lands. At this council, two of the old sachems asked Mr. Gist, "Where the Indians' land lay? for the French claimed all the land on one side of the Ohio River, and the English on the other." The question was a puzzling one.

The names of the three rivers at Pittsburg are, no doubt, Indian; but their interpretation is variously given. The Ohio, which the Senecas pronounced O-hee-o, means "fair water." The French translated this *La Belle Rivière*, or "the beautiful river." The Delawares gave the same meaning to the Alleghany, and all the early explorers considered these one and the same river. The Indians regarded the Monongahela to mean, according to some, "falling in banks," according to others, "a river without islands."

The region around Pittsburg was first explored by the French, who built Fort Duquesne where Pittsburg now stands. For many years, it was the source of much misery to the English settlers in Pennsylvania, because the French furnished the Indians with arms and ammunition, and encouraged them to destroy the homes of the English, and drive them off.

During the Revolutionary War, the post at Pittsburg was commanded by Capt. Neville. He was succeeded by Gen. Hand, Col. Broadhead, and Gen. Irvine. The savages were then leagued with the British; and the duty of these commanders was to guard the frontier against them. These officers were





CITY OF PITTSBURG.

watchful, and discharged the duties intrusted to them satisfactorily.

At this time the Penn family adhered to the crown, and took part against the colonists; but immediately after the treaty at Paris, by which the independence of the colonies was declared, they turned their attention to getting what they could from the lands which they held in Pennsylvania. Among these were 5,760 acres, including the site of Pittsburg, the point between the rivers, and extending south of the Monongahela. In 1784 the agent of the Penn family laid out the manor of Pittsburg in town-lots.

Arthur Lee visited Pittsburg in 1784, and wrote the following notice in his journal: "Pittsburg is inhabited almost entirely by Scots and Irish, who live in paltry log-houses, and are as dirty as in the north of Ireland, or even in Scotland. There is a great deal of small trade carried on; the goods being brought, at the vast expense of forty-five shillings per hundred weight, from Philadelphia and Baltimore. The place will never, I believe, be very considerable." Mr. Sipes adds, "But the small trade grew, the settlers developed with it, and Mr. Lee's prediction was soon proved unsound. In 1786 John Scull and Joseph Hall commenced the publication of the Pittsburg '*Gazette*,' a newspaper which still lives, and the same year a post was established between this place and Bedford, extending from there to New York, and Richmond, Va. The amount received for postage, at Pittsburg, for the year ending Oct. 1, 1790, was \$110.99. The number of houses in the city in 1786 was estimated by Judge Brackenridge at one hundred. A public academy was established here by act of the legislature, in 1787; and, the same year, the First Presbyterian Church was incorporated.

"Among the industries developed by the necessities of trade was the distilling of whiskey. This article had become a staple of commerce with the Indians, as well as with the trappers and hunters on the frontier. To show how indispensable it was in a business-way, it is only necessary to quote from a letter of an agent to his principals in Pittsburg, in which he says, 'I am greatly in want of three barrels of whiskey and a barrel of rum. For want of them, my neighbor gets all the



skin and furs.' The difficulty of transportation was very great; and the products of the soil — then almost all the people had to dispose of — could not be carried any distance. At the rate of sixpence per pound, the price charged, it would have cost about twenty dollars to transport a barrel of flour to the Eastern markets. Naturally the surplus grain raised was utilized in the most available manner; and this proved to be distillation. The production of whiskey, therefore, became an extensive business in all this portion of Pennsylvania."<sup>1</sup>

Upon the close of the Revolutionary War, to meet the expenses of the Government, and to pay its debts, Congress resorted to taxation, and at its session in 1791 imposed a tax upon spirits distilled from grain, which resulted in a whiskey rebellion, an account of which has been given in chapter fifteen. Although this uprising was a source of trouble to the General Government, it was advantageous to Pittsburg, as many of the young men sent with the troops to subdue it became so favorably impressed with the fertility of its soil and mineral wealth, that they remained as permanent settlers.

The Penn family sold the privilege of mining coal in a hill on the south bank of the Monongahela, in 1784, which would show that bituminous coal had been discovered there at that early period.

Pittsburg, from its start, seems to have very extensively engaged in manufactures. In 1795 an establishment for the manufacture of window-glass was organized; and even in 1794 a steam-engine was operated, but for what purpose is not known. In 1796 an important trade in salt was carried on between the Onondaga works in New York and this place; but, when the Kanawha salt came into favor in 1810, this region was made the source of supply for the Ohio and Mississippi valleys. There was also a manufactory of green glass-ware in operation in 1797; but this seems to have been attended with great expense, for a memorandum left by one of its owners states, "To-day we made the first bottle at the cost of thirty thousand dollars." In 1804 a foundery for casting

<sup>1</sup> Sipes's Pennsylvania Railroad, p. 170.

hollow-ware went into operation; and the next year a steam-flouring mill was established. A rolling-mill, the earliest here, was built in 1812; and in 1814 a cannon foundry, of which the celebrated Fort Pitts Works are an outgrowth.

The first steamboat plying the Western waters was built here in 1811; and, during the succeeding six years, seven more boats were built. The number owned, or partly owned, here in 1840, was eighty-nine.

In spite of her smoke, the natural attractions of her scenery, which are much enhanced by improvements, both of a public and private character, render Pittsburg a delightful place of residence; and, in many of the comforts of every-day life, she has no rival in the United States. Gas is cheaper, more abundant, and of a better quality; and her supply of water from the Alleghany River is unlimited.

The institutions supported or aided by the State located here will be elsewhere described. Among others of a like character are the following: Home for the Friendless, Widows' Home Association, Home for Destitute Men, Home for Destitute Women, Ladies' Relief Society, the Pittsburg Free Dispensary, Pittsburg Infirmary, Houses of Industry for Poor and Friendless Girls, Homœopathic Hospital, Mercy Hospital, Marine Hospital, and City Hospital. Among reformatory, are the Alleghany County Workhouse, and Inebriate Asylum.

The public edifices of Pittsburg are many and imposing, the most conspicuous of which are the Court House, City Hall, Custom House, and United States Arsenal. The view of the city from the Court House is very extensive. It has several large public halls, an opera-house, and two good theatres. Its annual shipment of coal by river is about 2,100,000 tons; by rail, 1,500,000 tons; consumed at home, 1,500,000 tons; making in all 5,100,000 tons from mines worked in Alleghany and adjoining counties.

There are several cemeteries in the immediate vicinity of Pittsburg. The one two miles from the centre of the city, on the banks of the Alleghany, is exceedingly beautiful for its natural situation; and this has been greatly improved artificially. This cemetery contains one hundred and ten acres.

In addition to the Western University, already named with other literary institutions, there are here the Methodist Female College, Pennsylvania Female College, Western Theological Seminary, and the United Presbyterian College, all of which are in a flourishing condition. The public schools are excellent.

There are sixteen banks, with a total capital of \$12,200,000. There are forty safe-deposit companies, the aggregate capital of which is \$5,000,000. The population of Pittsburg is 86,076.

## CHAPTER XXI.

### CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE BRANCHES OF THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD.

East Brandywine and Waynesburg Branch — Glen Moore — Barneston — Waynesburg — Wrightsville — York — Mifflin and Centre County Branch — Logan — Mann's — Reedsville — Milroy — Bedford and Bridgeport Railroad — Mount Dallas — Bedford — Wolfsburg — Mann's Choice — Bald Eagle Valley Branch — Vail — Bald Eagle — Martha — Unionville — Milesburg — Bellefonte — Curtin — Howard — Eagleville — Beach Creek — Mill Hall — Tyrone and Clearfield Branch — Sandy Ridge — Osceola — Phillipsburg — Wallacetown — Clearfield — Hollidaysburg and Morrison's Cove Branch — Y Switches — Hollidaysburg — McKee's — Rodman — Roaring Spring — Martinsburg — Henrietta — Williamsburg Branch — Frankstown — Flowing Spring — Williamsburg — Ebensburg Branch — Munster — Ebensburg — Indiana Branch — Black Lick — Homer — Indiana.

#### EAST BRANDYWINE AND WAYNEBURG BRANCH.

THIS road intersects the main line at Downingtown; and the distances of the places named are from the point of intersection.

GLEN MOORE, 10 miles, is a charming little village in the midst of a fertile and well-cultivated region. Iron ore abounds, and a forge is in operation here. It has two churches, a public hall, and hotel. Population 150.

BARNESTON, 12 miles, contains a furnace, foundry, and several grist and saw mills. The country is fertile, and garden products for market are abundant. Iron ore was mined here as early as 1730.

WAYNEBURG, 18 miles, is the junction of this road with the Wilmington and Reading Railroad. It is in Chester County. All this region consists of fertile and agricultural lands. It has two churches, a national bank, and two hotels. Iron ore is



abundant here, employing seventy-five men in mining it. Population 550.

#### YORK BRANCH.

This road intersects the main line at Columbia.

WRIGHTSVILLE, 1 mile, is in York County, beautifully situated on the Susquehanna. Its scenery is truly magnificent. It was originally called "Wright's Ferry." It was at one time proposed to locate the capital at this place. Mr. Parton, in his "Life of Jefferson," gives an account of the doings of Congress in 1789 and 1790 on this subject in the following language:—

"A ring loomed up dimly upon the imaginations of members, supposed to have been formed 'out of doors,' in order to fix the capital at Wright's Ferry, on the Susquehanna. The members from New England and New York agreed in preferring it, as the point nearest the centre of population, wealth, and convenience; and for many days it seemed to have a better chance than any of the other places proposed,—Harrisburg, Baltimore, New York, Germantown, Philadelphia. But Wright's Ferry lost its chance through the opposition of the Southern members, and the ring-rumor was the ass' jaw-bone which they used to kill the project. The members from New England and New York denied the offensive charge, and contended that Wright had fixed his ferry at the point which would be 'the centre of population for ages to come.' With regard to the country west of the Ohio,—'an unmeasurable wilderness,'—Fisher Ames was of the opinion (and it was everybody's opinion) that it was perfectly romantic to allow it any weight in the decision at all. 'When it will be settled, or how it will be possible to govern it,' said he, 'is past calculation.' Southern gentlemen, on the other hand, denied the centrality of Wright, and maintained that the shores of the noble Potomac presented the genuine centre to the nation's choice. And so the debate went on, day after day. The Susquehanna men triumphed in the House; but the Senate sent back the bill with 'Susquehanna' stricken out, and 'Germantown' inserted. The House would not accept the amendment; and the session ended before the place had been

agreed upon. The subject being resumed in the spring of 1790, it was again productive of heat and recrimination: again the South was outvoted, and the Potomac rejected by a small majority. Baffled in the House, Southern men renewed their efforts over Mr. Jefferson's wine and hickory-nuts in Maiden Lane. It was agreed, at length, that, for the next ten years, the seat of government should be Philadelphia, and finally near Georgetown."

It is said that it was through the indolence and indifference of her representatives, that Pennsylvania failed in securing this end, as, at the time, it was believed to be the best location, geographically considered. Pres. Washington was in favor of the measure; but his influence was not sufficient to carry it. Wright's Ferry did not reap much benefit from this notoriety, still continuing an unimportant little village until 1834, when it was incorporated as a borough, with its present name.

The ferry was established by a family of Wrights, for whom the town is named, who came to the region in 1728, and were very prominent in the early days of the settlement.

Wrightsville contains three cigar-manufactories, a planing-mill, an iron-furnace, and three saw-mills, employing about a hundred and fifty men in all. Lime-burning is carried on here, the production of which is some seven thousand tons annually. A very large trade is done in this town, as, from its situation, it affords exit to a productive and extended country. It has a national bank, two hotels, eight common schools, a public hall, and three churches. Population 1,544.

YORK, 14 miles, is the seat of justice of York County. This county was the first one formed west of the Susquehanna River, by act of the Provincial legislature of Aug. 9, 1749. The surface of the county is irregular, some portions hilly, but the only claim it has to mountains are a few broken chains, forming its boundaries, and penetrating its territory. Its lands in the valleys are fertile and well cultivated, and present beautiful pastoral scenes. This county is drained in every part by Cone-wago and Codorus creeks, with their numerous branches; and, along the north-eastern border, the Susquehanna River flows for more than fifty miles. Iron ore is particularly abundant

here, of which there are many varieties; and it ships great quantities to distant furnaces. There is an excellent quality of slate quarried at the Peach Bottom region, near the Susquehanna; and the building-material used in all the neighboring counties is also quarried here. Gold and copper have been discovered, but in such small quantities, that it is not deemed advisable to work them.

This county was settled by the English, the Germans following them in great numbers, then the Scotch-Irish; and their united enterprise and thrift made it among the first in the State in material wealth and mental growth. It is claimed that the "first company that marched from Pennsylvania to the field of war was a company of riflemen from the town of York." However this may be, this county was well and numerously represented in the army of the Revolution.

York County is now regarded among the first in the State in wealth and population, her growth within the last thirty years having been very rapid. The Northern Central Railroad extends its entire length; the tide-water canal runs fifty miles along its border; and there are several local railroads, which reach to its prolific valleys, valuable mines of coal and iron, and the growing towns with which it is so thickly studded. All these facts join to give it this importance; and the great degree of business energy everywhere visible presents a happy augury for its future prosperity and increase.

The borough of York is situated on Codorus Creek, upon one of the Penn manors known as Springettsburg, in nearly the centre of the county. It was laid out upon a plan like Philadelphia, in 1741, as ordered by the Penns, and was upon both sides of the creek. Those wishing to take up lots became the recipients of "tickets" from the proprietors; and, as these tickets were transferable, the owner might sell, assign, or do any thing he pleased with them. The conditions upon which the lots were granted were strenuously enforced. One of the usual ones was, "that the applicant build upon the lot, at his own proper cost, one substantial dwelling-house, of the dimensions of sixteen feet square at least, with a good chimney of brick or stone, within the space of one year from the time of

his entry for the same." The holders were to pay a perpetual rent of seven shillings sterling per lot to the proprietors.

These restrictions were the source of much trouble, as, from the poverty of many of the early settlers, it was impossible to build upon the lots; and during ten years but fifty lots were improved; while, in some cases, want of means prevented improvements commenced from being completed, and the lots were forfeited. An early historian thus speaks of this matter: "The early settling of Yorktown was one continual scene of disturbance and contention: there were warring rights and clashing interests. It often happened that different men wanted the same lot; and, when the lot was granted to one, the others were watchful to bring about a forfeiture. The loss of lots by not fulfilling conditions was for a long time a serious evil, concerning which clamors were loud." But these disputes were gradually settled by law, and after a time the town improved with great rapidity. It was incorporated as a borough in 1787.

In 1803 a conspiracy to burn the town was plotted by the negro slaves held there at that time. It was discovered by a negro woman being seen to throw a pan of live coals in her master's barn at noonday. Upon being questioned, she confessed that it was their intention to fire the whole town "at twelve o'clock;" but from her mistake at thinking it at noonday, instead of midnight, the town was saved.

A company for supplying the town with water was established in 1806. York has a number of manufacturing industries, conspicuous among which are the Empire Car Works, the York Car Works, the Pennsylvania Agricultural Works, and the Variety Iron Works, which together employ five hundred and fifty men. A number of paper and flour mills are in the vicinity of the town. It is the centre of a large and increasing trade, and carries on all kinds of merchandising with the various portions of the county. It contains fourteen churches, thirty-one public and four private schools, five banks, a public hall, several good hotels, and the usual number of public edifices, which are built in a very substantial manner. Population 11,003.



## MIFFLIN AND CENTRE COUNTY BRANCH.

The point of junction with the main line is at Lewistown.

LOGAN, 4 miles, is where the Logan Iron and Steel Works and the Standard Steel Works are located, which employ about four hundred men. Population about 1,000.

MANN'S, 6 miles, is at the celebrated axe factory of the same name, which employs a hundred and fifty men.

REEDSVILLE, 7 miles, has a small woollen-mill, and carries on some trade with the surrounding country, which is well cultivated. It has two churches, two hotels, and a seminary. Population of the township is 1,250.

MILROY, 13 miles, in Mifflin County, is an enterprising village, and the terminus of the road. It has a number of industries, among which are saw-mills and a woollen-factory. Near it fossil iron ore is mined, large quantities being shipped to different points. Lime-burning is carried on; and about forty tons daily are sent to Lewistown. It has three churches, two hotels, a graded school, and two public halls. Population about 600.

## BEDFORD AND BRIDGEPORT RAILROAD.

This road intersects the Huntingdon and Broad Top Railroad (which is the connecting link between it and the main line) at Huntingdon.

MOUNT DALLAS is the commencement of this road, and the station for Everett, a flourishing borough of Bedford County, containing a coach-factory, a steam-tannery, and an iron foundery. It has an extensive and productive country immediately surrounding it, and thus it is enabled to carry on a large mercantile business. There are fossil and hematite iron-ore mines in its vicinity, which employ about a hundred men; and the annual shipment from these mines is thirty thousand tons. It contains four churches, three hotels, a bank, and a very good system of public schools. Population 557.

BEDFORD, 8 miles, is the seat of justice of Bedford County. This county was formed from a portion of Cumberland by the colonial legislature, March 9, 1771. The main Alleghany forms the western boundary; and Ray's Hill, Will's Mountain,

Sideling Hill, Tussey's and Dunning's Mountains, and Clear Ridge pass entirely through it, thus rendering its surface hilly and mountainous, interspersed with fertile valleys, which nature and art have done much to make peculiarly attractive. Its chief rivers are the Raystown branch of the Juniata, Will's Creek, and Dunning's Creek. The finest quality of iron ore is abundant all through the county; and near the town of Bedford large quantities of hematite and fossil ores are mined, and shipped from thence. At Broad Top region, or the south-eastern corner of this county, semi-bituminous coal exists; and since the introduction of railroads for transportation, within the last twenty years, it has been extensively worked.

The first settlement was made early — probably before 1750 — by an adventurous pioneer named Ray, and was at that time known by the name of Raystown. In 1755, a road was cut through this region; and several military posts were established upon it, which served as a protection to the frontier. One of these was built upon or near the point where Fort Bedford was afterwards erected in 1757–58. It was at this fort that a detachment, under Gen. Forbes, concentrated before setting out on that memorable expedition, resulting in the entire subjugation of the French. Col. Washington joined Forbes here; and a garrison of two hundred men was left at the fort, which was then called Bedford, in honor of the Duke of Bedford; but the region around it still retained, for several years after, the name of Raystown. Upon the settlement of the town, it naturally took the name of the fort; while the name of Raystown is now held only by the river which flows by it. From 1758 to 1770 this fort was considered an important military post, being the only one between the Ohio and the Delaware regularly garrisoned by British troops. A log-house is still seen in the town, — to which two additions, one of brick, the other of stone, have been made; the whole now being used as a hotel, — which was erected as quarters for British officers, and, during the whole time they were in the fort, was occupied by them. It was for a long time called "The King's House." It is upon the highest point in the old portion of the town; and in front of it is a small square, called the "diamond,"

probably making part of the old fort, said to have been very regular in form.

Bedford was laid out in 1766, and incorporated as a borough March 13, 1795; and for thirty years of the present century has been a place of importance from the fact that it is nearly in the centre of the principal route of communication between the Susquehanna and Ohio Rivers.

It lies in a fertile valley, surrounded on all sides by mountains: the deep romantic gorges which the streams cut through these elevations present beautiful and varied scenes. The buildings are principally of brick, and many of them are very tasteful in their architecture and surroundings. The town has five churches, a good public school-building, a bank, a public hall, the common county buildings, and good hotels. The local business is active, and a good share of trade is carried on with the neighboring country. Its present population is about two thousand. About one mile south of this place are the celebrated Bedford Springs, so noted for their efficacy in curing paralysis, rheumatism, and gout; and large numbers are attracted hither to try their healing power, and enjoy the beauties which Nature has so bountifully bestowed upon this spot. The hotels at the Springs accommodate six hundred guests, while those of the town have capacity for two thousand.

WOLFSBURG, 11 miles, is noted for its iron ore, of which twenty thousand tons are annually shipped.

MANN'S CHOICE, 16 miles, has sulphur springs, and is much resorted to.

#### BALD EAGLE VALLEY BRANCH.

This road intersects the main line at Tyrone.

VAIL, 3 miles, is the point of intersection with Tyrone and Clearfield Railroad.

BALD EAGLE, 5 miles, mines and ships much iron ore.

MARTHA, 17 miles, has iron ore and coal in its vicinity. It has also a saw and grist mill.

UNIONVILLE, 26 miles, has a fine seminary in flourishing condition, and carries on an extensive local trade.

MILESBURG, 31 miles, is a borough in Centre County, of some

importance, having in operation a forge, wire-mill, iron-furnaces, and rolling-mill, employing together nearly five hundred men. A railroad, called the Snow-Shoe Railroad, intersects near here, and runs to coal-mines of the same name, conveying annually about eighty thousand tons of coal. This road passes over a high elevation in the mountains; and the scenery is remarkably grand. At the village of Snow-Shoe there is a fine hotel, much resorted to in summer. Milesburg has good hotels and four churches. Population 600. A branch road of two miles runs from this place to Bellefonte.

BELLEFONTE, 33 miles, is the county-seat of Centre County. This county was formed Feb. 13, 1800, and is so called from the fact that it is geographically the centre of the State. It is a rugged, mountainous region, with luxuriant limestone valleys. It is through the valleys the railroad passes. It has a number of fine springs gushing from the limestone strata at the foot of the Alleghanies; and from one of these Bellefonte takes its name. Iron is extensively manufactured here, and iron ore is abundant. Bituminous coal is also found, and is largely mined. A large proportion of the population consists of German farmers; and they have brought the valleys to a high degree of cultivation.

The town contains a rolling-mill, a machine-shop, an axe-factory, and an iron-furnace, which together employ about three hundred and fifty men. It has a large mercantile business. The State Agricultural College is located near this place; and it has also a fine academy, good graded schools, one national and three private banks, eight churches, two public halls, fine hotels, and the usual county buildings. Population 2,655.

CURTIN, 34 miles, is in the midst of a fertile and well-cultivated country. It has two iron establishments, which employ four hundred men. It has also saw and grist mills. Five thousand tons of iron ore are annually mined. Population about 400.

HOWARD, 40 miles, has an iron-furnace and rolling-mill, employing about one hundred and twenty-five hands. Iron ore is abundant in its vicinity; and the surrounding country is rich in agricultural products. Population 298.



EAGLEVILLE, 44 miles, is the seat of a lumbering business at which some three hundred men are employed. Farming is largely carried on in the surrounding country. It has two hotels, two churches, and good schools. Population 550.

BEACH CREEK, 46 miles, is the first station in Clinton county. There are two steam saw-mills here, employing seventy-five men. Population about 400.

MILL HALL, 51 miles, has an axe-factory and a cement-mill, employing about one hundred men. Other industries are in operation here. Population about 450.

#### TYRONE AND CLEARFIELD BRANCH.

The point of intersection of this road with the main line is at Tyrone.

SANDY RIDGE, 15 miles; fire-brick manufacturing is largely carried on, employing some sixty men. Population about 300.

OSCEOLA, 20 miles, in Clearfield County, is an enterprising town, and the centre of an extensive lumber and coal business. It has a spoke-shop, a planing-mill, a shingle-mill, a very large and complete saw-mill, all employing about one hundred and twenty-five men. There are also other smaller industries. It has a large merchandising trade. This town is comparatively new, having been built up within the last twenty years. In its vicinity are nine collieries, which employ over a thousand men, and from which five million tons of bituminous coal are annually shipped. These collieries are added to each year. Also, adjoining the town, are nine saw-mills, using two hundred and thirty thousand feet of lumber per day, and employing over four hundred men. Osceola contains a public hall, good schools, three churches, a bank, and two hotels. Population 813.

PHILLIPSBURG, 24 miles, is in Centre County, and was founded in 1796, by Henry Phillips of England, from whom it takes its name. It was colonized by emigrants from abroad. The first screw-factory in the United States was established here, and also a forge and nail-factory. These industries were not long continued, as they were too far from business-marts to be profitable. The principal business is lumbering, the thick pine-forests furnishing ample material. Coal-mining, since the

completion of the railroad, has become an important branch of business, there being in operation three coal-mines, at which one hundred and fifty men are employed, and from which are shipped annually two hundred thousand tons. The town has a large steam tannery, a foundery and machine-shop, two planing-mills, a steam flour-mill, and other industries. It contains two banks, two public halls, good schools, five churches, a public library, and several hotels. There are extensive deposits of fire-clay near it. Population 1,086.

WALLACETON, 29 miles, has a steam saw-mill; and considerable lumbering is done in the vicinity. It contains a public hall, and about 160 inhabitants.

CLEARFIELD, 41 miles, is the seat of justice of Clearfield County. This county was created by act of 26th of March, 1804; but it was not fully organized until Jan. 29, 1822. It is on the north-western slope of the Alleghanies; and, although no distinct ranges are in its limits, it has a mountainous surface. The soil is sterile, although some of the alluvial deposits are very productive. It is rich in minerals, nearly the whole surface being underlaid with bituminous coal. Fire-clay and iron-ore are found in many sections. Its principal manufacture is lumbering, this county being the finest pine-tree region in Pennsylvania. Coal is largely mined in the south-eastern portion. Fire-brick manufactories are also carried on, and a superior kind of sand for manufacturing glass is found in various portions. Clearfield is on the west branch of the Susquehanna, and deserves to be classed among the pleasantest towns in Pennsylvania. It was laid out in 1806, upon lands owned by Abraham Witmer, who gave one lot for a jail, one for a court-house, three for an academy, besides contributing three thousand dollars towards the erection of the public buildings. It is upon the site of one of the last Indian towns in Pennsylvania, called Chinkalacamoose. It has a flourishing trade; and the general appearance of the place is attractive and thrifty. Many of its buildings are really elegant. It has three banks, five churches, a public hall, several good hotels, an academy, good public schools, and county buildings. Among its industries are a planing-mill, two saw-mills, a fire-brick manufactory,

cabinet-ware manufactory, a steam tannery, and foundery. Population 1,361.

#### HOLLIDAYSBURG AND MORRISON'S COVE BRANCH.

This road intersects the main line at Altoona; and the first place of any note from this point is —

Y SWITCHES, 7 miles, from which diverges a branch road to Duncansville and Newry, distant three miles. Duncansville has a nail-factory, rolling-mill, and tannery, which together employ about one hundred men; and lime-burning takes in some twenty more. It contains four churches, and two hotels, Population about 800. Newry is agriculturally important, and has a public hall, three churches, and a hotel. Population about 450.

HOLLIDAYSBURG, 8 miles, is the seat of justice of Blair County. This is a mountainous county, the Alleghany forming its western, and Tussey's Mountain its eastern border; while other ranges run through its entire length, the principal one being Dunning's. It has many productive and fertile valleys, among which Morrison's Cove is one of the finest in the State. It is thoroughly watered by many streams rising in the Alleghanies, and has springs of such extent as to be curiosities. Iron ore is abundant, and of fine quality; and manufacturing of iron is largely carried on. Bituminous coal is mined in the western part of the county; and near Hollidaysburg is a mountain said to be of solid limestone formation.

Hollidaysburg is delightfully located on the Juniata River, near the base of the Alleghany Mountain. It has become the centre of an extensive iron manufacture, from the fact that it is surrounded by deposits of iron ore and bituminous coal. The views from this town are magnificent; and its elevated portions present mountains and valleys as far as the eye can reach, mellowed and tinted by the distance into peculiar beauty. It is of recent growth, and until 1834 was insignificant; but at that time, upon the completion of the main line of public conveyance, it started upon a career of prosperity which it has ever since maintained.

The Blair Iron and Coal Company, the Hollidaysburg Iron

and Nail Company, the Juniata Iron Works and Nail Factory, are located here, with two founderies and machine-shops, employing together about five hundred men. There are also manufactories of carriages, soap, agricultural implements, and other smaller industries, among which are tanneries. Much merchandising is carried on here. Iron ore is worked in the neighborhood for home purposes, employing one hundred and fifty men. The town has two public halls, two extensive hotels, seven churches, a female seminary, excellent common schools, and the usual county buildings. Population 2,952.

MCKEE'S, 15 miles, contains an iron-furnace, and works iron ore, shipping ten thousand tons annually. These works employ seventy-five men. Population about 250.

RODMAN, 17 miles, contains a forge and iron-furnaces, which employ about one hundred and fifty men. Iron-ore mines are largely worked here, employing two hundred men.

ROARING SPRING, 18 miles, is so called from a wonderful spring which sends out an immense volume of water. Among the industries here are a grist-mill and a paper-mill. The country about this station is fertile, and in a high state of cultivation. There are several churches and a good hotel. Population about 250.

MARTINSBURG, 22 miles, is an ancient and charmingly situated borough in Morrison's Cove. It has many mechanical industries, among which are a planing-mill and iron foundry. It has also a large mercantile trade. Iron ore is mined here, employing about one hundred men; and its annual shipment is some six thousand tons. It has a collegiate institute, a bank, a number of churches, three public halls, graded common schools, and an excellent hotel. Population 536.

HENRIETTA, 28 miles, lies in a well-cultivated country. Iron ore is mined in the vicinity, employing about five hundred men. Population 350.

#### WILLIAMSBURG BRANCH.

The point of intersection with the main line, and also with Hollidaysburg and Morrison's Cove Railroad, is at Williamsburg Junction. The first place is —



FRANKSTOWN, 3 miles, thus named from an Indian chief, called Old Frank, residing here when the first white settlements were made. It declined in importance after Hollidaysburg took the rank it now holds. There are some few manufacturing industries here. Population of township 1,533.

FLOWING SPRING, 8 miles, takes its name from a curious spring, which ebbs and flows every twelve hours.

WILLIAMSBURG, 14 miles, was laid out in 1794. There is a spring here of sufficient force to drive a number of mills, a forge and furnace, besides furnishing the town with water. It carries on a large business with the surrounding region, which is fertile and productive. Population 821.

#### EBENSBURG BRANCH.

This road intersects the main line at Cresson.

MUNSTER, 4 miles, is a noted summer resort, and has two hotels.

EBENSBURG, 11 miles, is the seat of justice of Cambria County. It was settled in 1796, by a Welsh colony, and received its name from the son of the Rev. Reese Lloyd, one of the early ministers. It lies on the western slope of the Alleghany Mountains, nearly two thousand feet above the tide-line of the ocean; and, from this elevated position, it possesses a remarkably fine and health-giving atmosphere. It is much resorted to in summer, and can accommodate about four hundred persons. The Ebensburg Mining and Manufacturing Company is located here: there are also several tanneries and a foundry. It has six churches, five good hotels, two banks, a normal and public school, and county buildings. Population 1,240.

#### INDIANA BRANCH.

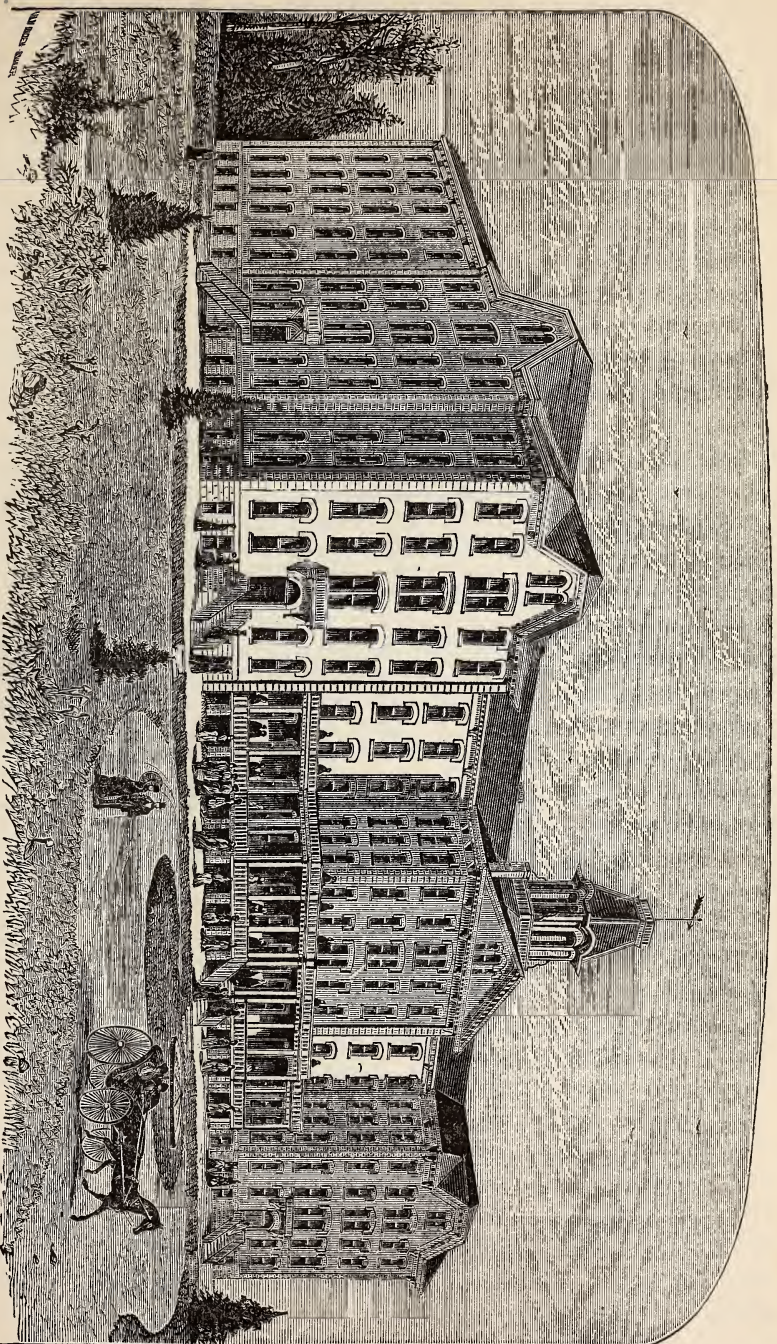
This meets the main line at Blairsville Intersection.

BLACK LICK, 7 miles, has two steam saw-mills, two grist-mills, three fire-brick works, which together employ one hundred and seventy-five men. Iron ore, fire-clay, and bituminous coal are mined in the vicinity. Population about 500.

HOMER, 13 miles, is noted for its lumber-business. A saw-

mill and grist-mill are located here. Its trade with the neighboring region is extensive. Iron ore, coal, and fire-clay are found in the vicinity. It has four churches, and about 700 inhabitants.

INDIANA, 19 miles, is the seat of justice of Indiana County. It was laid out in 1805, on a tract of land granted by George Clymer, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Its situation is fine; and its buildings are neat and tasteful, mostly of stone or brick. It has a foundery, planing-mill, and a manufactory of straw-boards. It contains two banks, ten churches, a public hall, a State normal school, good public schools, and the common county buildings. Coal-mining is carried on in the vicinity for home consumption. Population 1,606.



STATE NORMAL SCHOOL, INDIANA, PA.



## CHAPTER XXII.

### CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE BRANCHES OF THE PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD CONCLUDED.

Western Pennsylvania Railroad — Blairsville — Tunnel — Saltsburg — Apollo — Leechburg — Alleghany Junction — Freeport — Natrona — Tarentum — Hites' — Claremont — Sharpsburg — Etna — Alleghany City — Butler Branch — Saxonburg — Butler — South-west Pennsylvania Branch — Scottdale — Everson — Connellsville — Philadelphia and Erie Railroad — Sunbury — Northumberland — Milton — Watsontown — Dewart — Montgomery — Muncy — Williamsport — Jersey Shore — Wayne — Lock Haven — Farrandsville — Hyner — Renovo — Keating — Round Island — Sinnemahoning — Driftwood — Stirling — Cameron — Emporium — St. Mary's — Daguscahonda — Ridgway — Wilcox — Sergeant — Kane — Warren — Irvinetown — Corry — Union — Waterford — Jackson's — Erie — Lewisburg Centre and Spruce Creek Branch — Lewisburg — Mifflinburg — Danville and Hazleton Branch — Philadelphia and Erie Junction — Danville — Catawissa — Tomhicken — Bristol.

### WESTERN PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD.

THE point of junction with main line is at Blairsville intersection.

BLAIRSVILLE is beautifully located on the Conemaugh, just below the mouth of Black Lick Creek, and is surrounded by a fine agricultural country. It was laid out about 1819, and named for John Blair, who was then president of the Hollidaysburg and Pittsburg Turnpike Company. In 1828 it assumed an important position, being the point of transshipment for goods and travel over the mountain; but the prosperity which this induced was of short duration: and, when the line of improvements was finished in 1834, the place was deserted by the crowd of speculators, contractors, and forwarding agents, who had rendered it active and thrifty. The energy of the people, however, developed new enterprises;



and upon the construction of railroads, and the working of coal-mines, and burning of coke, she became the centre of a large trade, which has been maintained through many changes in the transporting business of Pennsylvania.

The Isabella Coke Works, which have two hundred ovens, and employ as many men, are two miles east of the town, on the railroad. They extend along the Conemaugh, and at night are strikingly grand, with their brilliant fires flashing through the darkness. The other industries of the place are two tanneries, two grist-mills, a foundery, and planing-mill. Coal is mined in the vicinity for shipment. The town contains six churches, a public hall, a female seminary and academy, two banks, and a number of good hotels. Population 1,054.

TUNNEL, 10 miles, is built through a high hill which curves around the Conemaugh, for the canal, as it was impossible to carry it around this bend. It is not used now; and from the railroad, which passes through another tunnel in the same hill, can be seen this monument of former greatness, substantially arched, and emerging at its western end on a fine aqueduct over the river.

SALTZBURG, 17 miles, is on the Conemaugh, where the railroad crosses it over a splendid bridge. It is named from the salt wells, so abundant in its vicinity. It was settled as early as 1800; and the first boring for salt, now become so important an industry, was made in 1813, by William Johnson. There is no spot in Pennsylvania which has finer scenery than this place. The town has a coach-factory and other lesser industries. Coal is mined here, of which the shipment is about fifty thousand tons annually. It contains a public hall, two good hotels, a literary institute, and bank. Population 659.

APOLLO, 27 miles, is an enterprising borough in Armstrong County. It has a rolling-mill for the manufacture of sheet-iron (at which one hundred and fifty men are employed), a planing-mill, fire-brick works, &c. It contains a public hall, two hotels, five churches, graded common schools, and a savings bank. Population 764.

LEECHBURG, 32 miles, was laid out by a gentleman by the

name of Leech, when the Pennsylvania canal was constructed ; and for many years the principal business was building canal-boats. A rolling-mill is in operation here, which employs two hundred men. A peculiar feature of this rolling-mill is working it by natural gas for fuel. This gas is obtained on the opposite side of the river, from a well, and is conveyed by pipes to the fires it supplies. It is exclusively used in the works, and has shown no signs of giving out. The town has a bank, an academy, two hotels, and five churches. Population 368.

ALLEGHANY JUNCTION, 37 miles, is the point of intersection with the Alleghany Valley Railroad. Here the Western Pennsylvania Railroad crosses the Alleghany River on a magnificent iron bridge. There is an oil-refinery at this station. Population about 100.

FREEPORT, 38 miles, is situated on the right bank of the Alleghany River, near the mouth of Buffalo Creek. The scenery about it is remarkably fine, presenting the best points of the Alleghany. It was laid out about 1800, but, until the construction of the Pennsylvania canal, made but little progress. From that time it has become an important town, and has well developed the resources of the neighboring region. It contains a planing-mill, steam saw-mills, and a distillery, and carries on a large lumber-trade. There are in the town two banks, nine churches, four hotels, and a public hall. Population 1,640.

NATRONA, 43 miles, is in Alleghany County. The Pennsylvania Salt Manufacturing Company's works are in operation here, employing about seven hundred men, in fact, all the labor of the place. There are three churches in the village, and a population of about 1,000.

TARENTUM, 45 miles, has a glass-factory, which employs fifty men, and there are also several smaller works. The borough has a bank, five churches, two hotels, and an academy. Population 944.

HITES', 47 miles, does a large business in mining iron ore and coal. It has an oil-refinery and an iron-furnace. Population about 300.

CLAREMONT, 58 miles, is the seat of the Alleghany County work-house and almhouse.

SHARPSBURG, 61 miles, in Alleghany County, is a very important borough, and carries on a large business with the surrounding country. Among its manufactories are saw-mills, iron-works, planing-mills, boiler-works, glass-works, and brick-making, which together employ about four hundred men. It has two banks, seven churches, a public hall, an academy, and several hotels. Population 2,176.

ETNA, 62 miles, has a rolling-mill and blast-furnace, employing six hundred men. Population 1,447.

ALLEGHANY CITY, 67 miles, is the terminus of the road. It is on the west bank of the Alleghany River, directly opposite Pittsburg, with which it is connected by several elegant bridges. It is the third city in population in Pennsylvania. It was laid out in 1789, upon a square of a hundred lots, each lot being sixty by two hundred and forty feet. But its rapid growth soon enlarged these bounds; and it now includes most of the thickly-settled portion of the county west of the river. It contains eleven wards and thirty-seven churches. In Alleghany City and Pittsburg united, including national, savings, and other banking institutions (according to the Pittsburg Directory for 1876), the whole number is eighty-seven. There are forty-five attorneys, two hundred and forty-eight physicians.

#### BUTLER BRANCH.

The point of junction (as is, also, the Western Pennsylvania Railroad) with the main line is at Freeport.

SAXONBURG, 11 miles, has a planing-mill, a manufactory of agricultural implements, a brewery, besides a number of mechanical trades. Iron ore and coal are found near it. It has three public halls, four churches, and several hotels. Population about 300.

BUTLER, 21 miles, the seat of justice of Butler County, is built upon an elevation above Conoquenessing Creek. It commands a fine view of well-cultivated lands. It was incorporated in 1817. It has a machine-shop, a woollen-mill, two founderies, and carries on extensive merchandising. It contains nine churches, a public hall, four banks, an opera-house, a literary institute for both sexes, graded common schools of an

excellent character, good hotels, and its county buildings are imposing. Population 1,935.

#### SOUTH-WEST PENNSYLVANIA BRANCH.

The point of intersection with the main line is at Greensburg.

SCOTTTDALE, 17 miles, was laid out May 1, 1873; and in one month the population rose to 300. It has extensive coke-works and also an iron-furnace, a planing-mill, a rolling-mill, and several furnaces.

EVERSON, 18 miles, is the first station in Fayette County, of which UNIONTOWN is the seat of justice. This is a delightful and enterprising borough, laid out in 1767, by Henry Beeson, a Quaker from Virginia. It lies in a charming valley, and has fine buildings both public and private. The contiguous country is underlaid with the finest quality of bituminous coal, iron ore, and limestone. It has educational facilities of a superior character, and contains four banks, ten churches, public halls, hydraulic cement, flouring, planing, and woollen mills. Population 2,503.

CONNELLSVILLE, 25 miles, is on the Youghiogeny River, at the place where Braddock crossed on his memorable expedition. Here are located the repair-shops of the Pittsburg, Washington, and Baltimore Railroad Company, and coke-works, which together employ about five hundred men. It has three planing-mills, grist-mills, tanneries, and fire-brick works. There are in the town two banks, eight churches, three public halls, good public schools, and hotels. Population 1,292. Opposite Conneltsville, on the south side of the river, is NEW HAVEN, where the South-west Pennsylvania Railroad crosses, which is being extended to Uniontown.

#### PHILADELPHIA AND ERIE RAILROAD.

SUNBURY is the point of junction with the Northern Central Railway, and the eastern terminus of this road. They are both controlled by the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, and form an unbroken route between Lake Erie and Baltimore. It is situated on the left bank of the Susquehanna, just below the junc-



tion of the West and North Branches, and above the mouth of Shamokin Creek. The scenery in its vicinity is magnificent; high, perpendicular cliffs rising from the border of the river, and overlooking it. At this place the river is a mile wide. It was laid out by John Lukens, and incorporated as a borough on the 24th of March, 1797. Its general appearance is attractive: the streets are wide and straight, and an air of tidiness and enterprise is everywhere visible. From its delightful location (rendering its atmosphere peculiarly salubrious), the purity of its water, and fertility of its soil, Sunbury is one of the most beautiful towns in Pennsylvania; and its future prosperity is certain from the concentration of the extensive railroad traffic here.

Among the most noted industries are the repair-shops of the Northern Central Railway, the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad shops, two planing-mills, three steam saw-mills, a grist-mill, two founderies, a car-wheel foundery, and an oil-mill, employing together about seven hundred men. An extensive mercantile trade is carried on; and the amount of anthracite coal shipped is about six million tons annually. The mines are located at the "Shamokin coal-region," about twenty miles distant. Grape-culture has been extensively pursued within the last few years; and there are now five vineyards in its vicinity, from one of which the yield, in 1872, was ten tons of Concord grapes, and a thousand gallons of wine. The town has seven churches, two banks, an academy, a high school, a seminary for young ladies, several private schools, eight primary schools, a number of good hotels, and the ordinary county buildings. Population 3,131.

NORTHUMBERLAND, 2 miles, is opposite Sunbury, at the junction of the North and West Branches of the Susquehanna. It occupies one of the most picturesque situations in the State. From a precipitous bluff near it, which juts out over the river, a view of surpassing magnificence and extent is had, of mountains broken into ridges, with valleys between, teeming with luxuriant fruits and dense foliage, and multitudes of improvements scattered here and there in its vicinity. The river is spanned by several bridges at this point, which increase the

attractiveness of the scene. This town was laid out in 1775, by Reuben Haines, a brewer from Philadelphia; but it has never fulfilled its early promise of becoming a commercial centre, which its situation seemed to warrant, being at the confluence of the two branches of the Susquehanna.

This place is noted for being the residence of Dr. Joseph Priestley, the alleged discoverer of oxygen gas, and the chief founder of the modern school of chemistry. On the 1st of August, 1874, the "Centennial of Chemistry" was celebrated in Northumberland by many of the most distinguished scientists of America.

The business of Northumberland is flourishing, and steadily increasing. It contains a car-manufactory, a nail-mill, and steam saw and planing mills. It contains a bank, several churches, four hotels, and good public and private schools. Population 1,788.

MILTON, 13 miles, is noted for its enterprise. It lies in the Susquehanna valley, and was founded, about the close of the last century, by Andrew Straub, a German; and most of the early settlers were of that nation. The country surrounding the town is fertile, and highly cultivated. Among its industries are a rolling-mill, two planing-mills, car-factory, and saw-mill, which employ about six hundred men. A large business is carried on in merchandising. It contains a public hall, three good hotels, six churches, two banks, and excellent public schools. Population 1,909.

WATSONTOWN, 17 miles, is among the earliest settlements of the Susquehanna. Business is very active here; and it has several saw-mills, a shoe-factory, a planing-mill, a tannery, a match-stick factory, which together employ about six hundred hands. It has a public hall, a bank, seven churches, three hotels, and good schools. Population 1,181.

DEWART, 19 miles, has a broom-manufactory and distillery, and is surrounded by a prolific country. It contains an academy, several churches, and two hotels.

MONTGOMERY, 24 miles, is the first station in Lycoming county. Its most noted industries are a machine-shop, a sash-factory, and a planing-mill, which employ together seventy-five

men. It contains a public hall, a church, a seminary, and good hotels. Population about 500.

MUNCY, 28 miles, is across the river from the station, and was settled by Quakers from near Philadelphia. It was named by them Pennsborough, and was incorporated by that name in 1826, which the next year was changed to Muncy. It has a planing-mill, saw-mills, a foundery, and fork-factory, employing in all some three hundred men. It contains a national bank, five churches, two hotels, a seminary, and good graded public schools. Population 1,040.

WILLIAMSPORT, 40 miles, is the seat of justice of Lycoming County, which was formed from part of Northumberland, by act of April 13, 1795. The county is generally mountainous; but, in the valleys of the Susquehanna and its tributaries, the soil is very rich and productive. It abounds in bituminous coal and iron ore, which are largely mined. One of the great industries of this region, for a third of a century, has been felling the forests of pine with which the mountainous portions are covered. The early settlers were generally Scotch-Irish; and, after the treaty at Fort Stanwix, they poured into the country in such great numbers, that the proprietary government had much difficulty to prevent them from encroaching upon the Indian lands. One method to prevent this was to forbid any surveys being made north of Lycoming Creek, as it was uncertain whether the stream mentioned in the treaty with the Indians as *Tindaghton* was Lycoming or Pine Creek. But, in spite of this prohibition, these determined pioneers settled between the two streams, and soon became powerful in numbers. They made provision for their own government by electing annually three of their number, called *fair-play men*, who were to decide all doubtful questions, especially the one of boundary lines; and from their decision there was no appeal. The whole community acquiesced in their judgment; and the execution of sentences was summary and irresistible. One of these old settlers, being asked, some years later, by a chief justice of Pennsylvania, what the "fair-play" laws were, made this pertinent reply: "All I can say about it is, that, since your Honor's courts have come among us, *fair play* has entirely ceased, and law has taken its place."

Williamsport is the second place in business importance upon the Susquehanna River, and among the first inland cities in Pennsylvania. It was laid out by Michael Ross, a German, in 1795. He made large donations of lands for public purposes; the plan of the town was well arranged, and carried out; and now are seen, wide straight streets, and every evidence of prosperity, making it unusually attractive. It has an abundant supply of water from mountain-springs; and gas is used in public and private buildings. Many of its streets are paved with wood, which afford charming drives.

The chief business of the city is lumbering; and since its establishment, about twenty-five years ago, it has grown to astonishing proportions. There are now in operation fifty steam saw-mills, preparing lumber for market; and the annual shipment is not less than two hundred millions of feet. The other industries are an axe-factory, paint-works, a match-stick-manufactory, a boiler-factory, several founderies, and a furniture-factory. There are also extensive iron-works on the south side of the river, opposite Williamsport. It has a large mercantile trade. It contains a commercial college, an opera-house, a seminary, an academy of music, twenty-nine churches, six public halls, six excellent hotels, twelve national, savings, and private banks, and a superior system of public schools. Population 16,030.

JERSEY SHORE, 52 miles, was founded about the year 1800, by Jeremiah and Reuben Manning, two brothers from New Jersey. The town at first took the name of Waynesburg; but gradually the name of the settlement, "The Jersey Shore," began to be applied to it, and when it was incorporated in 1826 it took its present title. It is beautifully located; and the country around it is in a good state of cultivation. It has good schools, a town-hall, seven churches, a bank, and two hotels. Population 1,394.

WAYNE, 60 miles, is noted for having near it the McIlhattan Camp-Ground, belonging to the West-Branch Camp-Meeting Association. It is a beautiful spot, completely surrounded by mountains, whose tops and sides are thick with forest-trees, while cool and sparkling streams trickle down the rocks, making music as they go. The village has a public hall, a steam saw-mill, a church, and a hotel.



LOCK HAVEN, 64 miles, is the seat of justice of Clinton County. This county was established June 21, 1839, from parts of Lycoming and Centre. The surface is mountainous, has many streams running through it; and the valleys are rich and charming, and in a high degree of cultivation. Bituminous coal, iron ore, and fire-clay abound in many portions of the county. Lumbering has been largely engaged in for twenty-five years; and immense fortunes have been made.

The town is situated upon the right bank of the Susquehanna, about two miles above the junction of Bald Eagle Creek. It was laid out in 1834, by Jeremiah Church, and is called Lock Haven, from the fact that it lies between two locks on the Pennsylvania canal. The scenery around it is diversified with river valleys and bold mountain-peaks; and the canal-dam in front of it gives dissolving-views of rare beauty. The city presents an appearance of great neatness, thrift, and attractiveness; and many of its public and private buildings are elegant.

Lumbering is the most important business of the place; and there are also two tanneries, a boot-and-shoe-manufactory, three founderies and machine-shops, and a boiler-manufactory, which together employ about two hundred hands. It has also a large mercantile trade. It contains two national banks, a public hall, eight churches, three first-class hotels, an opera-house, and good public schools. Population 6,986.

FARRANDSVILLE, 70 miles, was settled in the winter of 1831-32 by William P. Farrand, a Philadelphia gentleman, who was agent for a company of Boston capitalists. A company was organized, called the "Lycoming Coal Company," which, with a great deal of energy, commenced mining the bituminous coal of the vicinity, intending to make large shipments: they also were to carry on extensive manufactures in iron, lumber, &c. But after expending much money, building houses, saw-mills, car-shops, a nail-mill, and steamboat, they were obliged to abandon the enterprise, as there was no prospect of the success desired; and the embryo village soon relapsed into comparative insignificance. Its chief business is lumbering and fire-brick manufacture, employing some fifty hands. Of the latter com-

modity, about ten thousand tons are shipped annually, and coal-mining is carried on to a limited extent. It has one hotel, several churches and schools.

HYNER, 86 miles, is in the midst of magnificent scenery; and the forests and streams of the mountains are much resorted to by sportsmen. There are three saw-mills here. It has a public hall, one church, and one school.

RENOVO, 92 miles, is an outgrowth of the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad; and the works connected with the road are located here, which have gathered a large population of enterprising and intelligent mechanics. It lies in an oval-shaped valley, a mile and a half in length, between the mountains. The valley was settled in 1825, by a single pioneer from Jersey Shore, who, with his family, established himself upon a farm, where he remained alone until 1865, when it was purchased by the railroad company, and they laid out the town. It was incorporated as a borough in 1866, and has steadily increased in importance since that period. It is much visited in summer by health and pleasure seekers, and has an extensive, well-built, and finely managed hotel. The shops of the railroad company employ about seven hundred. The water, with which the town is amply supplied from a clear mountain-stream, is of an excellent quality. It has a public hall, three churches, a bank, eleven public schools, and three hotels. Population 1,940.

KEATING, 105 miles, is at the junction of the West Branch and the Sinnemahoning; and at this point the railroad leaves the Susquehanna, along which it has run for one hundred and sixty miles from Harrisburg, and continues along the Sinnemahoning. There is a large private school here, and a good hotel.

ROUND ISLAND, 110 miles, lies in a country rich in iron ore, coal, and fire-clay, and carries on lumbering largely. The scenery about this place is very fine; and near it is a waterfall twenty-four feet in height.

SINNEMAHONING, 117 miles, is the first station in Cameron County. It contains a select school, a town-hall, a machine-shop, a saw-mill, and two good hotels.

DRIFTWOOD, 120 miles, is the junction of Bennett's Branch

Extension of Alleghany Valley Railroad, commonly called the "Low-grade Railroad." It was built by the Pennsylvania Railroad Company's aid, to facilitate traffic in freight between the east and the west. Along its line are remarkably fine deposits of bituminous coal, and large quantities of iron ore. In the village are four hotels, one public and two select schools, and two churches.

STIRLING, 129 miles, has a grist-mill, a shingle-mill, a planing-mill, and several steam saw-mills, also a steam tannery, employing seventy-five men. Coal-mining is carried on extensively, and iron ore is found in the surrounding region. It has two churches and two public halls.

CAMERON, 133 miles, has a large lumber and coal business: one hundred and twenty-five men are employed in the latter, and sixty thousand tons of coal are annually shipped; one hundred more are engaged in lumbering. There are in the village a public hall, a church, and two hotels.

EMPORIUM, 139 miles, is the seat of justice of Cameron County, which was formed from parts of Elk, Potter, McKean, and Clinton, by act of March 29, 1860, and named for Gen. Simon Cameron. It is on the plain between the Susquehanna and Alleghany Rivers, and consists of thick forests of valuable timber. Its principal business is mining and lumbering. Deposits of iron ore and bituminous coal are extensive in this county.

Until the completion of the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad to this place, in 1864, Emporium was of no importance; but, since that time, its growth has been rapid. It was incorporated as a borough in this year, the 13th of October, and now has many fine buildings. It does a large business in lumber, and has an extensive mercantile trade. It contains grist and saw mills, a steam-tannery, a sash-and-door-manufactory, good schools, a public hall, and fine hotels. Population 898.

ST. MARY'S, 159 miles, is an enterprising borough in Elk County. It was settled about 1840, by a German Catholic colony, under the charge of the St. Benedictine Society, and, before the building of the railroad, was composed exclusively of Catholics: since that time, the population has become more

mixed, although they still predominate. There is a very fine monastery located here, with which St. Gregory's College, a nunnery, and an academy, are connected. The country in the vicinity of this place is well cultivated, and has deposits of bituminous coal, of which about one million tons are mined and shipped annually, and in mining which two hundred men are employed. Lumbering is an important trade, and a thriving mercantile trade is induced by these industries. It has a planing-mill, six breweries, two wagon-manufactories, two founderies and machine-shops, two furniture-factories, and three grist-mills. The town contains five public halls, three churches, a bank, good public schools, and a number of hotels. Population 1,084.

DAGUSCAHONDA, 165 miles. The chief business is coal-mining and lumbering; and in the latter sixty men are employed, while the former ships about one hundred and fifty tons per day, and employs seventy men.

RIDGEWAY, 169 miles, is the seat of justice of Elk county, formed from portions of McKean and Clearfield by act of April 18, 1843. It is situated upon the ridge between the Atlantic coast and the Mississippi valley. Its soil is not particularly rich, but yields to cultivation. It is covered with a thick growth of hemlock. The county received its name from a mountain in its southern part, so called from the great number of elks roaming over it. The first settlements were made about 1820.

The town of Ridgeway lies on the head-waters of the Clarion River. It was settled in 1840 by lumbermen, mostly from New England and New York, and was named for Jacob Ridgeway, a merchant of Philadelphia, who owned large tracts of land there. It has two tanneries, employing many men; and it also carries on lumbering. There is a good mercantile trade; and the town contains a bank, four churches, three hotels, two public halls, one high and other public schools, and county buildings. Population 800.

WILCOX, 184 miles, is noted for having the largest tannery in the United States, which employs one hundred and fifty men. The same number is employed in the lumber-business.



There are two churches, a graded public school, a public hall, and a good hotel. Population about 1,000.

SERGEANT, 189 miles, is the first station in McKean County, which was organized March 27, 1824. It was named for Thomas McKean, a former chief justice and governor of Pennsylvania. It is covered with thick growths of birch, pine, maple, and hemlock, and other hard woods; and it has a moist soil, which under cultivation gives good crops. Coal and iron ore are abundant. Population 8,825.

KANE, 193 miles, was settled about the time the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad was completed, upon land owned by the family of Judge Kane of Philadelphia. It is surrounded by forests, through which flow purling streams, and is much resorted to by sportsmen who hunt the deer and other game. To accommodate these visitors, the Thomson House has been erected upon a park of one thousand acres, two thousand feet above the level of the ocean; and at this height the air is unrivalled for purity and spicy odors from the forests around. The business of Kane is lumbering principally; and it has six steam saw-mills, employing about two hundred men. The machine-shops of the railroad employ about one hundred more. Population 2,000.

WARREN, 222 miles, is the seat of justice of Warren County, formed from part of Lycoming by act of March 12, 1800, and named for Gen. Warren; but, not having sufficient population to sustain a separate organization, it was in 1805 joined to Venango county, not being re-organized until the 16th of March, 1819. Its growth at first was very slow; but since 1830 it has progressed rapidly, and at present it ranks among the first counties of the State. Its surface is undulating, and, as it nears the streams, becomes rugged. Portions of it are very fertile and well cultivated. The southern part is comprised within the great oil-field of Pennsylvania; and borings made in it soon after the discoveries in Venango were the means of adding much to its population and wealth.

The town of Warren is beautifully situated on the Alleghany River, at its junction with the Conewango. Its principal business is lumbering; and it also has a sash-factory, iron-works,

and planing-mills. It is a charming place of residence, and offers great attractions to the tourist. Many of its public and private buildings are tasteful in design and surroundings. It has three banks, eight churches, good schools, several hotels, county buildings, and three public halls. Population 2,014.

IRVINETON, 228 miles, is built upon land taken up by Gen. William Irvine of Revolutionary fame; and his son, in 1795, erected a cabin upon the site of the village. The present town was laid out about 1840, by Dr. William Irvine, son of the general. It has a saw-mill, a stave-mill, grist-mill, woollen-mill, two churches, and four hotels. Population about 350.

CORRY, 251 miles, is the first station in Erie County, situated on Oil Creek, and was developed from the oil speculation, and in the early days of the "oil-fever." Corry was subjected to all the ups and downs attendant upon this fever, but proved an exception to the rule when cities and towns collapsed with the bursting of the petroleum bubble, as it maintained a steady and upward course. Her position favors this result, being upon an elevation nearly fifteen hundred feet above the ocean-level, and more than eight hundred above Lake Erie, thus making it a remarkably healthful location. The surrounding country is fairly productive. Iron and coal are easily obtained; timber is plentiful; and it is brought into communication with all important business-places by railroads radiating from it to all points of the compass. It has a great number of industries, among which are manufactories of furniture, wooden-ware, boring-machines, fork and spade handles, sashes and blinds, brushes, agricultural implements, steam-engines, and many other articles: it has also large oil-works, iron-works, steam, flour, and saw mills, breweries, cooper-shops, tanneries, shingle-mills, railroad-shops. It contains three banks, six public halls, nine churches, seven hotels, an academy of music, a very fine city hall, and has superior educational facilities, both of a public and private character. Population 6,809.

UNION, 261 miles, is situated on French Creek. It is an enterprising borough, and contains wooden-pump, furniture, and oil-barrel manufactories, employing about three hundred men. The country around it is well adapted to grazing. It

has two public halls, an opera-house, three hotels, three banking institutions, six churches, and graded public schools. Population 1,500.

WATERFORD, 269 miles, is an active borough upon Le Bœuf Lake and Creek. The settlement about this town is very old, being made by the French before the English came hither. The town was laid out in 1794, by Andrew Ellicott; and its name was changed from Le Bœuf to Watertown in 1795. It was largely engaged in the salt-trade at one time, supplying the settlers in the Ohio valley; but, after the discovery of the salt-wells on the Kiskiminetas, this trade fell off, and the town suffered from the effects; and it was not until the construction of the railroad that it began to assume any importance, since which time its growth has been rapid. Among its manufacturing establishments are one of boots and shoes, and one of firkins and tubs. There is some lumbering here, and dairy business is extensive. It contains four public halls, an academy, four churches, one bank, and three hotels. Population 790.

JACKSON'S, 275 miles, is near the elevation separating the Ohio River from the rivers flowing into Lake Erie.

ERIE, 288 miles, is the seat of justice of Erie County, formed from a portion of Alleghany County by act of March 12, 1800, but which was not fully organized until the 2d of April, 1803. Its surface is rendered uneven from the low ridge which runs parallel with the lake shore, about eight or ten miles from it, lying between the tributaries of the lake and the Alleghany River.

This whole region was nearly an unexplored country down to 1750. The entire southern shore of the lake was occupied by a tribe of Indians called the Eries; and from them the lake and the county were named. A bitter hostility existed between this tribe and the Five Nations for many years, which finally terminated in the extermination of the Eries. Many of the first settlers in this county were from New York and the New England States; and, though some came from the southern parts of Pennsylvania, still the population more resembled, in general characteristics, that of the Eastern States than of our State, in which it is located. Many years elapsed before

the resources of the land were much developed, or Erie became of its present commercial importance. "Erie County now takes a prominent rank among her sisters of the great Keystone Commonwealth. The town of Erie was laid out in 1795, by Gen. William Irvine and Andrew Ellicott, under authority of the State. . . . The city contains a large number of elegant private residences; and among its public edifices are seventeen churches (representing all Christian denominations), an excellent academy, an opera-house, an academy of music, five public halls, several private, and a superior system of public schools. It has ten banking-institutions, two hospitals, an orphan-asylum, six cemeteries, two public libraries, a number of superior hotels, and, in short, possesses all the requisites of metropolitan life and enjoyment. Population 19,646."<sup>1</sup>

#### LEWISBURG, CENTRE, AND SPRUCE CREEK BRANCH.

This is a branch of the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad, and the point of intersection is at Montandon.

LEWISBURG, 1½ miles, is the seat of justice of Union County. This county was formed by act of March 22, 1813, and consists of limestone valleys in a high degree of cultivation, and presenting beautiful scenes. The first settlers were German, and the larger proportion of the present inhabitants are their descendants. The town is on the west bank of the Susquehanna River, and was laid out by a German, named Louis Derr, and at first was known by the name of Derr's town. It is joined to Montandon by a fine substantial bridge. It contains a planing-mill, a boat-building yard and saw-mill united, and a manufactory of agricultural implements, which together employ about two hundred men. Population 3,121.

MIFFLINBURG, 11 miles, is a pleasantly located and thriving borough in Buffalo valley. It has carriage-manufactories, a foundery, a steam grist-mill, a planing-mill, two steam tanneries. There are two banks, four churches, a public hall, two hotels, and good public schools. Population 911.

<sup>1</sup> Sipes's Pennsylvania Railroad, pp. 245-247.



## DANVILLE AND HAZLETON BRANCH.

PHILADELPHIA AND ERIE JUNCTION is the point of intersection with the Philadelphia and Erie Railroad.

DANVILLE, 12 miles, is noted for its production and manufacture of iron, the works in operation employing more than two thousand men. Limestone and iron are found very abundantly in the adjacent region. It is the seat of justice of Montour County, separated from Columbia by act of May 3, 1850. It contains seventeen churches, two national banks, a fine opera-house, and three good hotels. Population 8,436.

CATAWISSA, 21 miles, is a delightfully situated borough in Columbia County, on the left bank of the Susquehanna. It was laid out in 1787 by William Hughes, a Quaker from Berks County, and was for many years under the control of that sect. These were superseded by Germans; and in 1816 an iron furnace was erected by one of these latter settlers near the town. It is not important as a business-place, but is justly noted for beauty and sublimity of scenery, causing it to be much resorted to. The chief business now is merchandising and railroading. It has a public hall, two hotels, six churches, and a deposit bank. Population 1,614.

TOMHICKEN, 45 miles, is the terminus of this road, and point of connection with Wilkesbarre Railroad, running to Hazleton, at which place a junction is formed with the Lehigh Valley Railroad.

Having now noticed most of the important places on the Pennsylvania road and its western branches, we return to the branches from New Jersey owned by the Pennsylvania. The places on these roads do not come within the limits of this history, except where they enter and pass through towns and villages in this State. The Camden and Amboy road enters Philadelphia at the Walnut Street Ferry; and the Camden and Atlantic, at the Vine Street Ferry. On starting from the West Philadelphia Depot, the traveller goes thirty miles to the Delaware River, where the road crosses a long bridge, and enters Trenton, N.J. On this route of thirty miles are several villages, most of which are included within the city limits. Bristol, a

pleasant town in Bucks County, on the Delaware River, nineteen miles above Philadelphia, lies on this road. This was the first seat of justice of the county, and is still the largest town. It contains several churches, a town-hall, a bank, and a mineral spring. It was settled as early as 1697. Population about 3,000.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### CITIES AND TOWNS ON THE READING AND OTHER RAIL-ROADS.

Net-work of Railroads — Afford Facilities for Historical Description — Reading Road — Conshohocken — Norristown — Valley Forge — Phoenixville — Pottstown — Reading — Port Clinton — Auburn — Schuylkill Haven — Pottsville — Mount Carbon — Ravino Gap — Lebanon — Mahanoy Plane — Northern Pennsylvania — Gwynedd — Lansdale — Sellersville — Landis Ridge — Hellertown — Lehigh Valley Railroad — Bethlehem — Allentown — Catasauqua — Hokendauqua — Slatington — Lehigh — Weinport — Packertown — Mauch Chunk — Mount Pisgah — Summit Hill — Burning-Mine — Glen Onoko — Chameleon Falls — Onoko Falls — Terrace Falls — Nesquehoning Bridge — Penn Haven — Stony Creek — Rockport — Tannery — White Haven — Freemansburg — Redington — Glendon — Easton — Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western Railroad — Delaware Water Gap, — Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Baltimore Railroad — Chester — West Chester Railroad — West Chester.

THE railroads of Pennsylvania form almost complete interlacings, penetrating every portion of the State; and hence, by following out these roads, the traveller passes through the three great regions into which the Commonwealth is divided; and by this means he is enabled to survey and explore all her cities, towns, and hamlets. As these three great divisions of the State are drained by the tributaries of three great rivers, running through their several valleys, so the whole surface of the State comes under the eye of him who follows these immense tracks through the river-beds. Thus the valley of the Susquehanna affords the natural avenue for these great thoroughfares from north to south. Next the Upper Delaware, Lehigh, and Schuylkill with its tributaries, afford a passage for the roads through all the north-eastern portion of the State, to the vast coal deposits in these regions. The north-western parts — the oil-regions — are alike accessible by

the head-waters of the Alleghany or Ohio River; and, finally, all of the courses, with the mountains between them, are intersected by the great Pennsylvania Railroad, running east and west through the entire length of the State, which territory the reader has already travelled.

As this offers the most feasible way of reaching the vast mineral fields, as well as the agricultural portions of the State, and showing its natural scenery, so, also, it is the most proper and easy way of arriving at all that is of the greatest *historical* interest; and thus every thing most conducive to a full history of Pennsylvania can readily be set before the reader.

Pursuing this plan, we now take the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad with its branches, the second in extent in the Commonwealth. The Reading road proper begins at Philadelphia, and takes its name from Reading, its original termination, a distance of fifty-eight miles only; but, with its branches and connections, it extends over fifteen hundred miles, and is justly considered of great importance for its transportation of immense quantities of coal and iron from points along its route to Philadelphia. Starting from the depot, a spacious edifice at Broad and Callowhill Streets, the road passes through the built-up part of the city, by the eastern end of Fairmount Park, and along the Schuylkill, until Columbia Bridge is reached, which it crosses. The first station beyond is Belmont; and now the banks of the river are followed, taking Tom Moore's cottage, Falls Village, Manayunk, which are included in the city limits. The next station, Conshohocken, thirteen miles from Philadelphia, is a village in Montgomery County. It is a thriving place; and iron-working is largely carried on. It contains a large blast-furnace and foundry, in which gas and water pipes are made, and sent to all parts of the Union. It has also several machine-shops, and one large rolling-mill in operation, and two blast-furnaces across the river. Norristown is the next point; and the station is known by the name of Bridgeport, situated on the opposite side of the river, with which it is connected by a bridge. It is a very handsome town, the capital of Montgomery County, and commands an elevated and delightful situation on the left bank of



the Schuylkill River. The Reading Railroad is upon the Bridgeport side ; and the Chester Valley Branch is its terminus ; while the Norristown Branch is ended at Norristown. The town is regular, and contains many fine buildings, mostly of brick and stone. Chief among these is the Court House, of a light-gray native marble. It has also a fine county prison, banks, a public library, ten churches. There are flourishing boarding-schools here, two of which have elegant buildings, located upon rising ground. The trade of the town is increasing, being facilitated by the improved navigation of the river. The great water-power of the river is employed in large cotton-factories (employing several hundred hands), and several rolling-mills and nail-factories.

Now we arrive at Valley Forge, twenty-three miles from Philadelphia, on the right bank of the Schuylkill. It is at the mouth of Valley Creek ; and it will be remembered this was where Washington encamped during the winter of 1777-78. Perkiomen Creek, just above this point, empties into the river. There is a road, called the Perkiomen Creek Branch following the creek, terminating at Allentown, fifty-one miles from Philadelphia. Phoenixville, the next stopping-place, is twenty-seven miles from Philadelphia, and the terminus of Pickering Valley Branch. It is in Chester County, on the right bank of the Schuylkill, at the mouth of French Creek, which flows through a very fertile valley. It is one of the most populous towns in the county, and has large manufactures of cotton and iron. One of the largest rolling-mills in this country, that of the Phoenix Iron Company, is located here ; and a large quantity of railroad iron and nails is made annually, the material being obtained in the vicinity, and of a superior quality. After leaving this place, the road passes into a tunnel two thousand feet in length, upon emerging from which we cross the river to the bank opposite the one the road has followed since leaving Belmont, and soon arrive at Pottstown, which is in Montgomery County, at the mouth of Manatawny Creek, forty miles from Philadelphia. This is a neatly-built town, its houses being principally upon one street, very broad and attractive, from the great number of shade-trees and

pleasant grounds. The scenery about the town is beautiful, as the river winds in and out in a charmingly picturesque manner. Just stopping at Douglasville, we follow the beautiful river in its many turnings, cross the Manatawny and Monocacy Creeks;



VALLEY FORGE.

and now the views become bewilderingly bewitching. The river sparkles out into golden sunlight, anon hides herself behind hills, and in this capricious mood does she manifest,

until, as if repenting, she straightens out, and presents Reading. It is pleasantly located upon a plain emerging from the river, and is surrounded by three hills so large as to be almost mountains, called Mount Penn, Mount Washington, and Mount Neversink. It was founded in 1748, by William and Richard Penn, and is regularly laid out. The town has a thrifty appearance; and its well-paved streets and handsome houses and stores indicate wealth and prosperity. In manufactures it takes the third rank in the State, and in population the fourth. It has furnaces, mills, railroad-shops, employing about twelve



SCHUYLKILL BELOW READING.

hundred men. There are in the town twenty-three churches, two opera-houses, and several banks. It is from Reading that the numerous branches which make the great line of road comprehended under the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad diverge; and the depot at this place receives and sends out all trains going over these branches. This depot is said to be the handsomest in the State, and has in its tower a large electrical clock, which communicates the time to every clock inside the depot, the standard being Philadelphia. The works for the



manufacture of gas used in the depot and cars are located here.

After leaving Reading, we strike through the Kittatinny Mountains, and arrive at Port Clinton, a town in Schuylkill County, laid out in 1820. It is seventy-eight miles from Phila-



SCHUYLKILL ABOVE PORT CLINTON.

delphia. The Schuylkill and Little Schuylkill meet here; and the view presented is magnificent, consisting of rolling mountains, and deep sombre gorges.

Auburn and Schuylkill Haven are the next important stations on this road; the latter being most delightfully located on



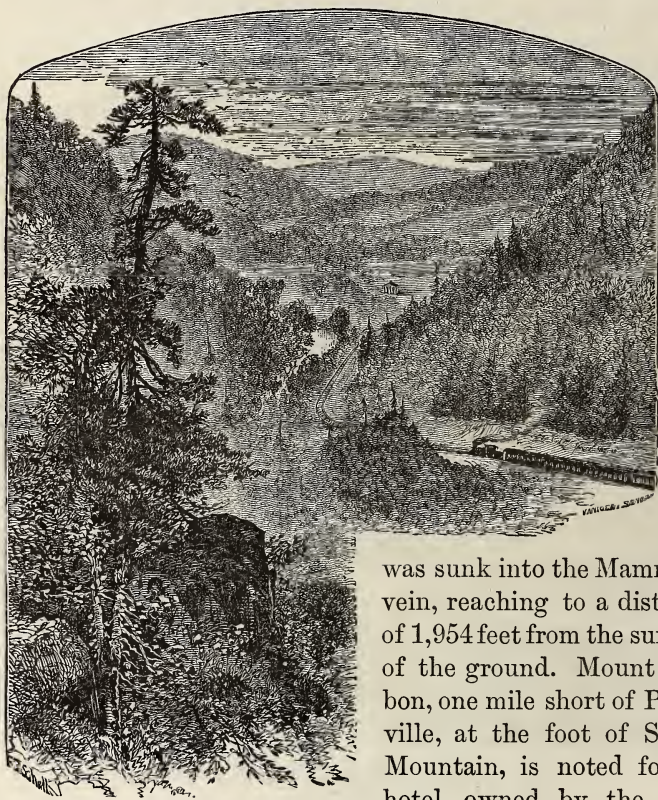
the bank of the river. Now we arrive at Pottsville, ninety-three miles from Philadelphia, the present terminus of the road. It is situated upon the border of the coal-basin, formed by the Schuylkill breaking through Sharp Mountain. It received its name from John Pott, who in 1827 built Greenwood Furnace; and it was in digging the foundation for this furnace that the coal was discovered which has rendered this



MOUNT CARBON AND SHARP MOUNTAIN.

valley so famous. This town is still peopled with his descendants, who have become wealthy from the fact of owning land, and retaining it until it rose in value. Its streets are very picturesque; and the drives about the city are fine, having beautiful views. Small lines of railroads emerge from Pottsville, spreading in all directions, as new coal-mines are opened; and all along their lines are villages and towns, which are made up

of intelligent and enterprising people. The Philadelphia and Reading Railroad Company have commenced a very important work in the vicinity of Pottsville. In order to reach and work the extensive white-ash coal-veins of the southern basin, two perpendicular shafts have been sunk; and the longest one has already reached a depth of 1,128 feet, and from this a bore-hole



RAVINO GAP, NEAR POTTSVILLE.

was sunk into the Mammoth vein, reaching to a distance of 1,954 feet from the surface of the ground. Mount Carbon, one mile short of Pottsville, at the foot of Sharp Mountain, is noted for its hotel, owned by the railroad company, which is well kept, and much resorted to in summer. It is the junction of numerous branches leading into the middle and lower coal-fields. We append a very good view of this place and Sharp Mountain.

The Ravino Gap, near Pottsville, is remarkable for the beauty and wildness of its scenery; and, as the traveller passes through



it, his eyes are feasted with a succession of pictures, each more beautiful than the preceding one.

From Pottsville, we will proceed to some of the places on the branches of this road. The Lebanon Valley Branch goes from the main line at Reading, through the Lebanon Valley, ending at Harrisburg, and thus runs through Lebanon County,



the chief town of which is Lebanon. It lies in a fertile limestone valley, and is twenty-five miles east of Harrisburg.

MAHANOEY PLANE, LOOKING UP.

Passing on towards the coal-regions, we go through Mahanoy City, Mahanoy Plane, Ashland, Gordon, and Shamokin, to Herndon. At Mahanoy Plane is the inclined plane, from which it takes its name, used in raising coal-cars from the valley to the top of the mountain, whence they run on a down grade to Mount Carbon. This plane is 2,410 feet long, 354 feet high;

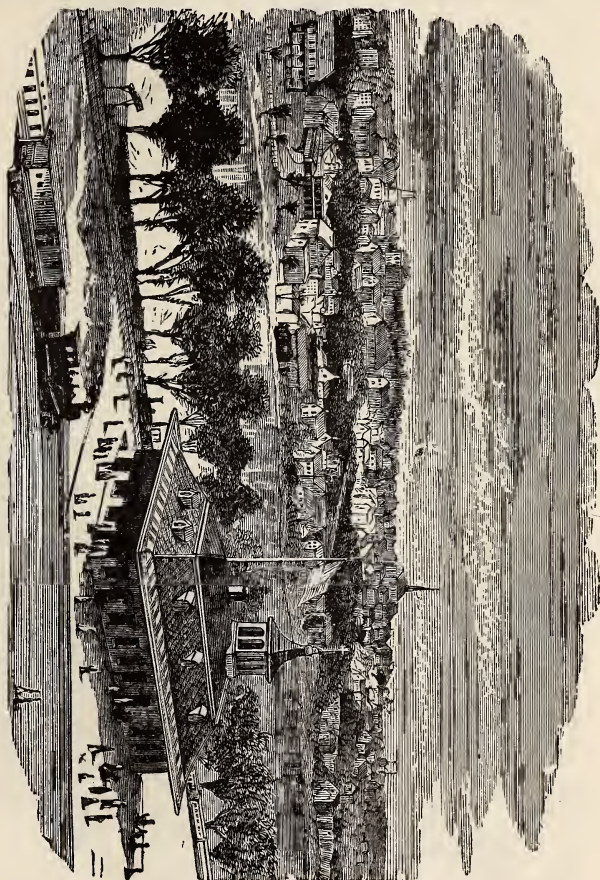
and the top is 1,478 feet above tide-water. The object of this plane may be readily seen, when it is stated that the head of it is only twelve miles from Pottsville by rail. A fine view of the plane is given in the accompanying cut.

Our limits do not permit us to dwell longer upon the numerous branches and places, along their routes, of the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad; and we will therefore return to Philadelphia, and start by the Northern Pennsylvania Railroad for the coal-regions of the Lehigh Valley. The depot of this road is on the corner of Berks and American Streets. Its course for fifteen miles is in the limits of the city; and the first station of importance beyond it is Gwynedd, a Welsh settlement, with over two thousand inhabitants. Near this place the road passes through a large tunnel, a single mile costing over three hundred thousand dollars. Lansdale, the next stopping-place, is the junction of the branch railroad to Doylestown; and at Sellersville, ten miles beyond, Landis Ridge is reached, which separates the Delaware and Schuylkill. From this Ridge a magnificent view is had of Limestone Valley and the surrounding country. Hellertown, fifty miles from Philadelphia, is the last station before arriving at Bethlehem, where the Lehigh Valley Railroad forms a junction, and on which we continue our journey through this beautiful and valuable stretch of country. Bethlehem is a quaint old spot; and the tourist, in rambling through its quiet streets, will feel as if he were put back in the march of time. It received its name from Count Zinzendorf, to commemorate the first Christmas-eve service held by the Moravians in 1741. The old buildings of this sect are still standing; and the Sisters' and Widows' houses, in their interior, present the same appearance as of old, — flagged pavements, small windows, broad oaken staircases, and low ceilings. It has an additional historic interest, from the fact that Washington located his hospital here, and sent supplies, after the passage of the Delaware; and the sick and wounded were tenderly cared for by these charitable Moravians. It has a number of extensive manufacturing establishments, the largest of which is the Bethlehem Iron Foundry, turning out thirty thousand tons of iron per annum. There is also a large establishment belonging to the Lehigh Zinc



Company, which employs some seven hundred men, and produces annually thirty-five hundred tons of white oxide. The town has water and gas, and is rapidly increasing in population. The Lehigh University, founded by Hon. Asa Packer of Mauch

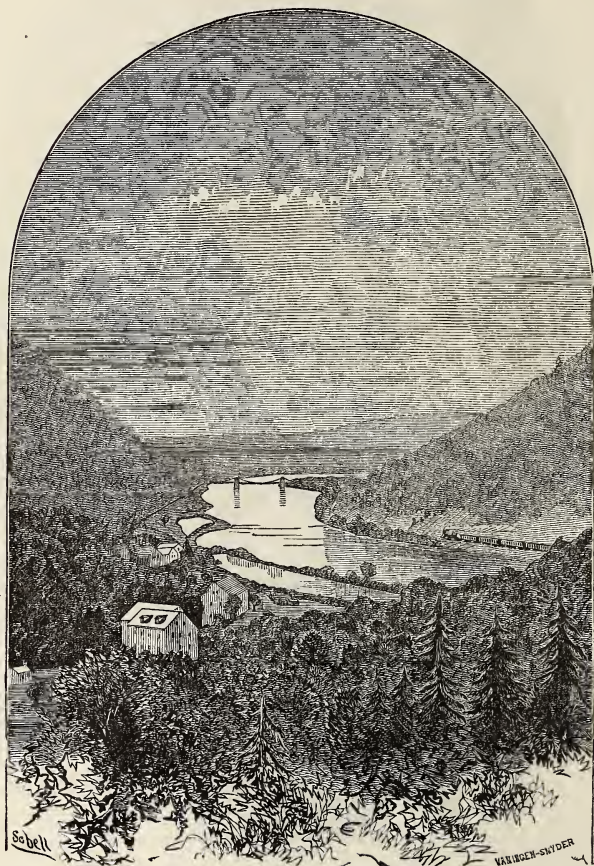
BETHLEHEM.



Chunk, is located here; and at this institution the tuition is entirely free.

Allentown, the next place beyond Bethlehem, is at the junction of the Lehigh and Little Lehigh and Jordan Creek. It is a beautiful city, built upon high ground. It has extensive manufactures, and lies in the midst of a fine agricultural

region. The Allentown Rolling-Mill is celebrated for its manufacture of rails. It has a female college, finely located in the north-eastern part of the town, and among other public buildings are the County Jail, an Opera-House, Odd-Fellows' and Masonic Halls. The present population is fifteen thousand. Its



LEHIGH GAP.

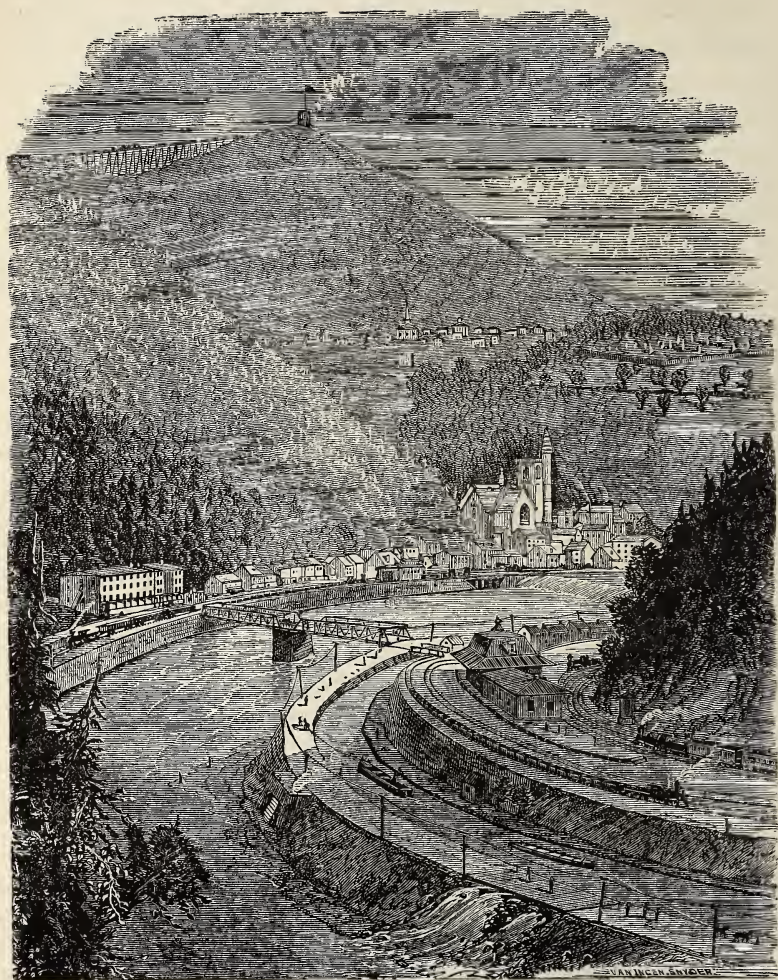
accessibility to deposits of limestone, iron ore, cement, zinc, &c., is a good assurance of its increasing importance. Leaving Allentown, and passing Catasauqua and Hokendauqua, both important manufacturing places (the latter being the location

of the Thomas Iron Works, said to be the largest and most complete in the United States, which consume over a hundred thousand tons of coal per annum), we reach Slatington, the next place of any note. It is called thus from being in the largest slate region ever discovered, the various quarries of which employ over six hundred men. Now we are at Lehigh Gap, formed from the Lehigh River forcing itself through the Blue Mountains; and the scenery in this vicinity is magnificent and sublime. The cut shows the course of the road through this gap. The boroughs of Lehighton and Weinport are now passed, celebrated for being the resort of the fugitives from Wyoming when their village was destroyed by the Indian marauders; and many are the legends still related of their sufferings and privations. It was here that the Moravian mission among the Indians, called Gwadenhutten, was established in 1746.

Now we are at Mauch Chunk, just glancing at Packertown, where are located the shops of the Lehigh Valley Railroad Company, which employ over five hundred men. Mauch Chunk, meaning, in Indian language "Bear Mountain," is one of the most romantically situated towns in this country; and the scenery around it is unsurpassed in grandeur and sublimity. It is on the Lehigh River; was settled in 1815; and for many years has been the centre of coal operations for the Lehigh region. It is encompassed with mountains, which rise from seven hundred to one thousand feet, and has spread itself out to such an extent, that it could only be enlarged by excavating from the precipitous rocks. About two hundred feet above the main town, there is a plain of several hundred acres, thickly settled, and known by the name of Upper Mauch Chunk. In the cut is presented a view of the town, and Mount Pisgah in the background.

This town is quaint in the extreme. It has but one street; and the valley is so narrow, that the houses are crowded closely against the hillsides, their gardens above the roofs. It is called the "Switzerland of America;" and, during the summer and autumn, is much resorted to by pleasure-seekers, and lovers of Nature. It has a very extensive and complete hotel, — the Mansion House, having rooms for four hundred and fifty



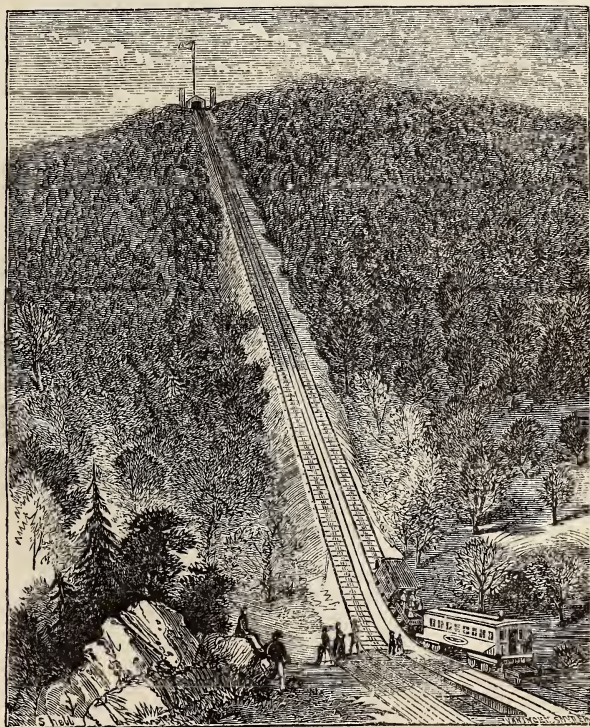


MAUCH CHUNK.



guests, and a dining-hall capable of seating nearly five hundred persons.

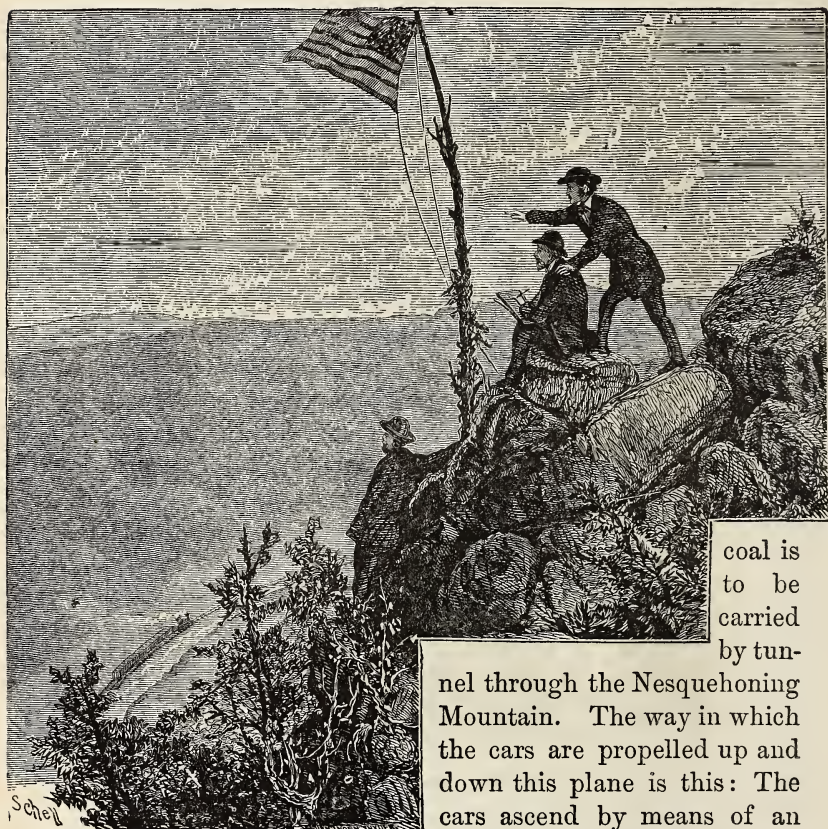
There are many fine residences at Mauch Chunk, among which may be noticed those of Hon. Asa Packer and John Leisenring, conspicuous for elegance of design, and beauty of surroundings. The town is supplied with gas and water of the purest quality. It is full of the enterprise and industry which



MOUNT PISGAH PLANE.

several collieries, and the offices of the two railroad companies, create, and supports two national and one savings bank. Its population is about 7,000. We shall be forced, not very unwillingly, to linger some time, in order to visit the many beautiful spots in the vicinity of Mauch Chunk; and, as Mount Pisgah seems to beckon us up to explore its summit, we will take

that first. But how can we climb that steep height? We need not do this, but simply avail ourselves of the Switchback, or gravity road, which, though planned especially for the coal-cars, has been arranged for the comfort of travellers; and, in future, this mode of ascending to the summit of the mountain is to be given up to the excursionists who visit Mauch Chunk, while the



“THE FLAGSTAFF,” MAUCH CHUNK.

ascent being 700 feet in 2,340: they then, over a downward grade, descend by their own weight. The distance from the foot to the summit is 2,322 feet; and a double track has been laid over the plane with great care.

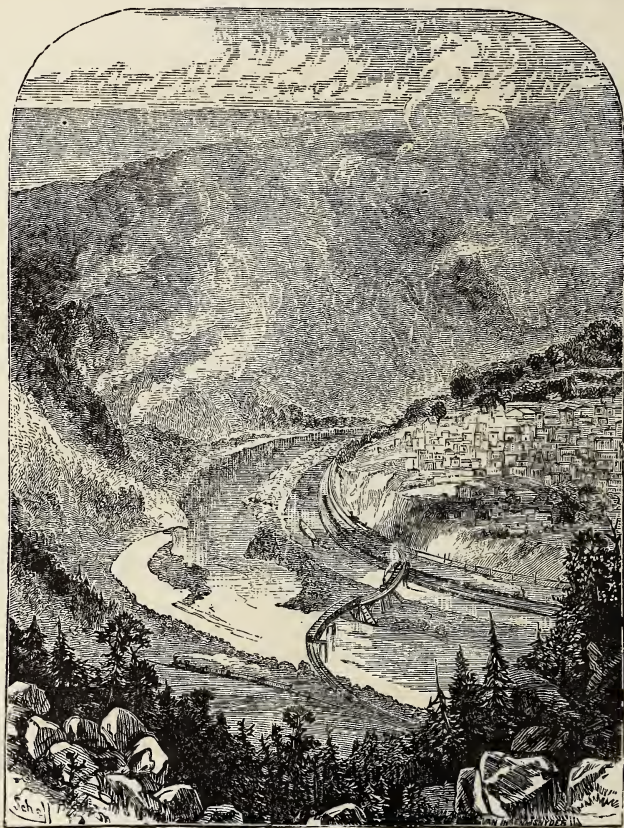
coal is  
to be  
carried  
by tunnel

through the Nesquehoning Mountain. The way in which the cars are propelled up and down this plane is this: The cars ascend by means of an inclined plane, with a stationary engine at the top, the



Now let us pause, after the exhilarating and exciting ride upon the Switchback, and rest upon this clump of rocks, far above the town,—so far, that the train below looks like a child's mimic toy, and as we lazily gaze upon our stars and stripes, floating out in the breeze from the flagstaff, go over again, in imagination, the wild race we have had. Our starting-point was at Upper Mauch Chunk; and, after the summit of the mountain was gained, we crossed a piece of trestle-work over a deep, wild ravine, which made us shudder as we gazed down into its depths; then, alighting, we followed a winding footpath to a yet higher point, called the Pavilion, where is an observatory, the view from which is sublime beyond description. To the south, through Lehigh Gap, we catch glimpses of the blue, hazy outline of Schooley's Mountain, sixty-five miles off. At the north of Lehigh Gap is Wind Gap, whose horizon is bounded by blue hills and verdant fields. Then we entered the cars, which, by their own power of gravitation, ran a distance of six miles (the descent being three hundred and two feet), arriving at the base of another inclined plane (Mount Jefferson), 2,070 feet long, and 462 high, from whence we were drawn up to the top in the same manner as before, holding our breath as the earth seemed to be receding from us; and, the summit gained, we were hurried along to the mining-village of Summit Hill, 9,075 feet above the Lehigh, with a population of 2,000. It is a curious place, with rambling streets and old buildings, and has a stone arsenal, with turrets and loop-holes, in which are stored arms enough for a company's use, should trouble arise among the miners. Near this place is another road, the original Switchback, leading, by a long descent, to the Panther Creek Valley; and here, also, is the "burning-mine," in whose depths a fire has been raging for the last thirty-two years. And now we started on the continuous down grade to Mount Pisgah's base, our starting-point. One turn of the brakes, and on we sped, faster and faster, until we could compare it to nothing but the flight of a bird; and we did not feel it possible to ever be able to stop at Mauch Chunk, which we began to descry in the distance, when suddenly we found ourselves stationary at the platform. One of the many views from the trestling is given.

Two miles farther on, we arrive at Glen Onoko ; and this is indeed fairyland, — cascades and rocks, deep shadows and broken rifts, through which the light comes dancing and quivering. Chameleon Falls, one of the greatest charms of the glen, is fifty feet high ; and the stream rushes over down into a half-



VIEW NORTH FROM THE TRESTLING, MOUNT PISGAH.

square basin, densely overshadowed with foliage. A little farther on we come to Onoko Falls, ninety feet in height ; and if the spray is not feared, and we venture in behind this misty veil, the beauties we shall find will well repay us. Still on, up this wondrous glen, squeezing through a passage between two



birch-trees, properly called the "Fât Man's Misery," Terrace Falls and Cave Falls are reached, the latter taking its name from a rocky recess close at hand, where the Indians are said to have hidden; and it is believed that through this glen was an old war-trail from the Susquehanna to the Delaware, through which Gen. Sullivan and his soldiers passed in 1778, after the Wyoming massacre. Of the former, the following is a cut,



CHAMELEON FALLS.

showing the dainty tripping from rock to rock of the sparkling white stream. Before we continue our trip from Mauch Chunk on this road, we will take the Nesquehoning Valley Branch Railroad, from thence to Tamanend. On this trip we pass over a bridge, said to be the highest in the country. It is 1,100 feet long, and 168 feet above the Little Schuylkill, over which it is built, from one mountain to another. The view from this

bridge is magnificent; and though, from its great height, it would seem as if there were danger in running trains across it, yet it is built with so much care and regard for security, that one may give himself up to the enjoyment of the scene without fear for his safety. The illustration gives a very good idea of the strength and compactness of this bridge.

Now we resume our journey from Mauch Chunk through



ONOKO FALLS.

scenery so wild and grand and lonely, that it seems almost desecration to penetrate it, arriving at Penn Haven Junction, from which three branches — the Beaver Meadow, Hazleton, and Mahanoy — run to important coal centres, distant sixty-six, seventy, and eighty-one miles. Penn Haven was founded in 1838, and now has an immense coal-business. Near this place is Stony Creek, which is named from a trout-stream in



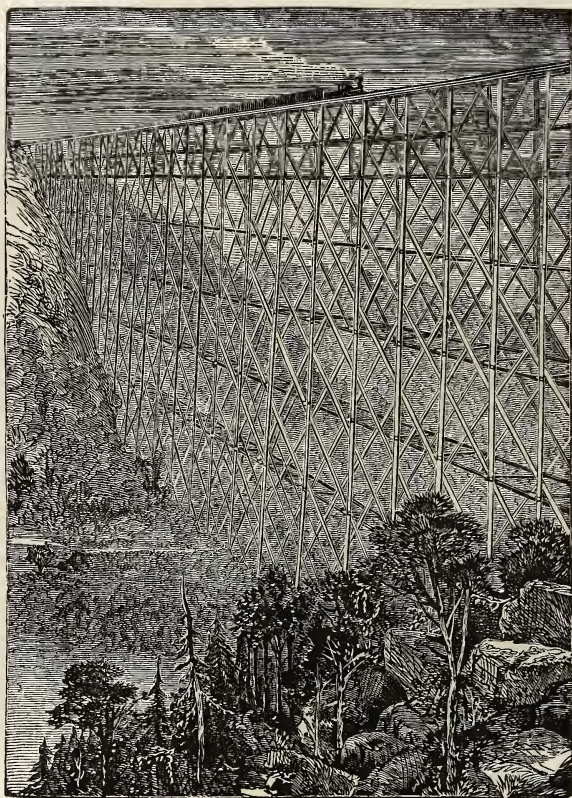
its vicinity. Rockport, the next point, is a village situated in a romantic gorge in Buck Mountain. Passing Tannery, a lumber-station, we come next to White Haven, noted for its lumber-business, of which it is the chief depot on the Lehigh. It was settled in 1835, and named for Josiah White, the superintendent of the Lehigh Coal and Navigation Company. Its present population is about 1,500. Here the Nescopee Railroad



TERRACE FALLS, GLEN ONOKO.

emerges for the Upper Lehigh ; and, after a ride of nine miles, a coal-breaker is reached (one of the best in the anthracite region, shipping five thousand tons of coal a week) ; a good hotel, and a number of miners' houses, comprising the entire population. From this point, we ramble through the woods for half a mile, strike into a small footpath leading up to the top of Prospect Rock ; and well does the scene repay for the toil-

some ascent. Miles and miles of valleys stretch out before us ; some partly cleared, some still filled with the growth of the primeval forest. Opposite this rock is another, called Cloud Point, justly named thus, as its top is often veiled in filmy vapor, indescribably beautiful, as the sun tinges it with roseate hues. A thunder-storm seen from this point is one of the



NESQUEHONING BRIDGE.

grandest spectacles in Nature ; and, as the forked lightning cuts across the lurid sky, the glen between Prospect Rock and Cloud Point seems one blaze of fire.

With a long, lingering glance at all these beauties, which we are so loath to leave, we return to Bethlehem, and proceed to Easton, where the road terminates.



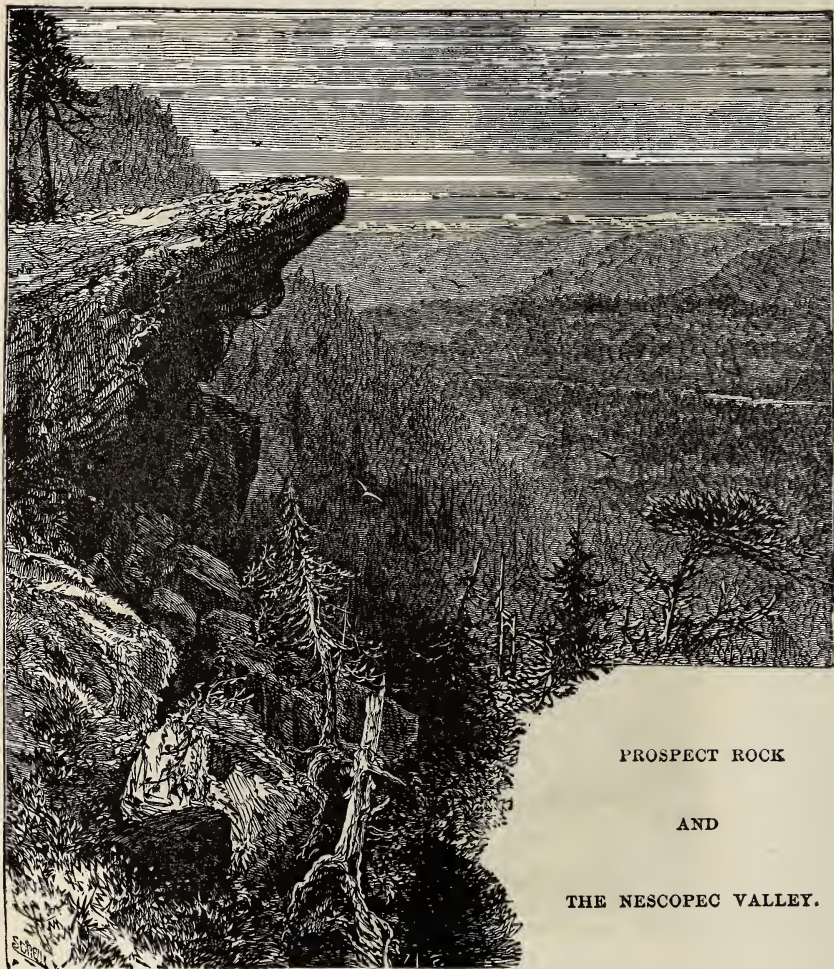
Freemansburg is the first station, situated on an eminence, which commands a view of one of the most picturesque spots on the railroad line, called the Gem of the Valley, resorted to by picnic parties; and we present a view of this charming little



VIEW ON STONY CREEK.

spot, with a small company gathered upon its plateau on the top of the hill.

The next point is Redington, also noted for its charming scenery. At this point, the Coleraine Iron Company have



PROSPECT ROCK

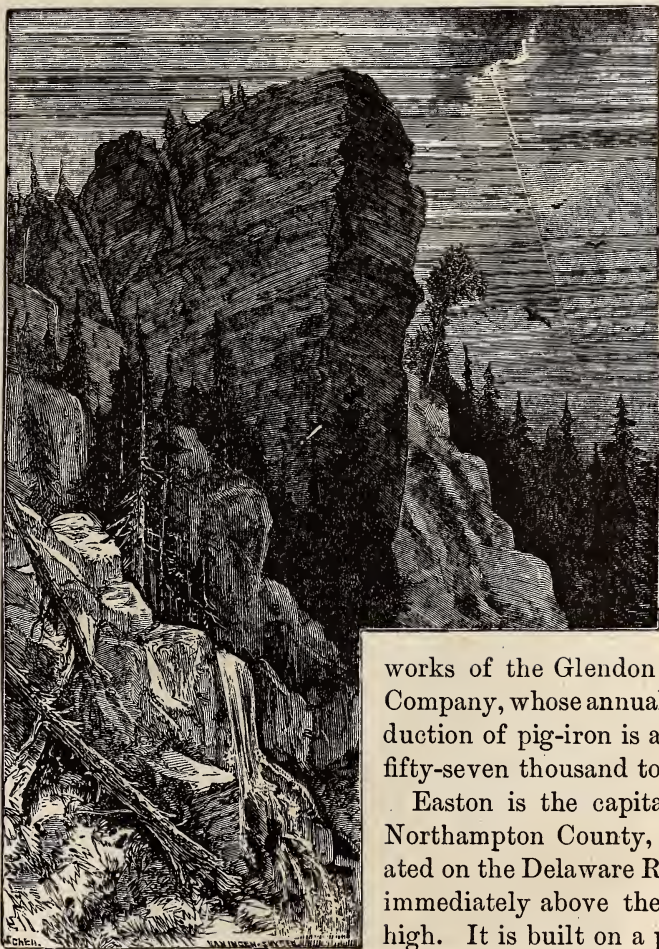
AND

THE NESCOPEEC VALLEY.



erected two furnaces, capable of working five hundred tons per week, and employing nearly two hundred men.

Glendon, the next place of interest, is the location of the



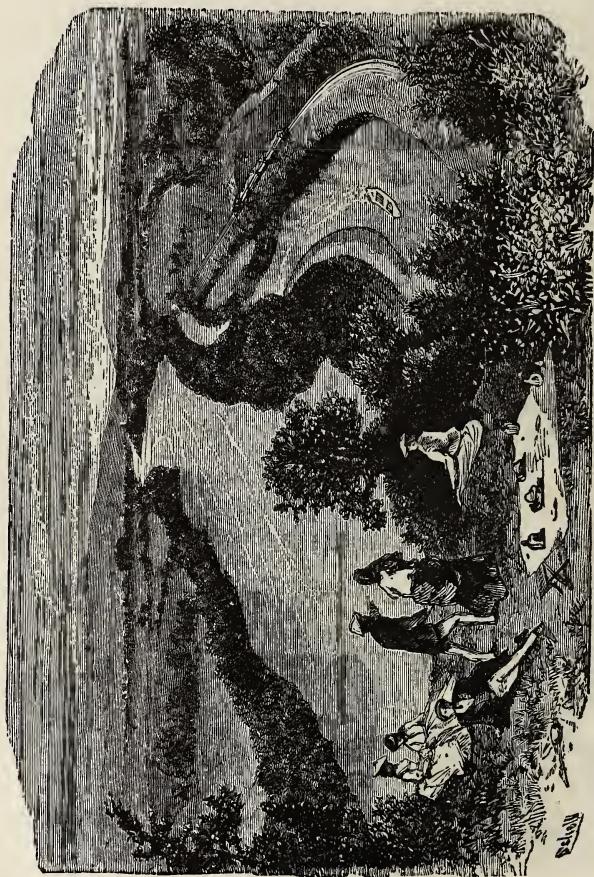
CLOUD POINT.

works of the Glendon Iron Company, whose annual production of pig-iron is about fifty-seven thousand tons.

Easton is the capital of Northampton County, situated on the Delaware River, immediately above the Lehigh. It is built on a point of land at the junction of the Lehigh River and Bush-

kill Creek with the Delaware; and from its location commands a delightful view of the surrounding country, which is rich and highly cultivated, abounding in limestone and iron ore. It is a flourishing city, well laid out, and amply supplied with water

and gas. It has extensive manufactories, among which are flouring-mills, oil-mills, saw-mills, iron-founderies, cotton-factories, and rifle-works. Population is 10,000. At Easton we take the Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western Railroad, for the Delaware Water Gap, one of the most beautiful spots



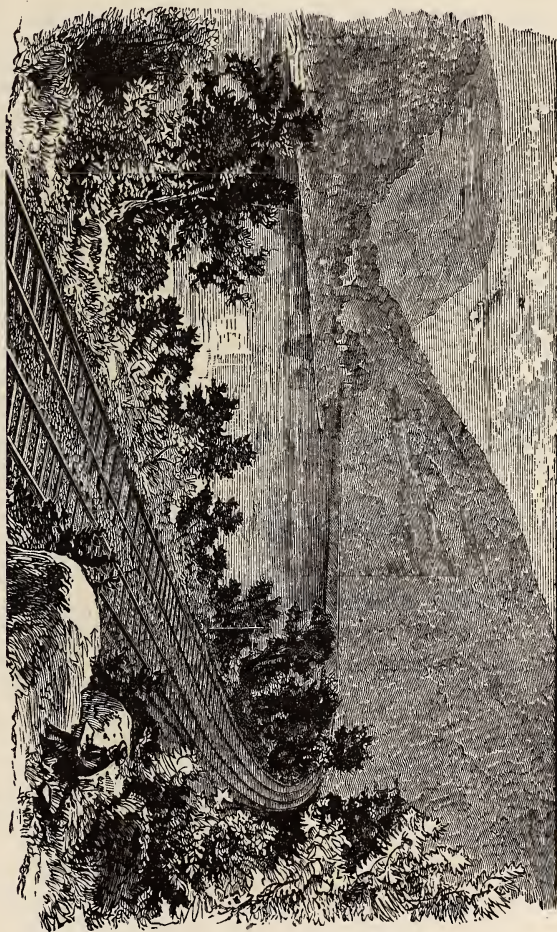
THE GEM OF THE VALLEY. (FROM FREEMANSBURG, LOOKING NORTH.)

in Pennsylvania, formed by the waters of the Delaware plunging through rocks at the base of the Kittatinny Mountain. It is about two miles long; and the rocks between which it passes are some sixteen hundred feet in height. At the southeastern end, the defile is so narrow, that there is scarcely room for the railroad to pass.



Returning again to Philadelphia, we take the Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Baltimore road. Starting from the depot at Broad Street and Washington Avenue, passing through Darby in the city, Sharon Hill (a new town), Glenolden, a quiet

DELAWARE WATER GAP.



retreat of great beauty and comfort, Ridley Park, and Crumm Lynne, we arrive at Chester, the oldest town in the State, it having been settled some thirty years before Philadelphia. An account has already been given why this town received the

name of Chester. It is now an enterprising, thrifty place, with many industrial works, among which is an extensive shipyard of twenty-three acres, where the largest ships are built. It has good common schools, and a Military Institute, and is the seat of the Crozier Theological Seminary.

Now back once more to Philadelphia, we take the West Chester Railroad from its depot in West Philadelphia, and are carried on through lovely valleys and towering hills in Chester and Delaware Counties, until we come to West Chester, twenty-two and a half miles from Philadelphia, beautifully situated on elevated ground. It has very fine buildings, public and private, and many excellent schools. It is the seat of a Normal School, of which we shall speak hereafter.

We have now followed out the principal railroads of Pennsylvania, starting from Philadelphia, and given such a description of the towns, boroughs, and cities through which they pass, as the limits of this work will allow; and the only place to be described hereafter is this city, the great commercial mart of the Commonwealth.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### HOSPITALS AND OTHER INSTITUTIONS.

Pennsylvania Hospital — Insane Department — Stephen Girard — Sick Seamen — Lying-in Department — Dispensary — Hospital Property taxed — Penn's Bust — Kirkbride Hospital — Hospital of the University of Pennsylvania — Lunatic Hospital, Harrisburg — Insane Hospital, Danville — Insane Hospital, Warren — Insane Hospital, Dixmont — German Hospital — Lackawanna Hospital — Wilkesbarre Hospital — Anthracite Hospital — Reform School — Pennsylvania Training School — Deaf-Mutes — Sheltering Arms — Western Penitentiary.

IT was near the close of the year 1750 that measures were set on foot for the establishment of a hospital in Philadelphia. Dr. Thomas Bond, the originator of the movement, was at that time one of the most distinguished physicians of the city. He began by soliciting subscriptions; and, in furthering this plan, he was much assisted by Franklin, who, through the newspapers, prepared the public mind, and thus they were successful in obtaining the number desired. But it was soon found that it must be placed upon a legislative basis to insure complete success; and a memorial was therefore presented to the Provincial Assembly, showing the need of such an establishment, and requesting that a charter should be granted to the contributors, and also for pecuniary assistance. This was presented Jan. 23, 1751; but it was not until the 7th of February, that the bill was passed, incorporating "the Contributors to the Pennsylvania Hospital," and appropriating *two thousand pounds* currency to establish a suitable building, which sum would be paid when an equal amount should be subscribed by individuals. The opposition to this memorial, at first felt, was principally from country members of the Assembly, who feared that the city would be exclusively benefited; but one of the



provisions of the charter was, that patients should be received from any part of the Province without partiality; and so well satisfied were the people with the charter, that, in a short time from its publication, considerably more than was required was raised, and their first Board of Managers chosen, which, according to one of the provisions of the charter, consisted of twelve men from among the contributors, — Joshua Crosby, Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Bond, Samuel Hazard, Richard Peters, Israel Pemberton, jun., Samuel Rhodes, Hugh Roberts, Joseph Morris, John Smith, Evan Morgan, and Charles Norris. John Rynell was elected Treasurer.

Immediately upon their election, the managers sent to Thomas and Richard Penn, then proprietaries of the Province, a full account of what had been done, asking them for a grant of land on which to erect a hospital. They also wrote to Thomas Hyam and Sylvanus Bevan to bespeak their intercession with the proprietaries, and mentioned as a suitable spot for their purpose the unappropriated portion of the square on the south side of Mulberry, between Ninth and Tenth Streets. The proprietaries were favorable to their petition, and sent out a complete charter, and an order to their lieutenant-governor, James Hamilton, conveying to the corporation a lot of ground on the north side of Sassafras Street, between Sixth and Seventh, being a portion of the grounds now known as the Franklin Square, with this condition, that, if there should not be constant succession of contributors to meet and choose managers, the land thus conveyed should revert to them, or their heirs. In view of this provision, and, moreover, deeming the site offered too damp and low to be healthful, they declined the grant of the proprietaries, but addressed another letter to them, urging their plea.

In order to carry into effect the object of the subscribers, the private mansion of Judge John Kinsey, situated on the south side of Market, west of Fifth Street, which, with the grounds, occupied about one-third of the square, was hired by the managers for forty pounds a year, and immediately occupied as a temporary hospital, and continued to be thus used for four years.



In February, 1752, the first two patients were received. The physicians and surgeons appointed at this time were Lloyd Zachary, Thomas and Phineas Bond, Thomas Cadwallader, Samuel Preston Moore, and John Redmand.

Not receiving any donation from the Penns, the managers resolved upon purchasing a lot suitable for the permanent location of the hospital; and in December, 1754, they bought the whole square, except a depth of sixty feet on Spruce Street, for five hundred pounds, on which the old hospital now stands. Ten years later, the Penns gave the sixty feet, and also an annuity of forty pounds. This lot was then far out of town; and, to get to it, people had to travel through the fields for a considerable distance. The next thing was to erect a suitable building; and the east wing, facing Eighth Street, was first built. May 28, 1755, the corner-stone was laid, with an inscription prepared by Dr. Franklin. In 1872, in making repairs, and when digging in front of this wing, this corner-stone was uncovered, and the inscription found in a state of perfect preservation, which is as follows:—

IN THE YEAR OF CHRIST  
MDCCLV.,  
GEORGE THE SECOND HAPPILY REIGNING  
(FOR HE SOUGHT THE HAPPINESS OF HIS PEOPLE),  
PHILADELPHIA FLOURISHING  
(FOR ITS INHABITANTS WERE PUBLIC SPIRITED),  
THIS BUILDING,  
BY THE BOUNTY OF THE GOVERNMENT  
AND OF MANY PRIVATE PERSONS,  
WAS PIOUSLY FOUNDED,  
FOR THE RELIEF OF THE SICK AND MISERABLE.  
MAY THE GOD OF MERCIES  
BLESS THE UNDERTAKING.

Patients were first admitted to this building December, 1756. At that time Philadelphia contained less than thirty thousand inhabitants. The measure was exceedingly popular, and subscriptions came in readily. William Allen, Chief Justice of the Province, gave two hundred and fifty pounds.

Franklin, "our great statesman, philosopher, and economist,"

suggested that twelve tin boxes should be made, and marked "*Charity for Hospital*," and that one of these be kept in each manager's house. Legacies were soon bequeathed to the hospital. Matthew Koplin, a German, gave a lot of ground, lying north of the city, to the institution. Donations were also sent from the West Indies, and from many of the Society of Friends in England.

"Among the important results of the interest felt in England was the receipt of a large sum of money, consequent upon the settlement of the concerns of a joint-stock partnership, denominated the "*Pennsylvania Land Company in London*." In the year 1760 an act of Parliament was passed, vesting in trustees the estates of that company in Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and Maryland, in order that they might be sold, and the proceeds distributed. But as it appeared probable, that, for a considerable portion of these proceeds, no just claimant would be found, the insertion of a clause in the act was procured by the friends of the hospital, granting to that institution all the money which might remain unclaimed in the hands of the trustees upon the 24th of June, 1770. Thomas Hyam appears to have been chiefly instrumental in bringing about this important event for the hospital; and the counsel and aid of Dr. Fothergill and David Barclay, in connection with Dr. Franklin, then in England, were very usefully resorted to in the ultimate settlement of the business. Nearly thirteen thousand pounds, or about thirty-four thousand dollars, accrued ultimately to the institution from this source, though the last portions of the sum were not received until after the close of the Revolutionary War."<sup>1</sup>

The insane, as well as the sick, were admitted into the hospital. The second year after it was opened, there were fifty-three patients; and, in the year preceding the Revolution, the number had increased to four hundred and thirty-five. Considerable sums were received from the friends of the insane patients; and it was in a prosperous condition at the time Independence was declared.

"Such were the regulations, and such the condition of the

<sup>1</sup> Wood's Historical and Biographical Memoirs, &c., p. 127.

hospital, at the breaking-out of the Revolutionary War. It had been established on a firm foundation; had matured its arrangements by an experience of many years; and was in a condition to expand with the growing means of the Province, and the accumulation of material for its beneficent operation. It had passed its period of development, had escaped the dangers of infancy, and was in a vigorous youth, with every promise of a noble maturity.

“But it was now to stand a severe trial of its stability. A storm had long been gathering in the political atmosphere of the Provinces, which broke out at length into the fury of civil and revolutionary war. It swept over the whole land. Social habits and relations, with their beautiful verdure and bloom, were crushed to earth beneath the blast, or torn and scattered by its violence; the arts and business of life, the noble erections of skill and industry, tottered upon their foundation, and stood roofless in the storm; the deepest rooted institutions of science and benevolence were uprooted or broken, and the fragments of their tempest-tossed limbs strewn over the country. When the rage of contest had ceased, and peace again shone out upon the land, the people, recovering from their stupefaction, began to look around them, to examine what had escaped destruction, to gather up the scattered fragments of their institutions, and to restore the beauty and beneficence of order to society once more.

“What at this time was the state of our institution? It had not come unscathed out of the tempest. ‘In the excess of party bitterness, four of its most efficient managers were banished to the wilds of Western Virginia.’”<sup>1</sup>

In January, 1792, another application was made to the Legislature for aid. A joint memorial, signed by the managers, treasurer, and physicians, giving an historical sketch of the institution, and stating how much it had been favored by the Assembly in former times, was sent to that body, praying for aid to complete the building. The Assembly granted the hospital the sum of ten thousand pounds, and, in addition, the unclaimed dividends of bankrupts’ estates, amounting in all to nineteen thousand dollars.

<sup>1</sup> See Wood, p. 134.

In April, 1796, twenty-five thousand dollars more were appropriated by the Assembly. By these appropriations, the west wing was so far completed as to be occupied in the same year. The wife of Stephen Girard was for twenty-five years and one month the inmate of the insane department of the hospital. A few months after entering the hospital, she gave birth to her only child, which soon died, in consequence of which the orphans of Philadelphia became his heirs. Mr. Girard was always a friend to the hospital, and made many donations to it. The following anecdote of him may be related in this connection. The hospital was in want of funds; and the venerable and good Quaker, Samuel Coates, one of the directors, said he would see if he could get a donation from Mr. Girard. Meeting him in the street, Mr. Coates said, "Stephen, we want some money for the hospital." Mr. Girard replied, "Well, come to my house to-morrow morning at eight o'clock." Mr. Coates went at the appointed time, and found Mr. Girard at breakfast. He asked him to take a cup of coffee, which invitation Mr. Coates accepted. After breakfast Mr. Coates said, "Now, Stephen, we will proceed to business." — "Well, what do you want?" said Mr. Girard. "Just what thee pleases, Stephen," said Mr. Coates. Girard then drew a check for two thousand dollars, which Mr. Coates took, and put into his pocket without looking at it. Mr. Girard said, "What, you not look at my check?" — "Oh, no, Stephen!" said Mr. Coates: "beggars must not be choosers." — "Give it back to me, then," said Mr. Girard. "Oh, no, Stephen!" said the shrewd old Quaker: "one bird in the hand is worth two in the bush." At which Mr. Girard said, "By George! you have taken me on the right tack." He then drew a check for five thousand dollars, and, handing it to Mr. Coates, said, "Will you look at that?" — "Well," said Mr. Coates, "if it pleases thee, Stephen, I will." — "Now give me back the other," said Mr. Girard, which Mr. Coates did. The old Quaker perfectly understood the man with whom he was dealing.

In 1799 George Latimer, the Collector of the Port of Philadelphia, requested that sick and disabled seamen, both of the public and private service, might be received into the hospital,



for a compensation to be paid by the United States Government. His petition was granted, and led to an arrangement by which the seamen of the merchant service were admitted for a certain weekly sum deducted from their wages, and where they were retained until cured, or dismissed by the collector.

In January, 1803, a *lying-in department* was established for poor and deserving married women. The First Troop of Philadelphia Cavalry donated a sum derived from their pay for services in the Revolutionary War, the annual income of which was between five and six hundred dollars.

In 1807 a dispensary was established for out-door patients; and physicians were appointed, at a small salary, to attend them.

Up to 1808 the hospital property had remained untaxed; but in this year it was assessed. The Board of Managers made an unsuccessful attempt to have the property exempted in January, 1809. Similar attempts were made, and met with the same ill success, for many years, till at length, by bringing in the popular aid of the voters, the act was finally repealed, and the whole property of the hospital was declared free from taxation.

In June, 1802, a marble bust of William Penn, believed to be the first executed in this country, was presented by James Traquair; and the leaden statue in front of the hospital, of the same noble man, was presented by his grandson, John Penn, in September, 1804. Among many other donations was that of Stephen Girard, which in July, 1832, amounted to \$29,250.

The accommodations for the insane becoming too narrow, and the room which they occupied being wanted for other patients, the contributors instructed the managers to propose a suitable site for a separate asylum at a future meeting. In 1832, and subsequently in 1835, the vacant grounds east, west, and south-west of the hospital were authorized to be sold to defray the expense of the new building. The site selected was two miles west of the city; its corner-stone laid June 22, 1836; and the house received patients Jan. 1, 1841.

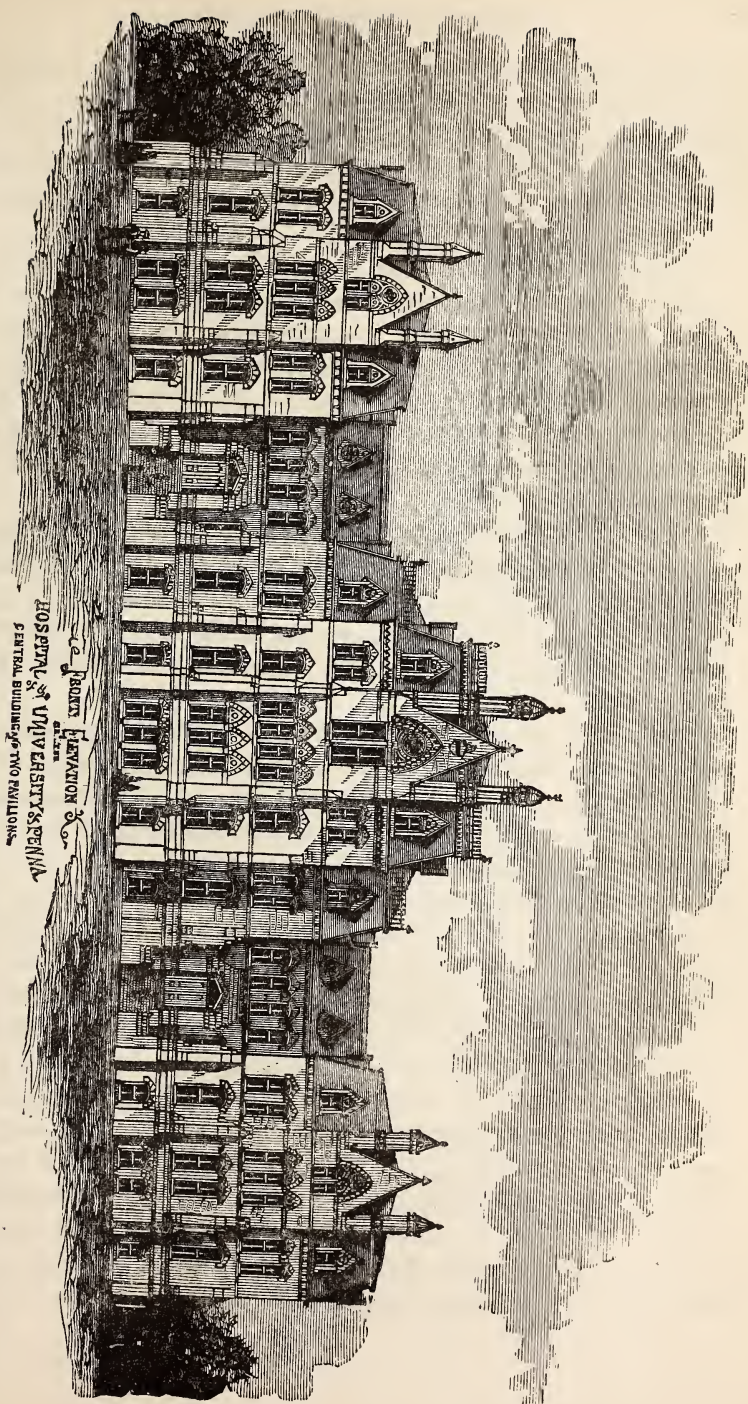
From this period until Oct. 27, 1859, the male and female insane occupied the same building. At this time, a new edifice

having been erected on the same grounds, the males were removed to it; and now the Pennsylvania Hospital for the Insane consists of two separate departments, — one for males, the other for females. Dr. Thomas S. Kirkbride was appointed Superintendent of the Pennsylvania Hospital for the Insane, at the opening of the institution, and has so remained until the present time; and under his supervision it is one of the best conducted of its kind in our country.

From the opening of the Pennsylvania Hospital, to the year 1841, there were 4,336 insane patients admitted; and from that year, when the Pennsylvania Hospital for the Insane was established, the number was 3,360 down to the close of 1859, making, from the first opening of the Pennsylvania Hospital to the end of 1859, a total of 7,696 insane patients.

THE HOSPITAL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA is situated in West Philadelphia, on the Darby Road, due south of the main building of the university, the site on which it stands having been given by the city, upon the condition that it maintain fifty free beds. An illustration of this hospital comes properly in this place from the grant of two hundred thousand dollars by the State Legislature to carry on this noble charity. The design of the hospital comprises a central building with six pavilions, each to cost one hundred thousand dollars.

THE STATE LUNATIC HOSPITAL, Harrisburg, in 1874 showed an average of 395.1 patients; the highest number during the year being 419, the least 376. The average cost per head was \$286.03, or a weekly cost of \$5.50. It has 131 acres of land; and its estimated value, including buildings, is \$298,300. Its personal property is \$30,000. It gives accommodation to two hundred of each sex. New floors were laid in the north wing of the hospital; old doors and window-frames were replaced by new ones; coats of lime and cement were put upon the walls, from which the old plastering was removed, which produced a decided change in the atmosphere. It was also relieved from the pernicious effects of overcrowding, as the Danville hospital was in sufficient order to allow the admittance of all the patients of the Northern district. The main building was



PLAN OF THE  
HOSPITAL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA  
CENTRAL BUILDING TWO FAMILIONS

HOSPITAL OF UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA.



found by the inspectors in good order, and also the laundry, and other outdoor buildings. The gas-works are nearly completed. Its officers are efficient and competent, and, with its superintendent, are constantly making efforts to extend its usefulness, with every possible economy, and with a prospect of success.

STATE HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE, Danville, is an institution of very recent growth, being first occupied some time in 1873. It had, Sept. 30, 1874, accommodations for 240 patients, or 120 of each sex. The average number for the year ending at this time was 198 males; females, 79: the largest number had been 141 males, 97 females; the least, 100 males and 62 females. The average cost per head was \$262.60, or a weekly cost of \$5.05.

It has 250 acres of land; and its value, including buildings, is \$670,000; the personal property, \$40,000. It has no funds or investments. Its receipts for the year were \$52,151.21; viz., from State, \$14,504.17; from county authorities for indigent patients, \$29,746.48; from private patients, \$7,900.56. The expenditures were \$52,238.19.

This edifice, when it shall be completed, will not be surpassed by any in the country for general arrangement and space. The north wing is now nearly done; and, when the corresponding south wing is ready for occupancy, from six hundred to seven hundred patients can be cared for.

THE STATE HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE, Warren, is not yet completed; but work was commenced for the foundation April 8, 1874. The outer walls of the building, and part of the walls of the air-shafts, and the arches to close them in, were laid by Sept. 16 of that year. Its corner-stone was laid by his Excellency, Gov. J. F. Hartranft, Sept. 10, 1874. It is to consist of a large central building, and six continuous wings, to be subdivided into three lateral, and three transverse wings upon each side of the main central building. The building is to be of large size, and will contain all modern improvements. The property contains 330 acres, and cost \$33,000. It is an admirable location, fronting Conewango River, and in the rear has high ground, covered with wood, on which is also



sufficient stone for the hospital building, of a good quality, easily worked, and of a light, cheerful color.

Of other institutions, which, though not State institutions, are aided by it, is the WESTERN HOSPITAL FOR INSANE, at Dixmont. It owes its origin to the benevolent citizens of Alleghany County, who made contributions to found a public hospital for the insane and afflicted, as well as the sick, helpless, and infirm.

Their means not being found sufficient, they appealed to the Legislature, who added a supplement to the charter in May 8, 1855, appropriated funds to extend accommodations for the insane, and also empowered the authorities of the respective counties of the Western district to send their indigent insane to it in the ratio of their population. A further supplement was approved March 19, 1856, extending aid to construct additional buildings to the one already in existence, for the special accommodation of the insane of Western Pennsylvania. Accordingly, a tract of land on the right bank of the Ohio, seven miles below Pittsburg, was chosen for the purpose, and buildings erected, which have culminated in the present edifice at Dixmont, through the liberal appropriations of the Legislature, from time to time.

There has been but one instance in which the State has been represented in the board of managers; the Assembly being fully satisfied with the management of the institution, and content to manifest its approval by regular annual appropriations for its support.

Its officers are a president, two vice-presidents, a secretary and treasurer, twenty-one managers chosen by the contributors under the provisions in the charter, three managers appointed by the governor and nineteen managers for life, being so from donations of a thousand dollars each.

This establishment is always found in the best condition; and under the excellent care of Dr. Reed, and the intelligent board of managers, conduces much to the benefit and improvement of the class for which it provides.

The appropriation in 1874 amounted to thirty-two thousand dollars, for the following purposes; viz., salaries, wages, and

support of the house, twenty-five thousand dollars ; insurance, two thousand dollars ; grading, improvement of grounds, and protecting building from threatened *land slide*, ten thousand dollars ; total, thirty-seven thousand dollars. Of the latter item, the amount appropriated for 1875 was fifteen thousand dollars.

THE GERMAN HOSPITAL, Philadelphia, is another institution aided by the State. It was organized to afford relief to the indigent sick and disabled ; and is supported by contributions from members of the corporation, donations, and receipts from pay patients. The Legislature of 1873 appropriated twenty thousand dollars to enlarge and improve its building, on condition that the same amount should be raised by private contribution, and that the Commonwealth should have a lien, secured by mortgage, which shall be collected if the said property shall be used for other purposes.

Its building, at the corner of Girard and Corinthian Avenues, was formerly a private residence ; and there is now an extension being added, which will increase its accommodations from forty beds to one hundred and twenty-five. Its officers are very efficient ; and every attention, both ordinary and medical, is given to the sick.

LACKAWANNA HOSPITAL, at Scranton, also receives aid from the State ; and, at the regular session of the Legislature for 1873, an appropriation of ten thousand dollars was made, to be used for the purchase of real estate for the said hospital ; the Commonwealth to be secured in a first lien upon premises so purchased.

An additional appropriation of ten thousand dollars was made in the session of 1874, to be expended in the payment of a mortgage of four thousand dollars, and in the repairing, improving, maintenance, and support of the institution for that year.

WILKESBARRE HOSPITAL and State Beneficiary was organized in 1872. It has about twenty beds. It had always been supported by voluntary contributions from the citizens, when, impressed by the importance of the services it rendered, the Legislature of 1874 passed an act appropriating five thousand

dollars for its maintenance for the current year, and for its further extension. A corps of physicians give their services without compensation.

THE ANTHRACITE HOSPITAL ASSOCIATION was formed, and fifteen thousand dollars were appropriated, upon condition that the court grant the charter applied for, and that a like sum of the funds of the association has actually been invested in the purchase of ground, or the erection of buildings, or building, for the gratuitous care and cure of persons injured in the mines, or in the transporting of coal over the railroads of this Commonwealth.

HOUSE OF REFUGE OF WESTERN PENNSYLVANIA, now known as the Pennsylvania Reform School, is located at Alleghany. Its charter bears date April 22, 1850. The cost of the buildings, as near as can be ascertained, was a hundred and fifty thousand dollars, of which the State provided ninety-three thousand five hundred dollars. There are thirteen acres included in the ground, originally costing ten thousand dollars. The present estimated value of the real estate is two hundred and fifty thousand dollars; and the personal property, fifty thousand dollars.

The constantly increasing numbers render extended accommodations necessary; and, it not being practicable to extend the buildings at Alleghany, a new location on the Chartiers Road, about eighteen miles from Pittsburg, has been chosen, consisting of five hundred acres, at a cost of \$88,621. The cornerstone of a new building was laid July, 1873, by Gov. Hartman and Senator Scott. The family system has been adopted; and six of the buildings for boys are now under roof; and several of those designed for girls are far advanced towards completion.

There is to be a change of discipline in the new institution, the prison idea to be entirely abolished. The system of labor pursued is the congregated one. Superintendent Avery, in the performance of his difficult duties, is pre-eminent. The last State appropriation was \$119,500.

PENNSYLVANIA TRAINING-SCHOOL FOR FEEBLE-MINDED CHILDREN was organized Feb. 10, 1853, by a few benevolent

gentlemen, at the office of J. J. Barclay, Esq., in Philadelphia, and in April 7th of that year was incorporated and endowed. At first rooms were rented on Schoolhouse Lane, near Germantown; and in July it opened with eight children. Owing to lack of funds, for a long time its success seemed doubtful; but two successful appeals to the Legislature, backed by the public, so far encouraged them, that in February, 1855, a house and lot in Germantown, on Woodbine Avenue, were purchased for sixteen thousand dollars; and the Legislature, to aid in payment of this purchase, donated ten thousand dollars, upon condition that the same amount be raised by subscription.

This location did not prove a desirable one; and in 1857 the site upon which the present building is located, one mile from Media, in Delaware County, was purchased; and the institution was formally opened Nov. 2, 1859.

There are in all about eighty-nine acres, one-eighth of which is occupied by the main buildings, children's playgrounds, and a grove on the north and west. There is a truck-garden of six acres, and forty acres of good arable and grazing land. The remainder is yet uncultivated. It is estimated at \$14,414, donated by friends of the institution. The main building is two hundred and fifty-six feet front, with wings at each end one hundred feet deep, and a central extension in the rear one hundred and twenty-two feet. One hundred feet south of this is a building fifty-six feet by sixty feet, two stories high, in which are the laundry, heating-apparatus, and shops. The total cost of these buildings was \$169,618, of which the State appropriated \$97,500, and \$83,918 were donated by friends of the institution in Philadelphia, Delaware, Chester, and Alleghany Counties.

The management of this institution, under Dr. Kerlin and his assistants, is admirable; and the objects aimed at have been very successfully realized. The average number of inmates for 1874 was two hundred and twenty-two.

In addition to the usual appropriation from the State, application will be made for ten thousand dollars to erect a building, which is estimated to cost thirty thousand dollars, for asylum cases.



HOME FOR THE DEAF-MUTES, at Pittsburg, had granted to it by the Legislature of 1873 the sum of two thousand dollars, towards the maintenance and education of its inmates.

SHELTERING ARMS, Pittsburg, is not yet completed; but an application for five thousand dollars was granted by the Legislature at its session of 1873. Ground has been donated worth twenty thousand dollars; and a building costing twenty thousand dollars has been erected.

THE STATE PENITENTIARY FOR THE WESTERN DISTRICT OF PENNSYLVANIA, at Alleghany, was first organized by an act of Assembly, passed March 3, 1818. A Board of Commissioners was appointed May 20, 1818, who selected a site, and proceeded to the construction of buildings, which, as originally planned, were finished November, 1827, although the first prisoner was received July 21, 1826.

The land was donated by the town of Alleghany, on condition that five hundred thousand dollars should be expended by the State, in constructing such an institution at this place. The prison lot contains  $6\frac{45}{100}$  acres, as by survey of city engineer. It is all enclosed, the cell buildings being surrounded on three sides by a wall of cut stone, plastered inside, all originally thirty feet high; but, by grading of streets, it is somewhat less on one side.

The front building is three stories, with a basement. It is about one hundred and fifty feet long by thirty feet deep, and is now occupied for offices, store-rooms, and warden's residence. Three blocks of cells diverge from the middle of the rear of the centre building. They are two stories high, and contain three hundred and twenty-four cells, and, up to 1863, had cost \$445,066.54, which has since been increased for repairs and boilers, \$13,300. Another block (D) has recently been added, separate from the others, parallel with the east wall, also two stories high. It contains twenty-four cells, and is now occupied as a female ward, hospital, dispensary, bath-rooms, laundry, library, store-rooms, dungeons, receiving-cells, and a chapel, and will accommodate six hundred and fifty persons. Its cost was \$85,471.92, of which the Legislature appropriated \$82,013.24. All the buildings are of cut stone, with the excep-

tion of this block, which is of hard brick. The front building is enclosed by a wooden paling fence on the sides, and an iron one on the front.

The land, being granted from the public common ground for a special purpose, cannot be properly appraised as real estate; but, if it were divided into small lots, it would bring over two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The estimated value, Jan. 1, 1870, of personal property, was: utensils, \$4,163.95; furniture, \$1,919.68; subsistence, \$4,113.54; manufactured goods and materials, \$18,992.04; total, \$29,189.21.

The average size of the cells on the first floor is 11 feet 10 inches high, 15 feet 2 inches long, 7 feet 10 inches wide: on the second floor, they are 11 feet 7 inches high, 11 feet 6 inches long, 7 feet 7 inches wide. They each have a window, the average size of which is 2 feet 5 inches by 4 inches; ventilator in outside wall, 2 feet by 4 inches; ceiling ventilator, 6 inches diameter. Each cell has two doors: the outside doors of one block are of iron, all the others being heavy wooden ones, which in hot weather are open for ventilation, at other times kept locked. The inside cell-doors are fastened with heavy bolts: the outside doors have each a heavy lock.

The cells were built for the separate system, but are larger than any yet built for a congregate system, and with some alterations of doors and steam-pipes, which would place the occupants under more rigid surveillance than is now practicable, would make model cells for a congregate prison.

Nearly all the cells have but one occupant; and, as far as possible, they are kept separate, except when associated for "work, learning, or religious exercises." Each prisoner is furnished with wooden trestles and bed-boards, or a hammock, table, stool, shelf, bucket, broom, tin-cup, plate, molasses can, two pans for coffee and soup, spoon, knife, salt-box, vinegar bottle, comb and dirt-box; hydrant and waste-pipe in each cell; gas in all the cells, from six to eight and a half, P.M. The gas is sometimes required to be lighted in the daytime by the weavers and shoemakers.

In the female ward, the cells are rather larger than the others, and have wooden floors; all the others being of stone.

These cells, twelve in number, have inside iron slat doors: all others are solid, with a slide, five by eight inches, in each door, through which food is delivered. The slide is left down in day-time for ventilation.

The bedding consists of a tick, made in the penitentiary, filled with rye or oat straw, three blankets in winter, two in summer, one sheet, one straw pillow; the sheet washed every two weeks, blankets twice a year, bedding changed three times a year. All the clothing is made in the prison, of Kentucky jean, half cotton, half wool, pattern gray and black bars. Each prisoner is supplied with one pair of pants (many with two pairs), one vest, one jacket, two cotton checked shirts, two pairs of woollen socks, one pair of coarse, low-cut shoes, averaging two pairs yearly. Men whose work requires it are furnished with extra clothes.

Dr. D. N. Rankin, the physician, resides near the penitentiary. He makes an official visit of the cells once a week, and at any other time, when asked by any officer, visits prisoners, whether previously sick or not. It is his duty to examine and report on food, clothing, condition of cells and prisoners. He has charge of the hospital, and in person makes up many of his prescriptions in a dispensary attached thereto. He performs all the surgical and most of the dental operations. He also is required to keep a full record of prescriptions, directions, diseases and their treatment.

Great pains are taken that every prisoner shall be made acquainted with the rules and regulations of the prison, as far as they relate to himself. A copy is placed in every cell; and, if any prisoner is unable to read readily, they are read to him by an officer, soon after his entrance.

All the prisoners attend religious exercises in the chapel on Sunday morning; and about one hundred and forty attend Sunday school in the afternoon. They are divided into fifteen classes, in charge of teachers from the outside. Every cell has a Bible; and every prisoner has opportunity to obtain religious instruction.

A copy-book, spelling-book, and arithmetic are supplied to any who will make use of them; and other books of an educa-

tional character may be bought by the prisoners or their friends. They may also subscribe to religious weekly papers, without regard to their denominational character. The chaplain gives secular instruction during the week, in various parts of the prison. Ministers of any denomination can visit prisoners whenever desired; and Catholic priests make weekly visits to members of that church.

Every prisoner whose conduct is satisfactory is allowed to write a letter once a month, and also to receive one in the same time. These privileges are taken from them for some trivial offence; if more serious, a few hours or days in a partially darkened cell, on bread and water. In very rare cases, shackles upon hands and feet are used; but months sometimes elapse without severe measures being resorted to.

The library contains nearly two thousand volumes, embracing history, biography, religion, travels, novels, and miscellaneous works. A book is given to each prisoner every two weeks; but if a book is injured, or for any breach of rules, the favor is suspended.

The principal occupations are weaving cotton and check shirtings and rag-carpet, manufacture of boots and shoes, cigars, and cigar-boxes. The most remunerative work is weaving, which has long been a specialty in this institution. An "over-work" system has been in operation several times; and, although it does not as yet amount to much, it is to be presumed that it will be an effectual aid to discipline, should it ever become general, as many seem anxious to engage in it, to assist them when discharged, or to enable them to send money to their families.



## CHAPTER XXV.

### UNIVERSITIES, COLLEGES, AND OTHER LITERARY INSTITUTIONS.

University of Pennsylvania — Western University of Pennsylvania — Lafayette College — Other Colleges in the State — Normal Schools — High Schools — Private Schools — Business Colleges — Provisions of the New Constitution — City School Systems — Of Philadelphia — of Pittsburg — Of Alleghany.

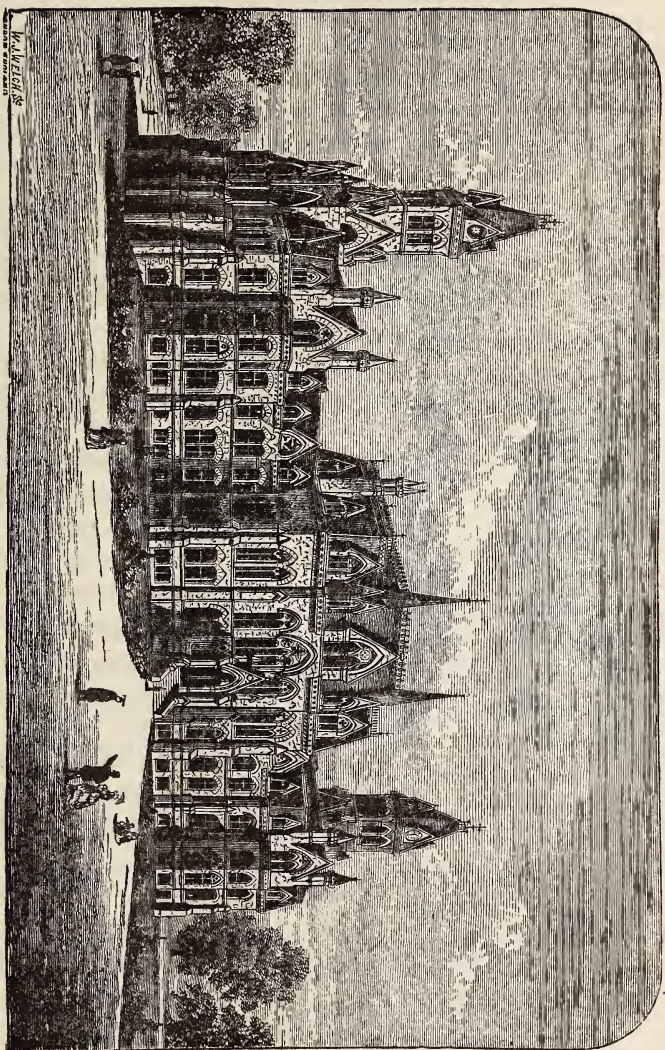
THE UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA was formerly located in Philadelphia, on Ninth Street, between Market and Chestnut Streets. It was established in 1750, as a charity school and academy, on Fourth Street, owing its formation largely to the enterprise of Franklin; extended to a College in 1755, and to a University in 1779, which was then removed to Ninth Street. As an Academy, there was one school for Latin, one for English, and one for mathematics, all under the care of three masters, with assistant ushers, the principal master taking the title of rector. The charity department gave instruction to the children of poor citizens gratis. The schools prospered so abundantly, that in July 13, 1753, a charter was granted to the trustees by the proprietors; and they were incorporated as the "Trustees of the Academy and Charitable School in the Province of Pennsylvania." Soon after this, to the branches already taught were added logic, rhetoric, natural and moral philosophy. The Rev. William Smith, who afterwards became so famous, was the teacher of these sciences. The study of Greek was joined to that of Latin; and, as their course of instruction now did not differ materially from that pursued in colleges, it only remained for them to assume the title, and the privilege of conferring degrees upon the students. In pursu-

ance of this plan, the teachers recommended to the board of trustees, that application should be made for additions to their charter, investing them with the rights of a collegiate body. The application was successful, and the proprietors granted an additional charter June 16, 1755, giving to the board the name of "The Trustees of the College, Academy, and Charitable School of Philadelphia." This condition, however, was imposed, that the trustees and professors should subscribe the customary oaths or affirmations of allegiance to the king of Great Britain. The first commencement of the college was on the 17th of May, 1757, when its honors were conferred on seven young men.

From this period the institution grew rapidly, and so admirably was it conducted, that it secured the patronage of the distant colonies, and even the West Indies, as well as the immediate neighborhood. The exercises of the college were suspended during a portion of the Revolutionary War, and commenced again September, 1778, immediately after Philadelphia was evacuated by the British.

Towards the close of the Revolution, the Assembly abrogated the old charter; and, under the new one which they granted, the name of the University of Pennsylvania was adopted. The new trustees met for the first time in December, 1779, organized themselves into a board, and appointed Joseph Reed president.

The university has been removed to West Philadelphia, on the Darby Road, and consists of three elegant buildings on Academical Hill; viz., "Hospital," "Medical Department," and "Department of Arts and Science." A plate and description of the first have already been given in the chapter upon hospitals. Of the second we shall speak hereafter. The last and main building of the university has a front of two hundred and sixty feet, is three stories in height, exclusive of the basement. The wings are each one hundred and two feet deep. The exterior walls are of serpentine stone, with coping, buttresses, and gables of Ohio stone, surmounted by highly ornamental towers. The main entrance is through an ornate Gothic porch in the middle of the front, supported by columns of



UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA (DEPARTMENT OF ARTS AND SCIENCES).



highly polished Aberdeen granite. Its former location, at the corner of Ninth and Chestnut Streets, is now the site of the new Post-Office of Philadelphia.

THE WESTERN UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA was chartered in 1822, and immediately commenced its operations as a literary college. It was located at Pittsburg, and buildings erected in 1830. Previous to 1845, it had graduated over one hundred students, at which time it was destroyed by fire. It was revived about 1860, has since received large donations, and is now in a flourishing condition. Dr. Woods, its present chancellor, is an efficient and able man. A prominent feature in this institution is the training young men for industrial pursuits.

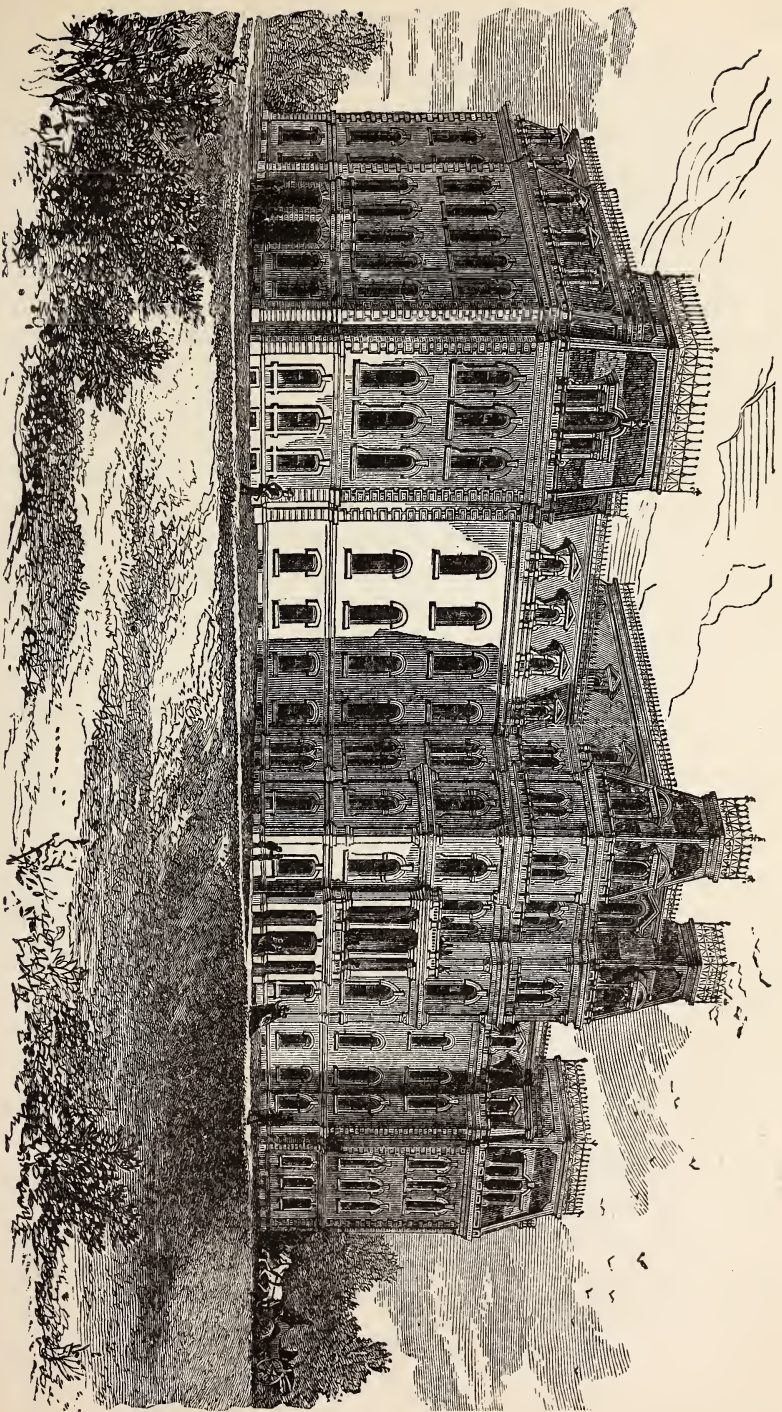
LAFAYETTE COLLEGE, at Easton, received its charter in 1826. Its presidents have been Junkin, Youmans, McClane, and McPhail. Rev. William C. Cattell, D.D., and twenty-six professors and tutors, are at present its efficient faculty. It was at first intended that military tactics should occupy a large place in the instruction of the college; but this purpose was soon abandoned. The college received its name in honor of Lafayette, who visited this country, the second time, the year it was chartered. The classes of the college were first organized in a humble building on the southern bank of the Lehigh. The Rev. George Junkin, D.D., was inaugurated president. In 1833 a more eligible site was procured; and the corner-stone of the main college building was laid July 4 of that year. In 1841 Dr. Junkin resigned. Dr. Cattell was chosen in August, 1863. Under his administration, it has been wonderfully prospered.

Mr. A. Pardee gave twenty thousand dollars to endow the chair of mathematics in the college. Pardee Hall was dedicated Oct. 21, 1873, and, with its scientific equipment, cost more than two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, all of which was the munificent gift of him whose name it bears.

The dedication of this hall was an epoch in the history of this college. The address was delivered by Rossiter W. Raymond, Ph. D., professor of mining engineering in the college. This address is thoroughly scientific. It was followed by



PARDEE HALL.



speeches from Ex-Gov. James Pollock, president of the board of trustees, by Gov. Hartranft, and several others.

One of the most pleasing features of the day was the presentation of the keys by Mr. Pardee to the president, and his reply. The former said, with that modesty characteristic of Mr. Pardee, "The completion of this building makes it my very pleasant duty, on behalf of the Building Committee, and myself as the donor, to formally present it to you as the representative of the Trustees and Faculty of Lafayette. The building itself speaks of the skill and taste of the architect, the faithfulness of the builder, and the care with which it has been supervised during its erection. Our responsibilities have not been small; but on you, sir, and on the students who shall go out year by year from these halls, rests a far larger responsibility,—the reputation of the institution. But, looking to the future by the light of the past, we rest the responsibility on you with no misgiving. I have the honor, sir, of now presenting you with the keys of the hall."

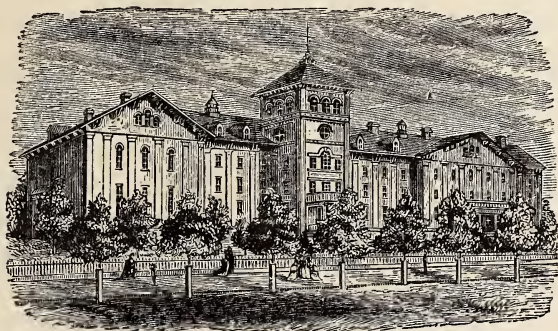
Pres. Cattell responded as follows:—

"In receiving from you the keys of the building for the scientific department of the college, which you have so munificently endowed, I can find no words adequate to express my own thanks, or the thanks of my colleagues in the faculty, for this grand addition to their means of attractive and thorough teaching, and of their own scientific researches, or the thanks of the trustees and patrons and friends of the college, alike interested in her welfare, or the thanks of all friends of education who see in such a large and unselfish use of wealth for the benefit of mankind the noblest use to which it can be applied. And I know you, sir, so well, that I am sure the less I say to you on an occasion so public, the better you will be pleased. I shall, therefore, only assure you, that our hearts are full of gratitude for your munificent gift, and for your wise and judicious counsels, under which the college has grown and prospered; and that we and our children will not cease to cherish and honor your memory; and that our heartfelt prayer to the Giver of every good and perfect gift is for his richest blessings to rest ever upon you and yours."



This college has a board of trustees, of which Ex-Gov. James Pollock is chairman, amply sufficient to recommend it to all who have sons to educate; and a faculty of unsurpassed ability to do the work. So that all who send their children here may be well assured, if they fail of a good and thorough education, the fault will be neither in the facilities for instruction, nor in the want of fidelity on the part of the instructors.

BEAVER COLLEGE is located at Beaver, the capital of Beaver County, Penn. It is a college and a *Musical Institute*. The course of study is both classical and English. The English course, omitting the Latin and French languages, occupies three years. The Greek, Latin, German, and Italian languages will be pursued systematically, when classes desire it. This college



BEAVER COLLEGE, BEAVER.

receives as pupils both males and females; and the Greek may be substituted for the French by gentlemen, and German for the Latin by ladies. Instruction in music is a prominent branch, as its name implies, in this college. The building is pleasantly situated on the bank of the Ohio River, twenty-five miles below Pittsburg, and is easy of access by rail from several directions.

The following account of the other colleges, except the last, in Pennsylvania, is taken from the annual report of the United States Commissioner of Education for 1874. "ALLEGHANY COLLEGE, Meadville (Methodist Episcopal), has classical, scientific, and biblical departments, each with a four-years' course,

the completion of either of which course secures the degree of A.B. Ladies may be admitted to the college classes, subject to the same examination as gentlemen. Corps of instruction, six; number of students, a hundred and fifty-four.

DICKINSON COLLEGE, Carlisle (also Methodist Episcopal), has established a scheme of ten departments of study, and proposes to carry it out on the university principle of elective courses; those students who wish to obtain degrees devoting the earlier portion of their course, as heretofore, to classical and mathematical studies, and having large opportunity for selection in the later portion of it. There is a scientific course, students in which are allowed to substitute chemistry for the Latin and Greek of the junior and senior years; and a biblical course, in which Hebrew and New Testament Greek come in place of equivalent studies in those years. Corps of instruction, six; number of students, seventy-nine.

FRANKLIN AND MARSHALL COLLEGE, Lancaster (Reformed), claims, on the contrary, to be a college in the old American acceptation of the term; has no optional courses, no irregular students, and no provisional or mixed classes. Corps of instruction, eleven; number of students, one hundred and forty-eight.

HAVERFORD COLLEGE, on the Pennsylvania Railroad, nine miles from Philadelphia (Friends), has classical, mathematical, and English departments, with special classes in Hebrew, Italian, Spanish, and analytical chemistry. Corps of instruction, four; number of students, forty-eight.

LEBANON VALLEY COLLEGE, Annville (United Brethren), presents a classical course, issuing in the degree of A.B.; a ladies' course, which issues in that of *artium magistra*; and a scientific course, which brings no degree. Corps of instruction, nine; number of students, one hundred and seventy-one.

LINCOLN UNIVERSITY, Lower Oxford (Presbyterian), is especially, though not exclusively, designed for the instruction of the colored race. Its students have the choice between a collegiate, a normal, and a commercial course; while faculties of theology, law, and medicine, afford facilities for professional training, additional to the collegiate course. Corps of instruction, nine; number of students, one hundred and seventy-five, with ten unclassified ones, as reported in 1873.



LA SALLE COLLEGE, Philadelphia (Roman Catholic), is under the direction of the Christian Brothers, and unites religious with secular instruction in its primary, academic, or preparatory commercial and collegiate departments. Corps of instruction, nine; number of students, one hundred and seventy-six, as by report of 1873.

LEHIGH UNIVERSITY, South Bethlehem (Protestant Episcopal), mainly devoted to scientific training, has yet classical and English courses, and is enabled by the liberality of its founder, Hon. Asa Packer, to make its tuition entirely free. Corps of instruction, seven; number of students, one hundred and three.

MUHLENBURG COLLEGE, Allentown (Lutheran), offers to students a three-years' training in an academic course preparatory to the regular collegiate course of four years. Arrangements are also made for those who desire to pursue partial studies in the college course. Corps of instruction, eight; number of students, one hundred and two.

PENNSYLVANIA COLLEGE, Gettysburg (Lutheran), also with a regular course of four years, includes German in the course, and devotes especial attention to English language and literature. Chaucer, Spenser, Shakspeare, Milton, and Bunyan are used as text-books in the class-room, with analysis of the text, examination of idioms, and investigation of the laws and history of word-growth. Corps of instruction, twelve; number of students, one hundred and forty-five.

Lutherans have ever believed in education and a learned ministry. The faculty and trustees say of this College, "It has been founded as the institution through which we may do our part of the great work of Christian education for the country, and especially that we may provide for the educational needs of the church, and develop its power."

The college has existed forty-one years. It has ever been in want of funds. By constant effort, without much pecuniary means, it has risen to an honorable position among the colleges of the country. It will be seen, by the following statistics, that it has been of great value to the church. The whole number of students that have pursued a full course, and been regularly graduated, is 555, of whom 305 have been for the ministry.

Three of these have entered the foreign missionary field. Besides the graduates, about 1,419 others, taking a partial or select course. Of this class, 110 have entered the ministry. The whole number educated in the Pennsylvania College is over 2,000. At the least calculation, 415 have entered the ministry.

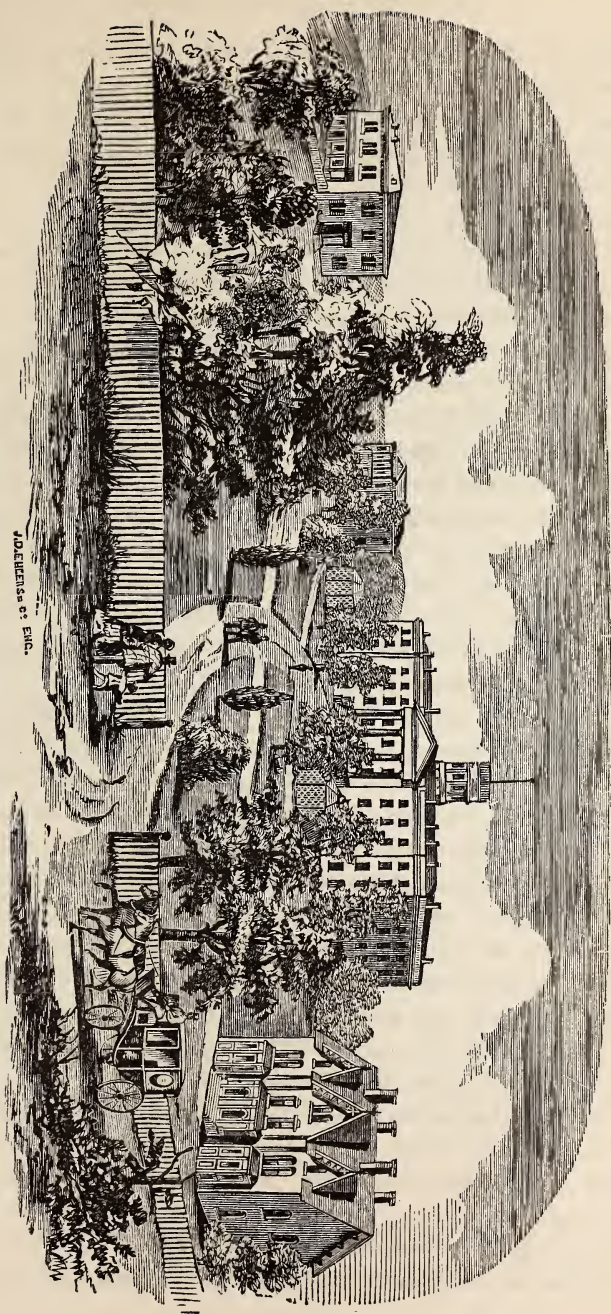
The whole faculty of the college, with a single exception, are now from its graduates. All the professors of the Theological Seminary are graduates of the Pennsylvania College. Other colleges have sprung from this. Wittenberg College, Roanoke College, North Carolina College, Newbury College, and Carthage College, are all outgrowths or children of Pennsylvania College. The graduates of this college have filled many of the most honorable positions in the ministry, in law, in medicine, in journalism, and in all the positions of secular life.

PALATINATE COLLEGE, Myerstown (Reformed), offers a choice of seven special courses, besides the regular college course. Elementary drawing is taught gratuitously, and the more advanced study of it, with vocal and instrumental music, may be carried through all the courses. Corps of instruction, nine; number of students, two hundred and eight.

THE PENNSYLVANIA MILITARY ACADEMY, Chester (undenominational), adds to its English and scientific courses one answering to a moderate collegiate course. Corps of instruction, twelve; number of students, one hundred and twenty-one.

ST. VINCENT'S COLLEGE, Latrobe (Roman Catholic), is an appendage to St. Vincent's Abbey; is under the direction of the Benedictine Fathers, and adds an ecclesiastical course, for such as wish to enter the order, to the classical and commercial ones. Attendance on instruction in Christian doctrines is obligatory on students, and on instruction in German, French, Italian, Spanish, as also in music, painting, and drawing, is optional. Corps of instruction, twenty-four; number of students, four hundred and sixty-nine, reported in 1873.

SWATHMORE COLLEGE, Delaware County (Friends), is on the railroad from Philadelphia to West Chester; has excellent buildings, admits both sexes, and furnishes to both, besides a regular classical and scientific course, the opportunity of selection among various elective studies. Corps of instruction, twenty-one; number of students, two hundred and sixty-four.



JOHNSTON & CO. ENG.

PENNSYLVANIA COLLEGE AT GETTYSBURG.



**THIEL COLLEGE**, Greenville (Evangelical Lutheran), is a new enterprise ; held its first commencement June 25, 1874, and dedicated on the same day a second college building, containing recitation-rooms and chapel. Corps of instruction, eight ; number of students, sixty-three.

The **UNIVERSITY AT LEWISBURG** (Baptist) unites with its scientific and classical curricula a course for ladies in the University Female Institute, under the same presidency with the college, but with a lady principal besides, and a corps of eight lady teachers. Corps of instruction, nine ; number of students, one hundred and thirty-eight.

**VILLANOVA COLLEGE**, Delaware County (Roman Catholic), conducted by the Augustinian Fathers, with the now almost universal classical and scientific courses, has the commercial course, which is also becoming common. Corps of instruction, eighteen ; number of students, one hundred and sixty.

**WESTMINSTER COLLEGE**, New Wilmington (United Presbyterian), has the same courses, save the last. Corps of instruction, eight ; number of students, one hundred and seventy-four, with fourteen students unclassified.

**WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE**, at Washington (Presbyterian), has a corps of instruction, eight ; number of students, one hundred and sixty-one.

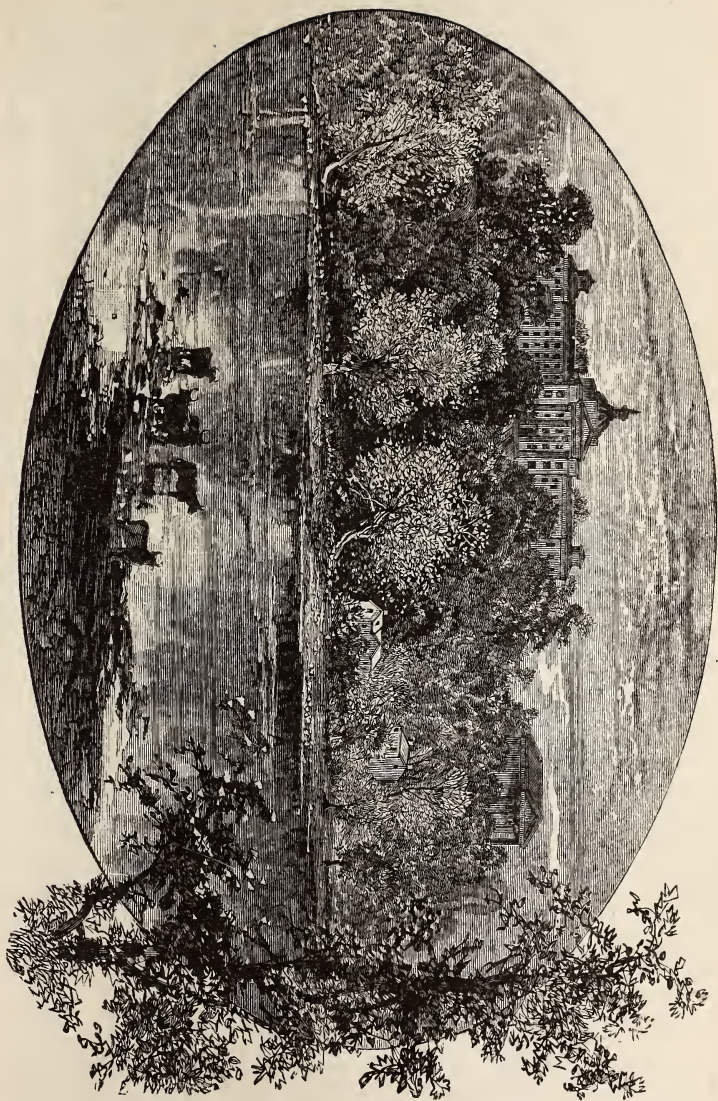
As these two colleges are now united under the name here given, the following gives an account of their origin :—

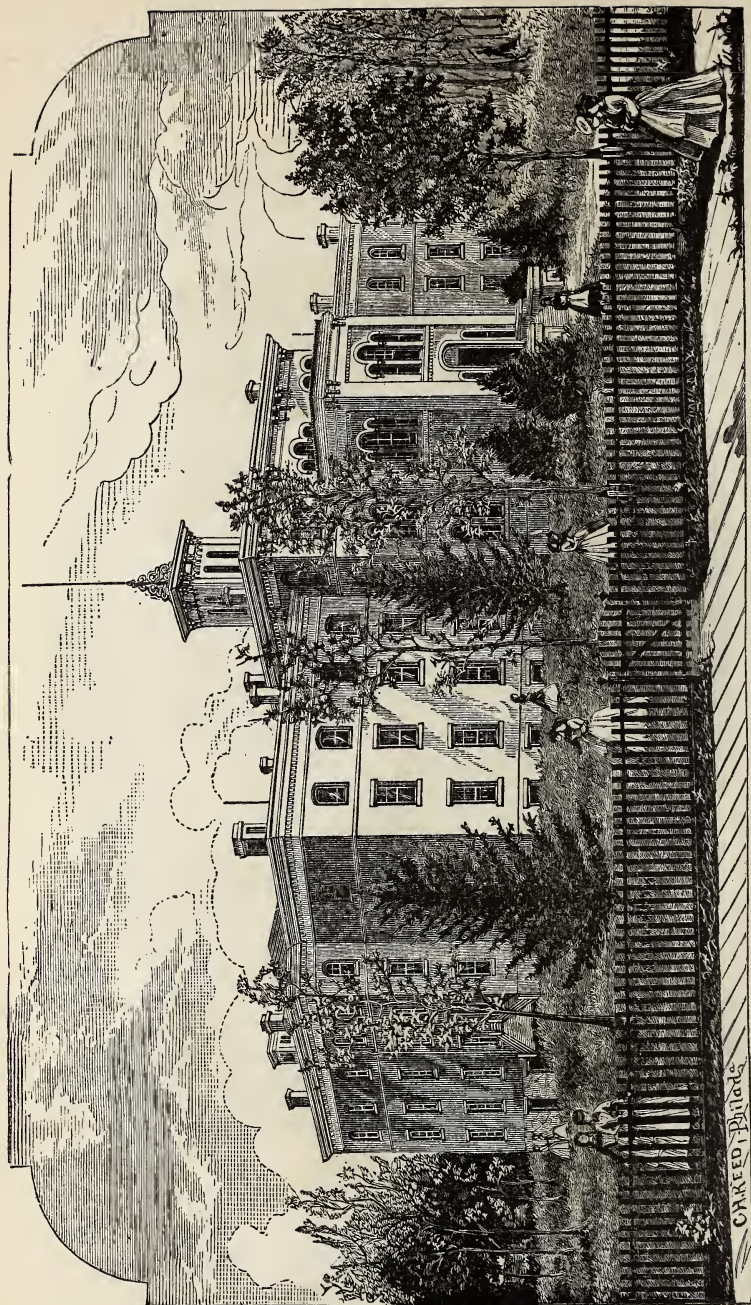
Jefferson College was located at Canonsburg, in Washington County, eighteen miles south-west from Pittsburg. This college, like several others in this State, grew up from an academy. The first ministers that were settled in Western Pennsylvania were learned men, and gave much time to educating their children ; and several of them opened schools, in which were taught not simply the English branches, but, also, Greek and Latin, and the higher mathematics. It was from these schools that Jefferson College came into being. Among the early pastors who planted these schools were Rev. John M'Millan, Joseph Smith, and Thaddeus Dod.

Canonsburg Academy was commenced in 1771, by Col. Canon, Judge Allison, M'Dowell, and others. David Johnson, a gradu-



THE UNIVERSITY OF LEWISBURG.





UNIVERSITY FEMALE INSTITUTE, LEWISBURG.





VIEW OF WEST BRANCH SUSQUEHANNA FROM COLLEGE HILL, LEWISBURG.

ate of the University of Pennsylvania, was the first principal, aided by Prof. Samuel Miller. For eleven years it prospered under these and other competent instructors. While only an academy, it sent out several eminent men, among whom were James Carnahan, afterwards president of Princeton College, and John Watson, afterwards the first president of Jefferson College. In 1802 it was chartered by the Legislature as a college, and was the first in the State west of the Alleghanies. It existed and prospered as a college until 1865, when it was united with Washington College, graduating their first class in conjunction, 1866.

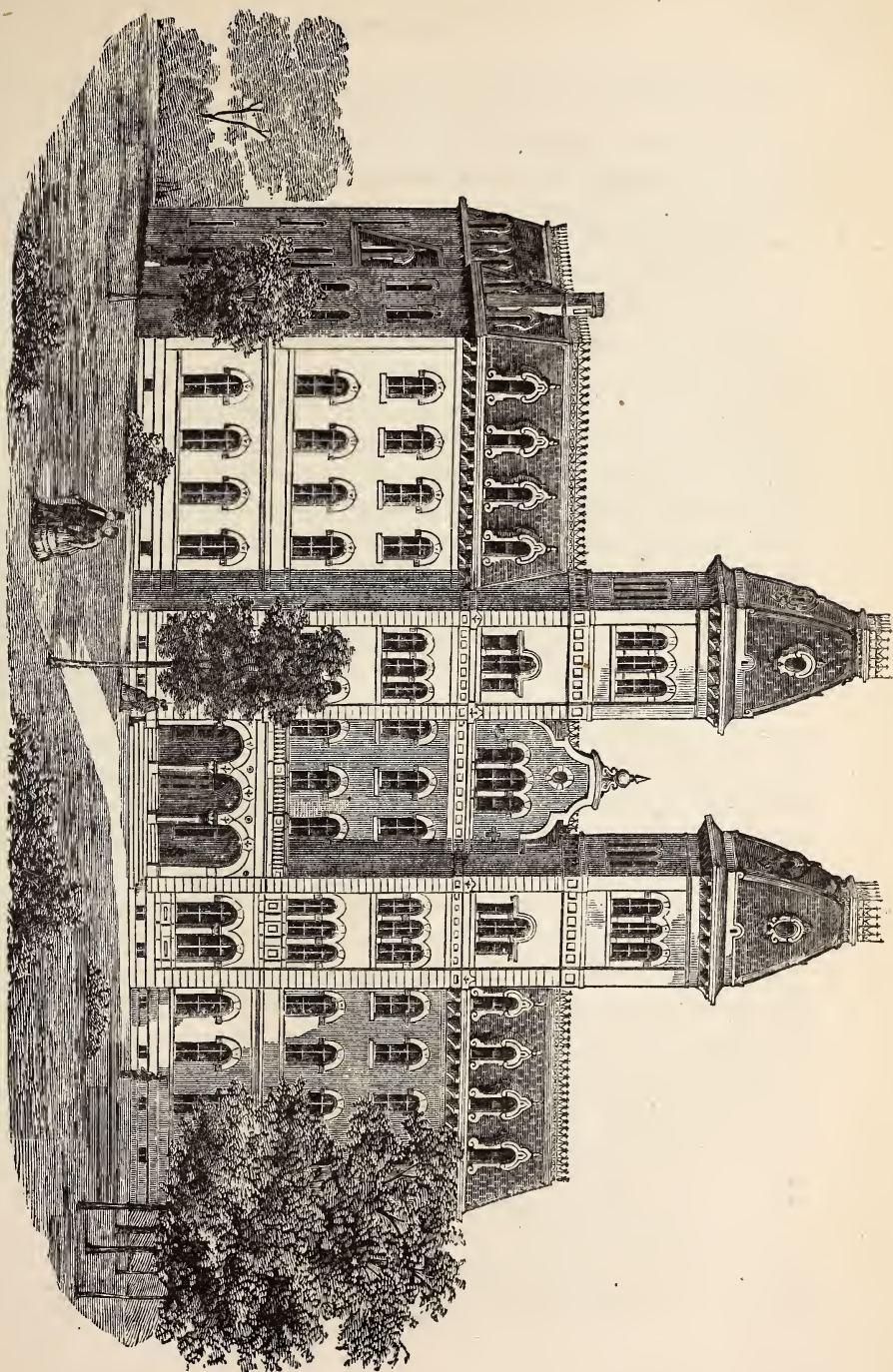
Washington College, like Jefferson, also came up from an academy, which was chartered by the Legislature in 1787, only five years after the town of Washington was laid out, and six years after the establishment of Washington County, which was the first county formed in the State after the Declaration of Independence, and second only to Westmoreland, the oldest county of Western Pennsylvania. It went into operation in 1789, under the guidance of Rev. Thaddeus Dod, who had opened in 1782 what is claimed "the first classical and scientific school in the West." In 1806 the Legislature chartered it under the name of Washington College, under which title it prospered, and issued diplomas, until 1865, when it became united, as stated above, with Jefferson College.

As these were rival colleges, near together, their union was talked of by the trustees long before it was consummated. In 1865 Rev. Charles C. Beatty, D.D., LL.D., of Steubenville, O., offered fifty thousand dollars to these colleges, upon condition that they should become united. Under this stimulus they finally became one college, but not without litigation was the matter finally settled. Under the name of Washington and Jefferson College, the institution is now prosperously conducted.

Two full four-years' courses are now established in the college, — a classical and a scientific course. Those who complete the classical course receive the degree of bachelor of arts; and those who complete the scientific course receive the degree of bachelor of science. Both these courses are full and thorough,



WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE.



and the advantages of this college will compare favorably with those of any other in the Commonwealth.

Washington is reached by the Chartiers Valley Railroad from Pittsburg, and by the Wheeling, Pittsburg, and Baltimore Railroad from Wheeling. It is a very healthy location; and the scenery is beautiful and picturesque.

#### NORMAL SCHOOLS.

There are eight of this class of schools in the State, the special object of which is to educate teachers. The one which went into operation the earliest is at Millersville, and was recognized in 1859. A new building, used for chapel and recitation-rooms, has been erected between the two buildings used respectively by the males and females; but it does not interfere with them as to light or ventilation. The drawing department has been extended so that all graduating may become teachers of that art. Attendance for the year 1874 was eight hundred and twenty-six. Of thirty-five graduates, all but one became teachers.

EDINBORO', the next in order, was recognized in 1861; and the attendance in 1874 was seven hundred and thirty-three. All the graduates, sixteen in number, went out as teachers; and four hundred of the remainder pledged themselves to be teachers.

MANSFIELD, the third in order, was recognized in 1862; and in 1874 a new building was dedicated. A mineralogical cabinet has been purchased, as also a conchological collection, which, with gifts from the Smithsonian Institution, Washington, bring its specimens to over six thousand. There is likewise a set of the Smithsonian publications in the library.

KUTZTOWN, the fourth in order, was recognized in 1866; and the attendance in 1874 was over five hundred; the graduates numbering eighteen in the elementary and one in the scientific course. Five of the faculty are college graduates, and three of the normal school scientific course.

BLOOMSBURG, the fifth in order, was recognized in 1869, and had two hundred and seventy-two pupils for the year 1873-74, double the number for the preceding year; had an ample supply

of water introduced, and purchased two cabinet organs for the use of pupils, which were paid for from funds resulting from literary entertainments.

WEST CHESTER, the sixth in order, was recognized in 1871; and for the year 1874 had an attendance of three hundred and thirty pupils, all of whose graduates are teaching. The washing, wringing, and mangling is done by machinery, since the introduction of a steam-engine. Improvements have been made in the walks, lawns, and decorations in front of the building; and the attractiveness of the place has been added to by the planting of trees. The heating-apparatus has also been much improved; a very good transit, surveying, and other instruments added to the apparatus for instruction; large additions of geological and mineralogical collections, with three hundred volumes to the library.

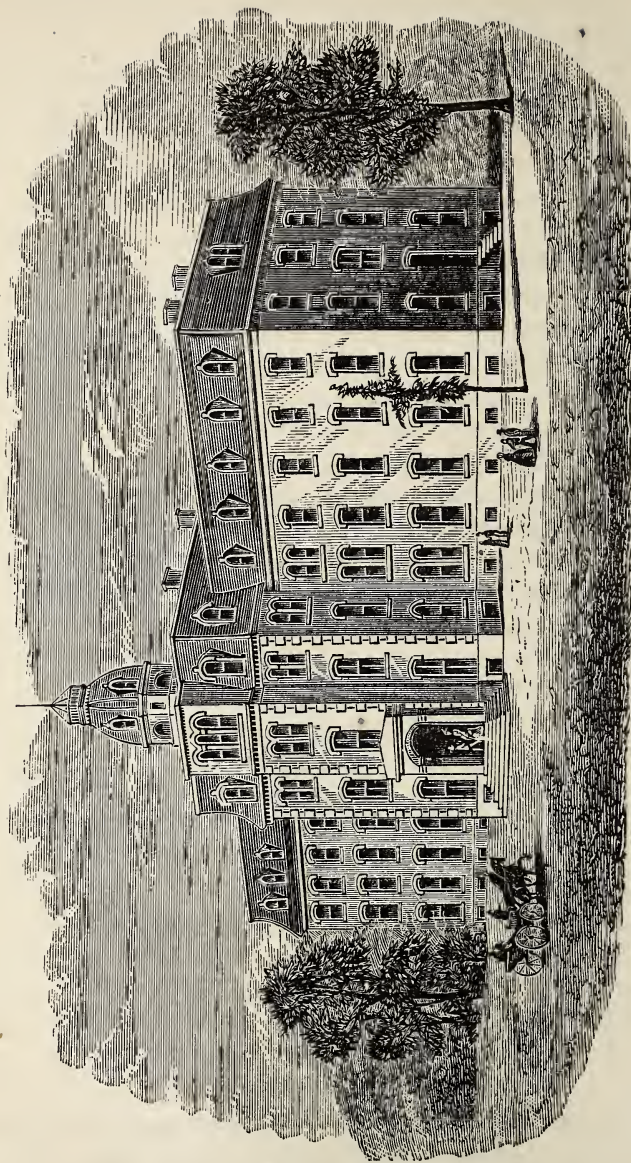
SHIPPENSBURG, the seventh in order, was recognized in 1873, and seven hundred and eighty-six students were enrolled during the year; the first graduating class numbering twenty-four, of whom twenty-two took schools, two returning to the school to continue their studies in a higher course.

SAGAMORE, formerly known as California, the eighth in order, was recognized June 1, 1874. It was founded and chartered in 1865, but for want of means its completion was delayed. It, however, did much good in this unfinished state, and was known as the South-western Normal College. It consists of two buildings,—a central one and dormitory. The central one, in the form of a cross, is three stories; one hundred and forty-six feet for the whole front, and in the central extension is one hundred and ten feet deep. At the angles of the front projection are two massive towers, eighty-five feet high. The dormitory is one hundred and three by forty-four feet, and three stories above the basement, in which are the dining-room and kitchen.

#### HIGH SCHOOLS.

According to the report of the United States Commissioner of Education, it is not definitely known how many of these schools there are in the State, or how many pupils are taught





STATE NORMAL SCHOOL (WEST CHESTER).

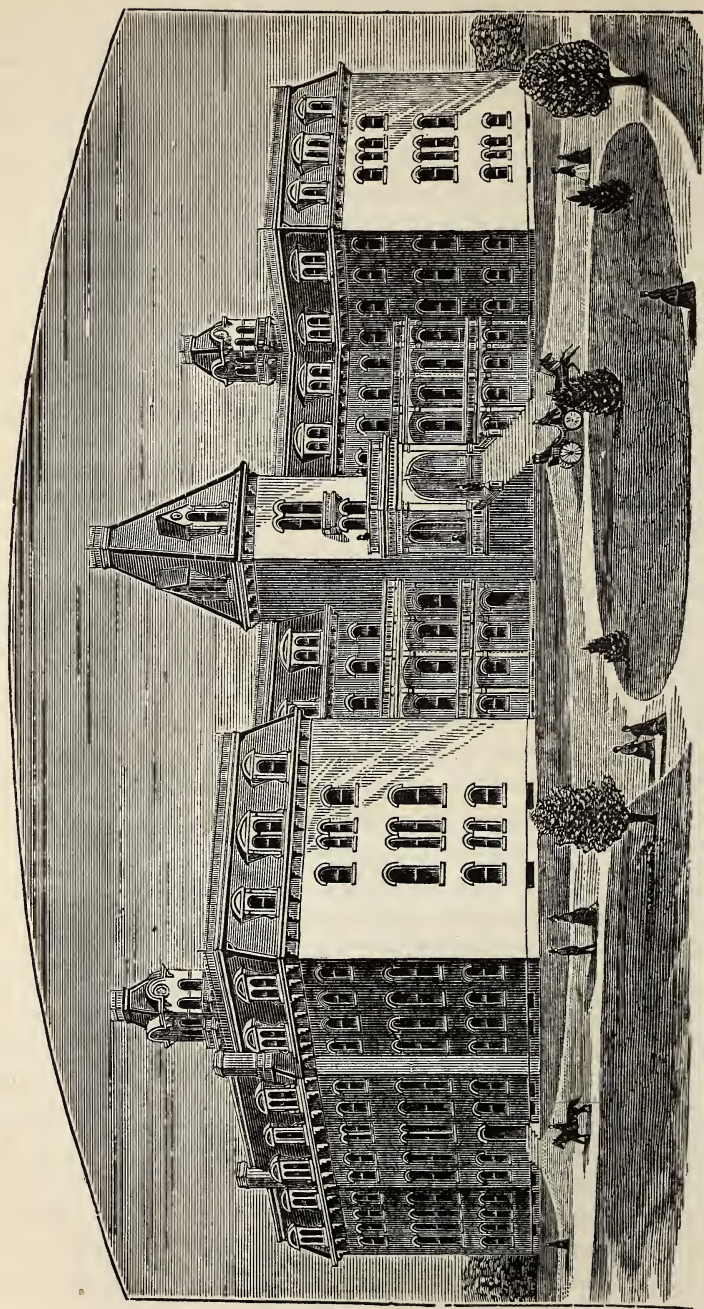


in them, or whether there is any uniform course in the method of teaching; but from Dr. Wickersham's report, as quoted by him, he gives 1,534 schools in which the higher branches are taught, 1,860 as the number where drawing comes in, and 3,064 that in which vocal music forms a part of the course. Taking twenty as the average number of pupils in the higher branches, it makes 30,680 of the State schools thus engaged.

The high school at Pittsburg has the finest common school building in the State, with a large, well-selected library and apparatus, much of it imported specially for the school, and is worth about ten thousand dollars. Of the school in its academic, normal, commercial, and drawing departments, Dr. Wickersham thus speaks, "It is the best development of the common-school system in the Commonwealth." The number of pupils for the school-year of 1873-74 was four hundred and ten, of whom two hundred and thirty-one were in the academic department, seventy-five in the normal, and one hundred and four in the commercial, with seventeen teachers all told. The graduates for that year numbered sixty-four.

The Central High School at Philadelphia has six hundred and eleven pupils. It has a full course in Latin, the higher mathematics, natural sciences, mental and moral philosophy, drawing, from its elementary stages up to mechanical and engineering work; thus fitting its pupils for the various pursuits of industry, as well as for college.

At the Allentown High School, German has been introduced, while drawing and penmanship have been discontinued. At Carbondale, the high school and grammar are very deficient in illustrative apparatus. At Chester there are not many pupils, but their progress has been very satisfactory. At Harrisburg there is to be a consolidation of the high schools, now separated, and they are "gradually and surely working their way up, both in efficiency and in public favor." At Lock Haven the number of pupils of both sexes now in the same school is one hundred; when five years ago, in two separate institutions, it was only forty. At Norristown the union of the two sexes was consummated September, 1873, and has proved very successful. At Pottsville, in the mining-region of the Schuylkill, the high



CUMBERLAND VALLEY STATE NORMAL SCHOOL (SHIPPENSBURG).

school has sent several of its pupils to college ; and, in the case of a young man entering Harvard, he was found upon a par with students from Exeter, after a very thorough examination. This school compares favorably with any training-school in the land. At Reading pupils are fitted for college, and a number of the graduates enter yearly. The course is mathematics, astronomy, chemistry, physiology, and classics. At Scranton "the curriculum is algebra, geometry, trigonometry, rhetoric, general history, chemistry, natural philosophy, physiology, botany, political economy, astronomy, geology, intellectual philosophy, physical geography, and Latin. The one at Titusville has, in addition to Latin, French, German, and Greek. It has about one hundred pupils; and twelve of them, in 1874, completed the full course of three years. At Williamsport zoölogy, English language and literature, Grecian and Roman history, were added in 1874 to the high-school studies, which were so arranged, that the pupils could have a choice from four courses, of about four years each. Its philosophical and chemical apparatus was also increased. The number of pupils for that year was sixty-one : its graduates numbered five. Of the one at York the superintendent thus speaks, "Our high school has never been more satisfactory than in the results of the past year. The verdict of popular approval has been given to it almost from the first ; and never has our press been so emphatic as now in sustaining this institution of the people."

Having thus given a sketch of all the high schools of which an account can be found, a statistical report of schools below this grade will be all that our space will allow ; and first in order, as being nearly, if not altogether, up to the standard of studies pursued in the high schools, come the

#### PRIVATE SCHOOLS,

which in 1874, by reports to the Bureau of Education, numbered 485 instructors and 6,317 pupils : of the latter, 3,369 were engaged in English studies ; 1,195, in classical ; and 1,055, in modern languages ; 411 preparing for a classical collegiate course ; for a scientific course, 454. In fifty-five of these schools, drawing was taught ; in fifty-three, vocal music ; in



forty-seven, instrumental music; thirty-three had chemical laboratories; and thirty-eight, philosophical apparatus. In most of them were libraries containing from a hundred to five thousand volumes.

#### BUSINESS COLLEGES.

In 1874 there were ten of these very useful schools, having 2,015 scholars (eighty-three of whom were women), and forty-one teachers in all. Twenty-eight pupils were studying French, thirty German, and one Spanish. There were three libraries, with from a hundred to a thousand books. In addition to these colleges are technical schools, as adjuncts to the high schools, which are in successful operation in Philadelphia, Pittsburg, and Erie. There is also at Philadelphia a public school for artisans, holding its sessions in the evening, which has six hundred students, many of them over twenty years of age, and representing nearly all the mills and workshops in the city.

The number of public graded schools is 5,586, more than three times as many as in 1866; and there are also seventy-three separate schools for colored children, having about twenty-five hundred pupils; and at Cornplanter Village there is a school-house for the handful of red men located there. The salary of the teacher is three hundred dollars.

“‘The Pennsylvania School Journal,’ in its issue for April, 1874, states, that under the clause of the new constitution, making women eligible to school offices, two were elected school directors in Philadelphia, six or eight in Delaware County, and about as many in Chester County. Among the latter was a sister of the State superintendent of instruction. Here and there a lady was chosen in other parts of the State; enough, perhaps, to test the expediency of the new provision.” Thus it appears, from the preceding statistics, that Pennsylvania is making commendable effort, and expending vast sums of money, to educate her children and youth, so that they may be thoroughly qualified to fill with ability the places now occupied by their parents. It further appears, from the adoption of her new constitution, that she purposes in future to do still more



than she has done in the past, or is doing at present, as will be seen from the educational provisions of the constitution, as stated and commented upon by the United States Commissioner of Education, which well deserve a place in a history of the State, and to be read by all her citizens.

(1.) The new constitution establishes a broad and substantial foundation for a system of public schools, in the following words: "The General Assembly shall provide for the maintenance and support of a thorough and efficient system of public schools, wherein all the children of this Commonwealth, above the age of six years, may be educated." The expression "thorough and efficient," if liberally interpreted, comprehends all that is needed in a system of public schools. It will enable such a system to reach both high and low, and give to all parts of its work the greatest degree of perfection. No constitutional objection will hereafter stand in the way of the establishment of schools of the highest grade, and none to the enactment of measures drawing to places of safety and instruction the friendless and neglected children of the Commonwealth.

(2.) It provides for the appropriation of a liberal sum of money for school purposes. This sum must be at least one million of dollars annually,—an amount much larger than it has been customary for the State to appropriate.

(3.) It requires all school laws to be of a general character. In future, when any legislation shall take place in reference to school affairs, it must be made to apply equally to the whole State; which provision will accomplish much good. The school laws are now a mass of fragments; and, in most respects, the school system of Philadelphia has no connection with that of the rest of the State. Nearly all the cities, and some of the smaller towns, have special enactments relating to their school affairs.

(4.) It recognizes normal schools as a part of the public-school system, and grants them special favors. "Normal schools established by law for the professional training of teachers for the public schools of the State" can receive appropriations upon the same conditions as the most favored recipients of the bounty of the Commonwealth, a recognition they have long sought for.

(5.) It makes the school department co-equal with the other departments of the State government, making the State superintendent one of the eight officers constituting the executive department.

(6.) It invests the office of superintendent of public instruction with special privileges. The office is an appointed one, as heretofore; but an appointment cannot be made, except "by and with the advice and consent of two-thirds of all the members of the senate." Of the three heads of departments appointed in this way, the superintendent of public instruction is the only one appointed for a fixed period, and the only one who cannot be removed "at the pleasure of the power" by which they are appointed; and there is no limitation to the length of time he can serve. These provisions were embodied in the new constitution, with the hope that they would at least measurably guard the office of superintendent of public instruction from the contamination of mercenary party politics. It is understood, also, that, in changing the title of the office from superintendent of common schools to superintendent of public instruction, the convention meant to open the way for the enlargement of its duties. The head of the department will hereafter do the work now done by the superintendent of common schools, and, in addition thereto, perform such other services as may be required by law. This action will, in all probability, in due time, unify and harmonize all the educational agencies of the State,—a result long hoped for by the most thoughtful friends of education among us.

(7.) It forbids the appropriation of public-school moneys to sectarian schools or purposes.

(8.) It makes women eligible to any office under the school laws of the State. State Report, pp. 15-18.

#### CITY SCHOOL SYSTEMS.

Philadelphia is the first school district, and is under the control of a board of education of twenty-nine members,—one from each ward, with local boards in the wards, known as school directors. These members are appointed by the judges of the court of common pleas and the district court, and hold office for

three years. They determine the number of schoolhouses to be erected, and limit the expenses thereof, and provide books which they deem suitable for the use of pupils. They also decide upon the number of teachers to be employed, and fix their salaries.

There is no city superintendent, which is a defect in the city system, as the responsibility which accrues to such an officer is lacking; the secretary of the board of education being limited in his supervisory powers. The central high school and girls' normal school are under special committees of the board.

There were in 1874, according to the report of the board, a central high school, a girls' normal school, 60 grammar schools, 29 consolidated schools, 121 secondary schools, 212 primary and 41 night schools, with a total of 108,631 pupils and 1,991 teachers. The amount appropriated by city councils for use of the board for 1874 was \$1,631,811.89; the amount expended, \$1,607,736.91. The schoolhouses are in the main good, but deficient in ventilation; and the number is insufficient for the school population, notwithstanding eleven new buildings were added this year. The present value of the school buildings, lots, and furniture, is estimated by the board at \$4,837,336.

Of the night schools there are twenty-one for young men, nine for young women, seven for white men and women, and four for colored men and women, making forty-one in all. They are doing great good by allowing from thirteen thousand to eighteen thousand persons, whose occupations during the day prevent their attending the day schools, opportunity for study.

At Pittsburg there is a central board of education, consisting of thirty-six members, with sub-district boards and a city superintendent.

The schools are primary, intermediate, grammar, and high, with evening schools for boys and girls, an evening mechanical school (which, though originally designed for young men, admits young women, among whom are many school-teachers, devoting themselves especially to freehand drawing), and a school for mutes. The high school is divided into academic, normal, and commercial departments. The buildings are one high school, and fifty-two district schools, of which thirty-nine

are brick, thirteen frame, and one stone. The number of teachers is 382, of whom 55 are males, 327 females, with salaries ranging from three hundred dollars (the lowest for assistants in primaries) to sixteen hundred dollars for principal of grammar school, and twenty-seven hundred dollars for principal of high school; men and women receiving equal salaries for equal work. In 1874 the whole number of pupils admitted was 21,009; the average monthly enrolment, 15,614; the daily, 12,873. Receipts for the year, \$704,791.98; expenditures, \$601,710.08; leaving a balance on hand of \$103,081.90.

The progress in the schools is illustrated by a table, which shows that from June 1, 1856, to the same date in 1874, the number of teachers went from 109 to the 382 above noted; the enrolment of pupils, from 6,724 to 21,009; the average attendance, from 4,354 to 12,783; the amount paid for teaching, from \$39,394.75 to \$238,375.27. This progress is most marked and decided from the year in which the present energetic superintendent entered on his duties, the enrolment and attendance almost doubling that year, while the expenditure for teaching went up in nearly corresponding ratio; and since that time there has been a steady advance.

Drawing and music are taught in the city schools; the evening mechanical school is said to have proved of great advantage; and the high-school course is both well arranged and well carried out.

From Alleghany, the report shows for 1874 a total enrolment of 11,650, an average monthly enrolment of 8,392, and an average daily attendance of 7,216. The school buildings are large and commodious. The course of study has been revised; so that a more complete grading is the result. The method of instruction in music has also been improved. This branch is taught by the regular teachers, under the supervision of two special music-teachers. In the report of the committee on particular instruction, we find the following: "Drawing is the only special branch not properly provided for; yet, in view of its importance, we would recommend its continuance, and suggest that such measures be introduced as will enable all the pupils who may desire it to make themselves thorough draughtsmen, and to do so without leaving our public schools."



The evening schools were in session sixty-five nights, and since the previous year there was a decided improvement; and such a measure of success attended them as to warrant their continuance. The total enrolment was 1,015; average attendance, 503; cost of maintaining them, \$2,657.27.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### HISTORICAL SOCIETY, ETC., AND GOVERNORS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Why so long delayed — Variety of Nations — Mr. Burke's Statement — Municipalities — Organization of the Society — Original Members — First Officers — Place of Meeting — Various Committees — Progress — Library — Bradford's Prayer-Book — Freedom of the Press — Other Societies — United States Hospitals in the City — Union League — Politics of the Commonwealth — Names of Governors of the Province and State of Pennsylvania.

IT was not till 1824 that measures were taken to form a historical society of Pennsylvania. This was late, compared with the organization of similar societies in several of her sister States; and it might seem as though this State had but little interest in her own history, especially as she was early settled. There were, however, ample reasons for this apparent delay, a prominent one of which was to be found in the diverse character of her early population. Plymouth in Massachusetts was settled by the Puritans; Boston, by the Pilgrims; and, though these two classes have often been considered one and the same, yet there were many characteristic differences between them: but this is not the place to consider them, as they do not come into a history of this State. Virginia was settled by loyalists; Maryland, by Lord Baltimore and his Catholics. All these were essentially English, and of one religion.

Pennsylvania was settled first by Finns or Swedes. Then came the Hollanders, who conquered the Swedes; then the British fought and conquered the Hollanders; then came William Penn, with his Great Charter and his Quakers. Thus the early settlers of our State being from different nations, as

the Swedes, Hollanders, English, and soon after the Scotch-Irish, all had some fighting propensities. Among such hostile emigrants, little time and less unanimity were found for a general or State historical society. Though it may seem strange to many who have always understood that our State was first settled by the Friends,—a non-fighting people,—to offer as reasons why a State historical society was not founded early,—the fighting propensities and the diverse religious views of the settlers,—nevertheless, such are the facts; and a historian is bound to state facts, “though the heavens fall.”

There is no doubt but that William Penn and his colony were pacific men. But when it is considered, as just stated, that, in the very first settlements of this State, three different nations were upon our soil, and that soon after the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, and many members of the Church of England, came hither; and, furthermore, taking into the account the state of feeling then existing between Catholics and Protestants; and, further still, the persecutions then existing among the English Church for non-conformity,—there seems ample cause for the neglect of a Pennsylvania historical society.

These views are confirmed by the following statements of Mr. Burke, in his “Account of the European Settlements in America,” published as early as 1761.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Wallace says of Mr. Burke, “This variety of nations and religions was the feature which struck him [Burke] most when he described our Province. He [Burke] says, ‘Pennsylvania is inhabited by upwards of 250,000 people, half of whom are Germans, Swedes, or Dutch.’” Wallace continues, “That same wonderful observer, who notes, that in 1750 there emigrated to our Province 4,317 Germans, while of British and Irish but 1,000 arrived here, and admits that it was a right policy to encourage the importation of foreigners into the colony, yet complains that foreigners were still *left* foreigners, and were likely to continue so for many generations; for that they had schools taught in their own language, with books and even newspapers so printed. And he inferred ‘that there was no appearance of their blending, and becoming one people, with the subjects of Great Britain.’

<sup>1</sup> President Wallace’s Address to Historical Society, 1872.

“Nor did our diversities in religion strike him less. ‘Here you see,’ he says ‘Quakers, Churchmen, Calvinists, Methodists, Menists, Moravians, Independents, Anabaptists, and Dumplers, a sort of German sect that live in something like a religious society, wear long beards, and a habit resembling that of friars. In short,’ he says, ‘the diversity of people, religions, nations, and languages here, is prodigious.’ To crown the whole, we had a municipal organization alike widespread and disintegrated. From 1701, when Philadelphia was incorporated, we had one ‘city,’ its limits small and fixed, around which, till 1854 (when all were consolidated), ‘districts,’ ‘boroughs,’ and ‘townships,’ were growing; twenty-eight municipal corporations, I think, in all; all, in good degree, separated from each other, and all from *it*,—some near, some far off, some populous, some occupied still by farms.

“Thus it was; and less than ‘mountains interposed’ made, so far as consociation for *our* objects was concerned, enemies of people who had else, perhaps, ‘like kindred drops been mingled into one.’

“Indeed, to those of us born here, and familiar with the national, religious, and municipal complexion of Philadelphia, these striatures in our society were quite visible, I think, till within a few years. The large influx of new elements, the consolidation of our various local governments, and the mixture and changes brought about by marriages and new generation, have in this day largely obliterated them, though some of their effects still remain.”

Whether these were the true causes, or not, it is a fact that no State historical society was formed till 1824. Doubtless many had thought of some such society; and it is recorded, that, as far back as 1815, the American Philosophical Society appointed a Historical and Literary Committee, in addition to their other work; but not much historical information was derived from it.”

Such societies existed and were in operation in New York, Massachusetts, and in several other States, at this time. The second day of December, 1824, at the house of Thomas I. Wharton, a few gentlemen, natives of Pennsylvania, were



present, and talked over the matter of organizing a society for gathering up and preserving the historical events of the State. Roberts Vaux was appointed chairman, and George Washington Smith secretary, of this meeting. The following named seven gentlemen were present: Roberts Vaux, Thomas I. Wharton, Dr. Benjamin H. Coates, Stephen Duncan, William Rawle, jun., Dr. Caspar Wistar, and George Washington Smith.

The object of the meeting, and the importance of the subject, having been stated and discussed, on motion of Mr. Wharton the following resolutions were adopted:—

*Resolved*, That it is expedient to form a society for the purpose of elucidating the history of Pennsylvania.

*Resolved*, That a committee be appointed to prepare a constitution and by-laws for the government of the said society.

Whereupon, Thomas I. Wharton, Dr. Benjamin H. Coates, and George W. Smith were appointed the committee. The meeting was then adjourned to assemble again on the 27th of December.

The next meeting was held at the time adjourned to. The committee submitted a draft of a constitution and by-laws, which were adopted; and the next meeting was appointed to be the 29th of January, 1825. This meeting was held according to appointment. The record says, "A list of the names of gentlemen desirous of joining this society was read; and, on motion, the persons applying for membership were elected, and placed on the Secretary's roll." The following "nineteen members, all of them citizens of Philadelphia," and all honorable and well-known persons, were then the members of the society.

William Rawle.

Roberts Vaux.

Joseph Hopkinson.

Joseph Reed.

Thomas C. James.

John Sergeant.

Thomas I. Wharton.

Thomas White.

Caspar Wistar, 2d.

George Washington Smith.

Gerard Ralson.

William Mason Walmsley.

William M. Meredith.

Daniel B. Smith.

William Rawle, jun.

Charles I. Ingersol.

Edward Bettle.

Thomas McKeen Pettit.

Benjamin H. Coates.

William Rawle was elected the first president, Feb. 28, 1825. Roberts Vaux and Duncan were elected vice-presidents. Daniel B. Smith was chosen corresponding secretary, and O. G. Smith recording secretary.

The first place in which the society held its regular meetings was in the rooms of the American Philosophical Society, on the west side of Fifth Street, below Chestnut. The society proceeded in its work in a gradual and quiet way for about twenty years. Its work was important and well done. Books were collected; old manuscripts were looked up and preserved; and committees were appointed to do particular work, — one on the national origin, early difficulties, and domestic habits of the first settlers; another on the biography of the founder of Pennsylvania, his family, and the early settlers; another on biographical notices of persons distinguished among us in ancient and modern times; another on the aborigines of Pennsylvania, their number, names of their tribes, intercourse with Europeans, their language, habits, characters, and wars; another on the principles to which the rapid population of Pennsylvania may be ascribed; another on the revenues, expenses, and general polity of the Provincial Government; another, on the juridical history of Pennsylvania; another on the literary history of Pennsylvania; another on the medical history of Pennsylvania; another on the progress and present state of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce of Pennsylvania.

Thus early in the history of this society, and when its numbers were comparatively small, did it take cognizance of, and direct attention to, every thing that had a tendency to instruct the rising generation, and hand down to posterity a record of the fathers, and of all that pertained to the welfare and honor of this great commonwealth. Too much praise will not be likely to be given to these benefactors of our State for their noble deeds.

Mr. Wallace, already referred to in the note, in his discourse delivered at the inauguration of the society's new hall, March 11, 1872, further describes its progress: "The first volume of our published 'Memoirs,' deemed of late by us worthy of republication, filled as it chiefly is with addresses and papers made or

presented within the first two years of our existence, shows with what effect our early members labored.

“During the twenty years that our members remained under the protecting shadow of the American Philosophical Society, we enjoyed all the advantages which the spacious and well-filled apartments of that institution could afford us. But we were near the Hall of Independence. The spirit of 1776 began to rise. Inferior relation of any sort was not agreeable to some of our members; and in 1844 we departed from the ancient precincts in which our infancy and youth were passed. Our new quarters were in a room, now 211 South Sixth Street, much humbler than our former ones; and our arrangements were upon the modest scale suited to our quarters. The committee who obtained the room were ‘directed to procure a bookcase of size sufficient to hold the collection of books, &c., and to put the room in a proper state for being occupied, *provided that the cost did not exceed one hundred dollars.*’

“As I look around,” continues this excellent address, “at these beautiful and well-filled rooms, and remember that we have laid out fifteen thousand dollars, I exclaim, ‘Excellent Committee, if you accomplished on these terms the duties with which you were intrusted!’

“We have six hundred members, a library of twelve thousand volumes, a collection of near eighty thousand pamphlets (of which seventy thousand, the bequest of Mr. Fahnestock, lie carefully stored in boxes till such time as we can bind, arrange, and display them), a gallery of sixty-five portraits, and of twelve historical pictures, numerous engravings, and manuscripts, I may say innumerable, including the collections of William Penn and of several of his descendants, at Stoke, in England, recently presented to us by some of our liberal members, who had secured them at a price of four thousand dollars. Our building-fund amounts to \$12,775; our publication-fund, to \$17,000; our binding-fund, to \$3,500; our life-membership fund, to \$7,000.”

Such was the condition of this society the 11th of March, 1872, according to the statement of John William Wallace, president.

I am sure the same commendable progress has been made during the last four years; and I am informed by Mr. John

Jordan, jun., who has devoted his time, talents, and money to the interests and progress of this society, that at least two thousand volumes have been added to the library since 1872.

The writer of this history has enjoyed the privilege of a membership of this society. Greatly was he pleased, upon recently visiting the library, to find every thing so neat and trim, and all affording such marks of progress and usefulness.

This society has received no aid from State appropriations; and, though some large bequests have been made to it, yet most of its wealth has come from the steady assistance of its individual friends. Thus it appears, though it did not start in the early settlement of the State, for reasons already assigned; yet, since its birth, it has grown lustily, until it has become stalwart and strong, and will bear a favorable comparison with any of its cousins that have sprung up in sister commonwealths. The time will come when the labors of the first members and their successive coadjutors of this society will be more renowned and greatly honored than they have yet been; for posterity cannot but see and appreciate the greatness of the work here commenced, and so successfully carried forward for more than fifty-two years.

As this society is located in Philadelphia, and as all its meetings are held here, and as, in one sense, Philadelphia is Pennsylvania, that is, as having vast influence throughout the Commonwealth, therefore some things may be brought into our history here which will be omitted when we come to describe this city.

Mr. Wallace further says, "And certainly I need not recall to this assemblage, that from this region [Philadelphia] the light of letters first shone forth to all the middle colonies, in the establishment of the *Printing Press*." <sup>1</sup>

This seems to refer to an order given to William Bradford, from Trinity Church, New York, to defray the expense of his printing a *Prayer Book*, commonly called and known as "*Bradford's Prayer Book*." This order was as early as 1714; and the work must have been issued about the same time. As some doubt had been expressed whether such a book had ever

<sup>1</sup> Address, page 17, of President Wallace.



been printed, and as a consequence, if it had not, this claim of priority in diffusing "light" must fail, efforts were made to find this book; and in 1870 Mr. John W. Jordan found a copy of it in the Moravian Church in this city. It was shown to the doubters, and produced conviction that the book had a real existence, and, consequently, that "light" flashed to New York and elsewhere from William Bradford's Printing Press. This same book was presented to the Historical Society, 13th of June, 1870, by Mr. John Jordan, jun.

It seems to be, also, justly claimed that the freedom of the press, which England did not arrive at till a late date, was first achieved in this country in Philadelphia. So it seems — without encroaching upon the rights of others, or plucking laurels from others — Pennsylvania, and, indeed, this good city of Philadelphia, sent forth to the Middle Colonies the "light" of the printing-press, and to *all* the colonies and "the round world" the right to a *free press*.

The Gallery of Portraits and Engravings will be noticed in the chapter on Artists and Fine Arts.

There are other historical societies in Pennsylvania that might claim a place in this history, did its limits allow. There are several such societies, of different religious denominations, which deserve much credit for the zeal and labor they have manifested in gathering up such large collections of books and other ancient materials. The Presbyterian Historical Society is one of this class, and Samuel Agnew has done much for it in collecting books, manuscripts, &c.

The Baptists also have a historical society of no small importance; and their collections are large. Rev. Howard Malcolm, D.D., LL.D., has given some twenty years of his valuable life to this work, — a monument of praise to him in coming time. Other denominations have similar societies; but it was determined not to go into a description of religious denominations in this work, any further than some general description of their tenets. So, also, it will be seen, that, among the numerous illustrations, there are none of churches. This omission is to be ascribed to the want of room; for to have inserted plates of the churches of one denomination, and not of

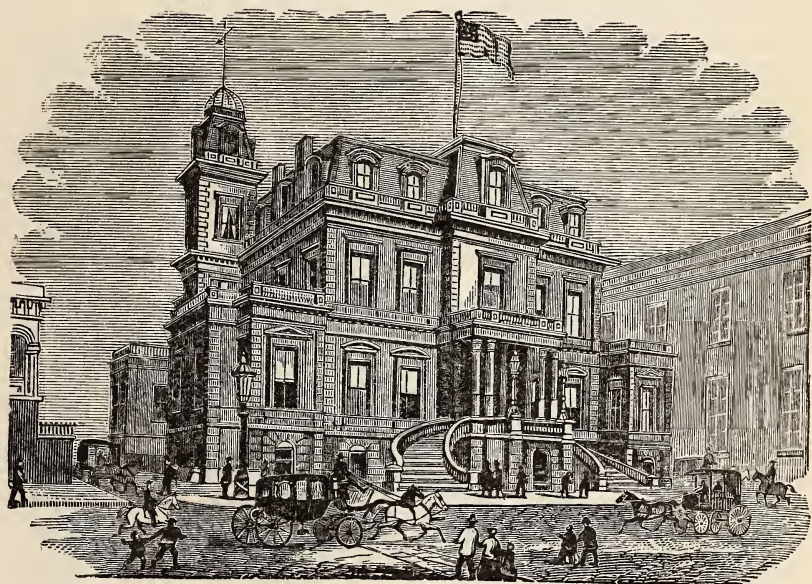
another, would have appeared invidious: hence, necessity compelled that the work should be greatly enlarged, or the churches wholly omitted; and, as the former could not be done, the latter has been.

#### UNITED STATES HOSPITALS IN PHILADELPHIA DURING THE LATE WAR.

As the hospitals of Pennsylvania have been already described, and as the record of them is read, some of the present generation will be likely to ask, "Where is the history of the United States hospitals located here during the late war?" Though a history of these hospitals belongs rather to the United States than to us, yet it is proper to give some account of them in this place, especially, as they have been omitted under the hospitals of Pennsylvania.

Early after the commencement of the rebellion, the "War Department," of the government showed its wisdom and forethought in selecting Philadelphia, as one of the chief resorts for the sick and wounded soldiers. Its healthy and comfortable climate, being that of a medium between the extreme heat of the South and the cold of the North; and its vast extent of territory, being much larger than any other city in the Union, interspersed with large tracts of elevated and unoccupied land; together with the comparative cheapness of fuel, and articles of living,—rendered it highly conducive to the comfort and returning health of the sick and wounded.

There were at one time nineteen or twenty of these hospitals located in or very near this city. One of them was at West Philadelphia, which everybody here knows is west of the Schuylkill. It was near Forty-fourth and Pine Streets, on elevated land, overlooking all the surrounding country. Its sanitary condition could scarcely be other than good. It numbered twenty-eight wards, each one hundred and sixty-seven feet long, and twenty-four wide, and designed to accommodate seventy patients. There were fourteen wards in each, of two rooms, twenty feet apart, which communicated with each other, and also with the medical hall in the centre, by means of two corridors, which were used for dining-rooms; and each was



UNION LEAGUE.

seven hundred and seventy-five feet long. There were large buildings for kitchens, store-houses, and laundry purposes, communicating with the eastern end of each corridor. The apparatus of the soldiers, consisting of baggage, knapsacks, and such like, were in separate buildings. There were also numerous other outbuildings; and, in addition to these buildings, there were a hundred and fifty large tents, the united capacity of which accommodated nine hundred soldiers. Thus this hospital, including the tents, had room for nearly four thousand sick and wounded soldiers.

A still larger hospital was erected at Chestnut Hill, also within the city limits. The citizens of Philadelphia, and especially the women, did every thing in their power to promote the comfort and health of the soldiers while they remained in these hospitals. So assiduous and indefatigable were some of the women in this work, that many of them injured their health, and some lost their lives, in consequence of over-action and fatigue. In all kinds of weather, and at all hours of the day, these messengers of mercy, like the good Samaritan, were conveying flowers, sweetmeats, jellies, and every thing that was calculated to soothe, comfort, and refresh these disabled soldiers, who were wont to exclaim, "What should we do but for these angelic women!" Even little girls, with baskets of new ripe fruit in its season, and various kinds of refreshments, visited those dear men, now disabled, who had stood between the bayonets of the rebels and our own bosoms. The writer once asked two of these little girls, as they came out of a hospital, how often they made these angel visits. The reply was, "Every day."

Philadelphia, during the war and ever since, has been highly and justly praised by the soldiers who passed through the city, either to or from the battlefield. Never, by day or by night, did a single company march through her streets without finding warm and comfortable quarters, and enough to eat and drink at the various "Refreshment Rooms," "Cooper's Shop," &c.

THE UNION LEAGUE was an outgrowth of the war, and though a Philadelphia institution as to location, yet belonged to the United States as to its action and utility. It was organ-



ized to do duty for the defence of the Union; was composed of some two thousand, or more, of the most wealthy and patriotic citizens of this city and State. It organized, equipped, and sent at its own expense, ten full regiments to the war, and contributed liberally in many other ways to aid the good cause of freedom. It published several pamphlets and papers of great value, and distributed them liberally and gratuitously through the country. The late Stephen Colwell, a name dear to many, was the Chairman of the Publishing Committee, and revised and corrected the publications. The writer was made a member by the courtesy of the League, when their meetings were held in Chestnut Street, at what had been the residence of that good man, Matthias Baldwin, and addressed them several times. Afterwards they erected the fine edifice on Broad Street, which may be seen in the plate. This building is still retained as a club-house, or place of resort for the members.

The politics of Pennsylvania have been various. In the early history of the State, Federalists and Republicans were the names of the two most prominent parties. These gave place to those of Whigs and Democrats. The Whigs were followed by Republicans again, while the Democrats have still held the same name. On the whole, this Commonwealth has favored democracy, or the rights of the people generally, to the exclusion of a few privileged persons. Although William Penn, the founder of the State, and the first governor of the Province, belonged to a patrician, or privileged family in England, yet the government which he established in America was so far democratic that it drew emigrants from almost every European nation. Free toleration for all religious denominations, freedom of speech and of the press, in a word, all the privileges that a free people could demand, have generally been granted to the citizens of Pennsylvania from its early history. This is seen in the simple fact, that the property-owners pay the taxes; the poll-tax being lighter in this State than in most others of the Union.

The governors of this Commonwealth have represented the varying views of their constituents, especially since having been elected by the people. Here follows a list: —

## GOVERNORS OF THE PROVINCE AND STATE OF PENNSYLVANIA, FROM 1681 TO 1873.

## UNDER THE PROPRIETARY GOVERNMENT.

Capt. William Markham, Deputy Governor from Oct. 10, 1681, to Oct 27, 1682.

William Penn, Proprietary and Governor, Oct. 27, 1682, to Aug. 12, 1684.

Thomas Lloyd, President of Provincial Council, and *ex officio* Deputy Governor, Aug. 12, 1684, to Dec. 18, 1688.

Capt John Blackwell, Deputy, Dec. 18, 1688, to Feb. 1, 1689-90.

Thomas Lloyd, President of Provincial Council, and *ex officio* Deputy Governor, Feb. 1689-90, to April 26, 1693.

## UNDER THE BRITISH CROWN.

Col. Benjamin Fletcher, Governor, Col. William Markham Lieutenant - Governor, April 26, 1693, to March 26, 1695.

## UNDER THE PROPRIETARY GOVERNMENT.

Col. William Markham, Deputy, March 26, 1695, to Dec. 3, 1699.

William Penn, Proprietor and Governor, Dec. 3, 1699, to Nov. 1, 1701.

Andrew Hamilton, Deputy, Nov. 1, 1701, to April 20, 1703.

Edward Shippen, President of Council, and *ex officio* Deputy, April 20, 1703, to February, 1703-4.

John Evans, Deputy, February, 1703-4, to February, 1708-9.

Charles Gookin, Deputy, March, 1709, to May 31, 1717.

Sir William Keith, Lieutenant-Governor, May 31, 1717, to June 22, 1726.

Patrick Gordon, Lieutenant-Governor, June 22, 1726, to Aug. 5, 1736.

James Logan, President of Provincial Council, and *ex officio* Deputy Governor, from Aug. 5, 1736, to Aug. 7, 1738.

George Thomas, Lieutenant-Governor, Aug. 7, 1738, to June 6, 1747.

Anthony Palmer, President of Provincial Council, and *ex officio* Deputy Governor, from June 6, 1747, to Nov. 23, 1748.

James Hamilton, Lieutenant-Governor, Nov. 23, 1748, to Oct. 3, 1754.

Robert Hunter Morris, Lieutenant-Governor, Oct. 3, 1754, to Aug. 20, 1756.

Capt. William Denny, Lieutenant-Governor, Aug. 20, 1756, to Nov. 17, 1759.

James Hamilton, Lieutenant-Governor, Nov. 17, 1759, to Oct. 31, 1763.

John Penn, Lieutenant-Governor, Oct. 31, 1763, to May 6, 1771.

James Hamilton, President Provincial Council, and *ex officio* Deputy Governor, May 6, 1771, to Oct. 16, 1771.

Richard Penn, Lieutenant-Governor, Oct. 16, 1771, to Aug. 30, 1773.

John Penn, Proprietary and Governor from Aug. 30, 1773, to July 3, 1775.

#### UNDER THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

Thomas Wharton, jun., President from July 3, 1775, to Dec. 6, 1777.

#### UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1777.

Thomas Wharton, jun., President of the Supreme Executive Council and of the State, March 5, 1777, until his death, May 23, 1778.

George Bryan, late Vice-President, acting President, May 23, 1778, to Dec. 1, 1778.

Joseph Reed, President, Dec. 1, 1778, to Nov. 14, 1781.

William Moore, President, Nov. 14, 1781, to Nov. 7, 1782.

John Dickinson, President, November, 1782, to Oct. 18, 1785.

Benjamin Franklin, President, Oct. 18, 1785, to Nov. 5, 1788.

Thomas Mifflin, President, Nov. 5, 1788, to Dec. 20, 1790.

#### GOVERNORS UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1790.

Thomas Mifflin (Democrat), Dec. 20, 1790, to December, 1799.

Thomas McKean (Democrat), December, 1799, to December, 1808.

Simon Snyder (Democrat), December, 1808, to December, 1817.

William Findlay (Democrat), December, 1817, to December, 1820.

Joseph Heister (Democrat), December, 1820, to December, 1823.

John Andrew Shulze (Democrat), December, 1823, to December, 1829.

George Wolf (Democrat), December, 1829, to December, 1835.

Joseph Ritner (Anti-Masonic), December, 1835, to December, 1838.

David R. Porter (Democrat), December, 1838, to December, 1844.

Francis R. Shunk (Democrat), December, 1844, until his resignation, July 10, 1848.

Wm. F. Johnston (Whig), Speaker of the Senate, and acting Governor, July 10, 1848, to December, 1848.

Wm. F. Johnston (Whig), December, 1848, to December, 1851.

Wm. Bigler (Democrat), December, 1851, to December, 1854.

James Pollock (Whig), December, 1854, to December, 1857.

William F. Packer (Democrat), December, 1857, to January, 1861.

Andrew J. Curtin (Republican), January, 1861, to January, 1867.

John W. Geary (Republican), January, 1867, to January, 1873.

John W. Hartranft (Republican), elected 1872 to serve from January, 1873, to January, 1876.



## CHAPTER XXVII.

### ARTISTS AND FINE ARTS OF PENNSYLVANIA.

Benjamin West — Charles Wilson Peale — Rembrandt Peale — Thomas Sully — James Hamilton — Thomas Buchanan Read — Adolph Ulric Wertmuller — Paul Weber — John Neagle — Peter F. Rothenmel — Margaret M. George — Thomas A. Scott — School of Design for Women — The Academy of Fine Arts.

IN her artists, Pennsylvania has been peculiarly fortunate. It is believed that not one of all her numerous sister States can vie with her in this respect. At the head of this class stands BENJAMIN WEST. Moses was exposed to death in the “ark of rushes;” Philip Doddridge was laid away for dead at his birth; John Wesley came near perishing when an infant in the conflagration of his father’s house; and Benjamin West, by a premature birth. But Providence had a work for each of these to do.

Benjamin West was the youngest son of John West and Sarah Pearson. He was born the 10th of October, 1738, in Chester County, Pennsylvania. His parents were Quakers. Everybody knows that it is as unnatural for a Quaker to encourage the fine arts, or painting at least, as it is for one of this denomination to sing; and, in the early days of Quakerism, it would have been as unnatural to hear a Quaker sing as to see a mole above ground.

The first effort of West, showing the natural bent of his talent, is related by one of his biographers in the following language: “In the month of June, 1745, one of his sisters, who had been married some time before, and who had a daughter, came with her infant to spend a few days at her father’s. When the child was asleep in the cradle, Mrs. West invited her

daughter to gather flowers in the garden, and committed the infant to the care of Benjamin during their absence, giving him a fan to flap away the flies from molesting his little charge. After some time, the child happened to smile in its sleep; and its beauty attracted his attention. He looked at it with a pleasure which he had never before experienced; and observing some paper on a table, together with pens, and red and black ink, he seized them with agitation, and endeavored to delineate a portrait, although at this period he had never seen an engraving or a picture, and was only in the seventh year of his age."

Hearing the return of his mother and sister, he attempted to conceal what he had done; but, as he appeared confused, the old lady inquired what he was about, and requested him to show her the paper. He did so, and asked her not to be angry. She looked at the picture for some time, and then said to her daughter, with evident pleasure, "I declare, he has made a likeness of little Sally!" and kissed him. Thus encouraged, he told her, if it would please her, he would make pictures of the flowers she held in her hand.

As above said, the Quakers had seen so much tinsel and false glare among the Catholics and Episcopalians in England, that they wished to cut loose from every thing that had the least appearance of patronizing what they considered the works of the world, if not the works of the Devil. They had about the same objection to paintings, that the Puritanic Society of Weymouth had to lawyers, whom they considered at least "a useless and unnecessary class," if not worse, and hence objected to the daughter of their minister, Parson Smith, marrying John Adams, because he was a lawyer. From the antipathy of the Quakers to every thing of the nature of art, no place on earth seemed more unlikely to produce an artist than Pennsylvania.

At the first school young West attended, he was allowed to draw with pen and ink. A party of Indians came to pay their annual visit to the place of his school, and, being pleased with the sketches of the birds and flowers that the boy showed them, they taught him to prepare the red and yellow colors by which they painted their ornaments. His mother gave him a piece of indigo for blue; and thus he possessed the three primary colors.

His drawings attracted the attention of his neighbors ; and some of them expressed regret that he had no pencils, whereupon he inquired what kind of things those were. He was told they were small brushes, made of camel's hair fastened in a quill. Here the little artist was in a dilemma. There were no camels in America, and what could he do ? As "necessity is the mother of invention," he noticed that the tail of his father's black cat would furnish him with what he wanted : so he cut off the fur, carefully preserving her tail. With this he made a brush ; but it was soon worn out, and another must be had. So the black cat came into requisition again. But this time the fur was cut from her back. This was soon noticed by the father, who, supposing that the cat was diseased, was about to prescribe a remedy, when little Ben, who, like little George Washington and his hatchet, would not lie, or allow his father to be deceived, frankly confessed what he had done. Seeing his contrition, and pleased with the tact of the little son, the Quaker father readily forgave him. Those who remember the many anecdotes told us by Xenophon, of the little Cyrus when a boy, and see how they paved the way for Cyrus the great general and king, may treasure up this story of the black cat, and call it to mind when they find Benjamin West as he appears hereafter.

Soon after this event, a Mr. Pennington, a merchant from Philadelphia, and a relative of the West family, visited Mr. West. Being also a Quaker, he was not a little surprised to see little pictures all about the house, — a new thing under the sun to be found in the house of a Quaker. But, when told that these were the work of little Benjamin, his surprise gave place to admiration of the boy who could make such beautiful drawings. He thought them wonderful productions ; and, on being informed of the scanty and imperfect materials by which they were produced, his admiration grew to wonder and astonishment. He promised to send the little artist a box of paints and pencils, and, on his return home, fulfilled his promise.

The arrival of this box and its contents was an epoch in the life of the young artist. Upon opening the box, he discovered

all that he wanted, — pencils not made from the cat's fur, but from real camel's hair, colors, oils, canvas; but, above all, his admiration knew no bounds when he found six engravings which the good friend had carefully placed in the box. Never had he seen an engraving; and he did not know that such a thing existed. The boy was in an ecstasy of joy. He looked over the articles with intense delight.

The next day, on the first dawn of light, he took the box into the garret, — a place renowned among old English poets, — spread his canvas, and commenced imitating the engravings. So intense was his application, that the hour for school was forgotten; and at dinner he made his appearance, without telling the family what he had been doing. For several days, he retired to his garret, and devoted his time to painting. The schoolmaster sent to know why he was absent. The young artist seemed to take no notice of the message. His mother had seen him go up to the garret, and, supposing that the box had engrossed his attention, went to his room, and found him engaged in painting. She observed his picture with great admiration, which was an exquisite one; and so captivated was she with it, that she would not allow him to finish it, lest he should spoil what he had already done. Sixty-seven years after, this unfinished picture was shown in the same room with the artist's sublime painting, *Christ rejected*. West always said there were touches of art in this first juvenile effort which he was never able to surpass.

Napoleon Bonaparte said he always had a "presiding star;" and Stephen Girard declared he had a "lucky star:" but neither of these equalled West in this respect. From the trimming of the black cat; standing before Provost Smith; in the assembly of Quakers, debating whether he should continue painting or not; visiting the Eternal City, and presented to the best Italian artists by Cardinal Albani, who first inquired, when introduced to an American, whether he were black or white; and when upon being shown the statue of Apollo, and asked what he thought of it, he exclaimed, "My God, how like it is to a young Mohawk warrior!" or painting the royal family of George the Third in the palace, — West always came out, as the common



expression is, "first best." At whatever disadvantage he might have appeared at the start, or in the first introduction, upon further proceedings and explanations he always gained the admiration and applause of his companions. The single case of his comparing the statue of Apollo to a Mohawk Indian may explain the whole. When West uttered his exclamation, the Italian artists were astonished, and extremely mortified, to find the god of their idolatry compared to an American savage. When Mr. Robinson, the companion of West, and his interpreter, described to them the Mohawk Indians, their peculiar education, their wonderful dexterity with the bow and arrow, how their active life in the chase broadened and expanded their chests, and gave them their robust and healthy appearance, and consciousness of vigor, — all of which were so grandly depicted in the Apollo, — these same Italians were delighted, and declared that they had never heard a better criticism pronounced upon it.

One of his biographers says, "Domestic sorrow mingled with professional disappointment. Elizabeth Shewell — for more than fifty years his kind and tender companion — died on the 6th of December, 1817; and West, seventy-nine years old, felt that he was soon to follow. His wife and he had loved each other some sixty years, had seen their children's children; and the world had no compensation to offer. He began to sink; and, though still to be found at his easel, his hand had lost its early alacrity. It was evident that all this was to cease soon; that he was suffering a slow and a general and easy decay. The venerable old man sat in his study, among his favorite pictures, a breathing image of quiet and contentment, awaiting calmly the hour of his dissolution, without any fixed complaint. His mental faculties unimpaired, his cheerfulness uneclipsed, and with looks serene and benevolent, he expired the 11th of March, 1820, in the eighty-second year of his age. He was buried beside Reynolds, Opie, and Barry, in St. Paul's Cathedral. The pall was borne by noblemen, ambassadors, and academicians. His two sons and grandson were chief mourners, and sixty coaches brought up the splendid procession."<sup>1</sup> West's

<sup>1</sup> Allan Cunningham's *British Painters*, p. 55.

portrait of Rev. William Smith, D.D., may be seen at the Historical Society rooms. It was the glory of Pennsylvania, that she ever produced such a son. He painted and sketched in oil more than four hundred pictures, chiefly of a religious and historical character, and left more than two hundred original drawings in his portfolio.

CHARLES WILSON PEALE, was born in Charlestown, Md., in 1741. He was a pupil of West in England, and, after his return, settled in Philadelphia, and gained a high reputation as a portrait-painter. He formed a museum of natural curiosities in that city, which was named for him. He was also one of the founders of the Academy of Fine Arts, for which he painted numerous pictures. He died in 1827.

REMBRANDT PEALE, son of the preceding, was born in Bucks County, Pennsylvania, in 1778; studied painting under West, locating at Paris, where he engaged in portrait-painting. Upon his return to Philadelphia, he painted, among other works, the Court of Death, and the Roman Daughter. He died in 1860. At the Historical Society gallery may be seen a portrait of Edmund Pendleton Gaines, major-general U. S. A., by him.

THOMAS SULLY, an eminent painter, was born in Lincolnshire, Eng., in 1783. He emigrated to America in 1792, studied at Charleston, S.C., then with Stuart, and afterwards applied himself to portrait-painting at Richmond, New York, and Philadelphia. Some of his best productions are portraits of Jefferson, Lafayette, Commodore Decatur, George Frederick Cooke as Richard III., and Queen Victoria, also several historical pictures, among which was Washington crossing the Delaware. He spent the greater part of his long life in Philadelphia, where he was much esteemed as a citizen, and admired as an artist.

A person who visited his studio in 1870 gave a description of the visit, from which the following is selected: "This venerable and distinguished artist is one of the most genial, kind-hearted gentlemen that I have ever met. He is now in the "sear and yellow leaf." There is in his countenance a mixture of elevation and sweetness, of simplicity and energy; is very communicative; still active, hopeful, and happy."

The same visitor gives a full description of his art-gallery, which was richly adorned with his own paintings.

The author was favored with the following biographical sketch of Mr. Sully, soon after his decease, by a young artist of Philadelphia, who was personally acquainted with him : —

“ In 1801 he began painting in oil, his effort being a copy of a painting by Angelica Kauffman. He achieved a success that encouraged him to further efforts.

“ His soul was ever awake to the beautiful. He always feared he would not receive proper instruction. Being in Richmond, Va., he applied to a Frenchman, who was considered the best teacher, but was, in reality, a man of ignorance and self-conceit. He became his pupil, but happily his pupilage did not long continue. One evening, after admiring a very gorgeous sunset, he turned to his instructor, and said, ‘ How would you paint such a picture ? ’

“ ‘ How would *I* paint such a picture ! Young man, the Academy would tell you to use such and such colors.’

“ ‘ Ah,’ said the artist, as he related this to me, giving his head a shake, ‘ never shall I forget the chill to my enthusiasm ! ’

“ Mr. Sully remained in Richmond until 1806, when, at the solicitation of Peter Cooper, he came to New York ; at which time John Trumbull was the leading artist. It has been stated John Trumbull was inaccessible, and far from being communicative. Such was not the case : I have it from Mr. Sully’s own lips, and will give the account as related.

“ ‘ I went to see Mr. Trumbull, whom I commissioned to paint a portrait of my wife. The artist began the portrait : I stationed myself behind his chair, watching *how* he proceeded. After he had painted a part of it, he remarked that he never saw any one so much interested in a picture, and inquired whether, at any time, I had studied painting.

“ ‘ Ah ! ’ thought I, ‘ shall I disclose myself ? ’ which I finally did.

“ ‘ Oh ! ’ said Mr. Trumbull, laughing, ‘ had I known what your intentions were, I would have worked very differently. I shall have to begin the picture anew.’

“ In 1807 Thomas Sully formed the acquaintance of Gilbert Stuart, then the leading portrait-painter of Boston, from whom he received valuable instruction. He highly appreciated the

beauty of Gilbert Stuart's portraiture. A deep sympathy existed between these two artists.

"In 1809 Mr. Sully came to our 'City of Brotherly Love.' After a brief stay, he determined to go abroad, for the further prosecution of his studies. He received several commissions from Philadelphia, for copies of eminent works, and sailed from our city for Liverpool, at which port he arrived July 13, 1809. He remained in London until March, 1810, a close student, receiving instruction from Benjamin West and Sir Thomas Lawrence.

"On his return to Philadelphia, he became the leading artist in portraiture. It is probable he painted portraits of a greater number of famous people than any of his contemporaries. His conceptions of children are exquisite in grace and loveliness. He painted many ideal portraits of the female characters of Shakspeare.

"His portrait of George Frederick Cooke as Richard III., and a life-size portrait of Samuel Coates, were painted shortly after his return from England. The former was presented to the Academy of Fine Arts, and the latter to Pennsylvania Hospital.

"The artist's next production was an historical subject, — Washington crossing the Delaware. He also painted an equestrian portrait of George Washington, and full-length portraits of the following, — Dr. Benjamin Rush, Commodore Decatur, Thomas Jefferson, and Charles Carroll.

"When Lafayette visited the United States, in 1824, Mr. Sully secured a sitting, and gave us his life-size portrait, which is now to be seen at Independence Hall.

"In 1837 St. George's Society of Philadelphia commissioned Mr. Sully to paint a portrait of Queen Victoria shortly after her coronation. In the artist's charming *salon* the writer saw his first study for this portrait, and would say, 'May time spare this portrait of Queen Victoria!' for it was one of the artist's treasures, and also one of his loveliest representations of womanhood.

"During the artist's sojourn in London, when painting this picture, it was a period of the most refined enjoyment. His



former pupil, Charles Leslie, and the choicest intellects of the British metropolis,—men famous in literature, art, science, politics,—and his own cultivated nature, mingled in a congenial atmosphere. Of late years Mr. Sully enjoyed an intense delight in recalling that happy period of London life.

“Although born in England, he was an American at heart, who loved our great men. Our institutions, and the early history of our country, together with the actors of that period, were to him a prolific theme. He revered the character of George Washington and the greatness of Benjamin Franklin. Once, when speaking of the last named, he said, ‘There have been individuals who wished to look back after their departure from this world; and Benjamin Franklin wished to look back a hundred years after his departure, to see the advance in improvements and knowledge. Well,’ added the artist, ‘I, too, should like to look.’

“Mr. Sully formed a connecting link between the earliest artists of America and the artists of the present day, and witnessed with great happiness the gradual but steady development of taste for art in America.

“In Philadelphia this development is due to the members of the *legal* profession. The *initiation* of our Academy of Fine Arts was promoted principally by members of the *bar*. Of the seventy who signed the parchment of December, 1805, forty-one were lawyers. The only surviving one was a friend and patron of the late Thomas Sully, who painted his portrait many years since. This gentleman is the venerable Horace Binney, sen., now in his ninety-third year.

“Shortly before the death of Rembrandt Peale, our citizen, Joseph Harrison Peale, jun., a patron of art, commissioned Thomas Sully and Rembrandt, each to paint the other’s portrait. These two venerable artists were the honored guests when these portraits were shown to a choice company assembled at Mr. Harrison’s mansion. This occasion will ever be remembered by those honored by an invitation to the reception.

“Thomas Sully was a gentleman of the old school, and led a happy life, surrounded by his family, friends, and pictures. Until recently he spent several hours daily in his charming

studio, at his easel. But a fall last winter, by which the bone of his arm was fractured, produced a serious effect upon his aged and debilitated system. Mr. Sully passed peacefully away Nov. 5, 1872, amid the constant and loving attention of his children."

The following paintings by Sully may be seen in the Fine Art Room of the Historical Society: copy of George Washington, Andrew Jackson, and Stephen Decatur.

JAMES HAMILTON was born in Ireland about 1820, and came to America in infancy. He is distinguished for his success in marine views, and acquired much distinction by his illustrations of Dr. Kane's "Arctic Explorations." Among his other noted works are Capture of the Serapis, and Old Ironsides.

THOMAS BUCHANAN READ, born in Chester County, Pennsylvania, in 1822, is better known as a poet than an artist, though his pictures have much merit. His group of Longfellow's Children is thought one of his best. There is in the Historical Society a portrait of Thomas Sergeant, third president of the society.

ADOLPH ULRIC WERTMULLER was a native of Stockholm, Sweden, and came to Philadelphia in May, 1794. He died in 1812, and was buried, it is thought, in the ground of the Old Swedes' Church in Swanson Street. He painted a portrait of George Washington in 1795, which may be seen in the rooms of the Historical Society.

PAUL WEBER, born in Germany about 1820, came to America early in life, and practised his art many years in Philadelphia. His paintings of Fort Mifflin, Braddock's Grave, Braddock's Field, or the Monongahela, are to be seen at the Historical Society rooms. The charm of his works is in the indescribable softness and harmony of tints. He returned to Germany several years since, and established himself at Darmstadt.

JOHN NEAGLE, born in Boston in 1799, was known principally as a portrait-painter. He practised in Philadelphia, where he married a daughter of Sully. He died in 1865. Among his works are portraits of Washington and Henry Clay. There are also, at the Historical Society rooms, several portraits

of Indians painted by him; one of which, *The Knife*, chief of the Pawnee Loups, called the Bravest of the Braves, was taken from life, and presented to the society in 1861, by the artist. The two heads, *Big Kansas*, and *Sharitarishe*, chief of the Grand Pawnees, were also painted from life, and presented by him to the society.

PETER F. ROTHERMEL was born in Luzerne County, Pennsylvania, in 1817. Among his chief works are *De Soto* discovering the Mississippi, *Columbus before Isabella the Catholic*, *Christabel*, and the *Christian Martyrs*, finished in 1864, and exhibited at the great Sanitary Fair held in Philadelphia in June and July of that year. His *Battle of Gettysburg* has gained for him a lasting fame. At the Historical Society rooms there is a life-size head of Anthony Wayne by him.

MARGARET M. GEORGE has given some fine specimens of the art of painting in water-colors.

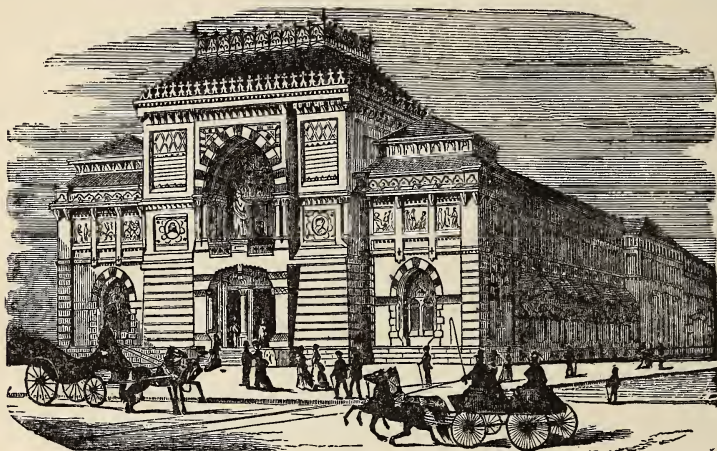
Aside from the galleries of the Pennsylvania Historical Society, the Presbyterian and Baptist Historical Societies, and others, with the Academy of Fine Arts, hereafter to be described, there are many private gentlemen in Philadelphia, whose dwellings are adorned with costly and elegant paintings; and, from personal inspection, the writer can testify that no finer or more elegant specimens are to be found in any public gallery than are contained in the residences of Thomas A. Scott, President of the Pennsylvania Railroad, and James L. Claghorn.

Among the institutions devoted to art or instruction in its various branches may be mentioned (of paramount importance in extending the sphere of woman's usefulness), the SCHOOL OF DESIGN FOR WOMEN, the first institution of the kind in America. It was founded in 1850, under the patronage of the Franklin Institute, greatly aided by Mrs. Peter; incorporated in 1853. The new edifice is on the corner of North Merriek and Filbert Streets. Miss E. Croasdale is the Principal of the School; and in it designs for all varieties of mechanical drawing are taught gratuitously.

THE ACADEMY OF FINE ARTS was founded in 1805, and incorporated in 1807. Its new magnificent gallery is on Broad



Street, just above Arch. It has a front of one hundred feet on Broad Street, and two hundred and fifty-eight feet on Cherry Street. The chief front, on Broad, is two stories in height, ornamented with colored tiles, terracotta ware, and light stone dressings. Over the chief entrance there is a large Gothic window, traced with stone. The front on Cherry Street is of similar materials, relieved by a colonnade, supporting a number of arched windows, in the rear of which will be a transept, with a pointed gable. The edifice cost three hundred thousand dollars. It has lecture-rooms, life-class rooms, retiring-rooms, on the first floor, with galleries for casts from



NEW ACADEMY OF FINE ARTS.

sculpture: the grand gallery, seventy-five by forty feet, is on the second floor. The Gilpin Gallery contains the rich bequest of Henry D. Gilpin, comprising a hundred thousand dollars' worth of art treasures; and this, together with a number of smaller exhibition-rooms, measures ninety-five by forty-two feet. This is a noble institution; its object being to improve and refine public taste for works of art, and to cultivate and encourage our native genius by "providing elegant and approved specimens of the Arts, for imitation." This society gave its first exhibition in 1811, when more than five hundred specimens of the skill of both painter and sculptor were exhibited.



The art collections of this academy are said to be the most valuable in this country. Among them are contained the masterpieces of Stuart, West, Allston, Sully, Neagle, and Wittcamp. The gallery of casts from antiquarian relics is very instructive.

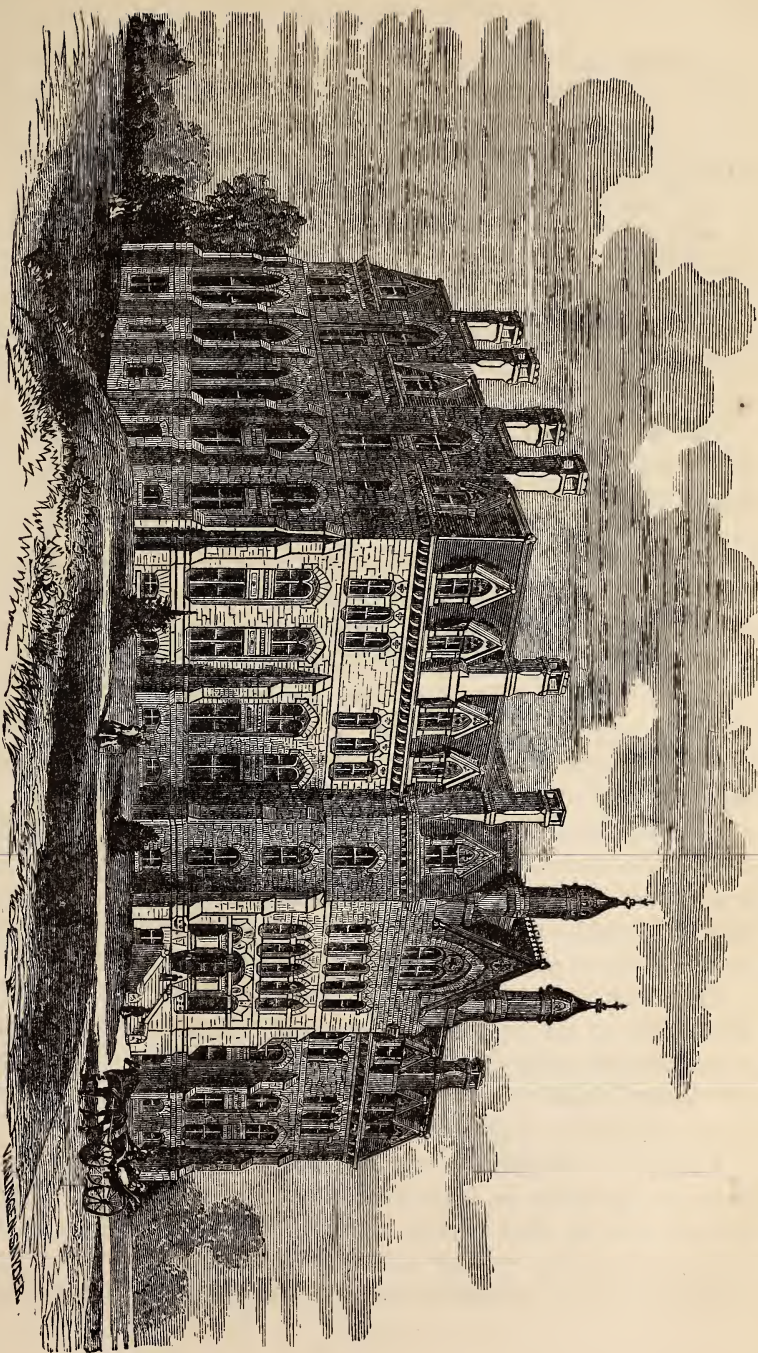
This academy is under the patronage and management of such men of wealth, taste, and refinement, that no pains will be spared to render it an institution worthy of the Quaker City.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

### MEDICAL SCHOOLS AND WRITERS, JOURNALS AND JOURNALISTS.

William Shippen — Adam Kuhn — Benjamin Rush — Thomas Bond — American Metropolis of Education — Medical School united with the University — New Edifice — Jefferson Medical College — The Pennsylvania Medical College — Philadelphia College of Medicine — Homœopathic College, &c. — Female Medical College — Philadelphia College of Pharmacy — College of Physicians and Surgeons — Benjamin Rush — James Rush — Nathaniel Chapman — Philip Syng Physick — Samuel Jackson — Robley Dunglison — Richard J. Dunglison — Benjamin Smith Barton — William P. C. Barton — John Bartram — William Bartram — John Syng Dorsey — William Potts Dewees — John Godman — William E. Horner — J. M. Allen — Thomas C. James — John Eberle — George McLellan — Charles Delucena Meigs — John Forsyth Meigs — Samuel George Morton — Henry Stuart Patterson — Henry H. Smith — Alfred Stillé — W. W. Gerhard — Thomas D. Mitchell — John Bell — Thomas Mutter — Robert E. Rogers — Samuel D. Gross — George B. Wood — Journals and Journalists.

PENNSYLVANIA has the honor of having established the first medical school in America. It originated in a course of lectures delivered by Dr. William Shippen, who was appointed Professor of Anatomy and Obstetrics. Dr. John Morgan was appointed Professor of the Institutes and Practice of Medicine; Dr. Adam Kuhn was made Professor of Botany; Dr. Benjamin Rush, Professor of Chemistry; and Dr. Thomas Bond, Professor of Clinical Medicine. This school, thus founded, early obtained the first rank in eminence; and its successors have well maintained the honor which it acquired under its original faculty. Under such medical men as Rush, Physick, Barton, Jackson, Chapman, James, Wistar, Dewees, Dorsey, McLellan, Gibson, Dunglison, Horner, Eberle, Revere, Patterson, Smith, Meigs, Godman, Morton, and others, Philadelphia became entitled to the well-known and well-merited



UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA (MEDICAL DEPARTMENT).



appellation of "The American Metropolis of Medical Education." This school became incorporated as an integral part of the University of Pennsylvania in 1791; and, under the charter of the institution, its medical diplomas have always been given. Its new edifice is similar to the main building of the university, already described in chapter twenty-fifth, although it has distinctive architectural features. In the basement is the laboratory; on the first floor, two large lecture-rooms; on the second, a general museum, and an amphitheatre for six hundred students; and, on the third, room for the study of operative surgery, and for dissection.

THE JEFFERSON MEDICAL COLLEGE was established and chartered in 1825, after a long and sharp contest with the special friends of the Medical Department of the University of Pennsylvania, the bitterness and agony of which need not here be repeated. Dr. George McLellan, the eminent surgeon, was the principal agent in founding this school. It soon became very prosperous; and its pupils outnumbered those of the university. The college building, on Tenth Street, between Chestnut and Walnut, has been several times enlarged to accommodate its great number of students. A museum connected with this school stands in the rear of the college, amply provided with material for illustrating the various branches.

THE PENNSYLVANIA MEDICAL COLLEGE was erected in 1849. The design was by the architect of Girard College. It is a beautiful and spacious edifice, situated near the Pennsylvania Hospital, on Ninth, near Locust Street. It was given up, for want of patronage, about 1860.

PHILADELPHIA COLLEGE OF MEDICINE was chartered in 1847, with all the rights, privileges, and immunities granted to other medical colleges in the State. It prospered for a time, but finally became the property of a single professor, who employed the other lecturers. It died in 1855.

These four old-school, regularly chartered medical colleges were in operation in Philadelphia at the same time. There existed also, at that period, an indefinite number of medical colleges, under a variety of names, among which were, the "HOMŒOPATHIC COLLEGE," the "ECLECTIC COLLEGE," the



“THOMSONIAN COLLEGE,” the “PENN MEDICAL COLLEGE,” the “PENN MEDICAL UNIVERSITY,” &c. Some of these schools have been recently charged with selling diplomas to persons not qualified to practise medicine; and it is said their charters have been abrogated.

THE FEMALE MEDICAL COLLEGE OF PENNSYLVANIA was founded in 1849. It is a regularly chartered college, embracing all the various branches of medical science, and authorized to confer the degree of Doctor in Medicine upon all women who have taken a full course of lectures, and sustained a regular examination. The faculty of this college, comprised of both men and women, are regularly graduated from medical schools, and competent to fill the chairs in any medical college in our land. The course of instruction, from the commencement, comprised six branches; viz., Anatomy and Physiology, Principles and Practice of Medicine, Obstetrics, and Diseases of Women and Children, Surgery, and the Institutes of Medicine, Materia Medica, Pharmacy, and Chemistry.

THE PHILADELPHIA COLLEGE OF PHARMACY was established in 1811, and incorporated in 1822, “to obviate a departure from the correct customs and established principles of the drug and apothecary business, to direct attention to the qualities of articles brought into the drug market, to secure the discussion of subjects relating to the business, and communicate information beneficial and interesting to the trade, and to create a school of pharmacy, in which lectures should be delivered expressly for the instruction of druggists and apothecaries.”

THE COLLEGE OF PHYSICIANS AND SURGEONS is located at the north-east corner of Thirteenth and Locust Streets. Thomas Mutter, M.D., LL.D., late Professor of Surgery in Jefferson Medical College, donated to this College a sum sufficient to erect this building, together with his library. The college was chartered 1789, for the purpose, as stated in the document, “to advance the science of medicine, and therefore lessen human misery, by investigating the diseases and remedies peculiar to this country.” It is composed of fellows, or members, who are practitioners in the city, and such associates as they may elect without the limits of the city, or from abroad.

They publish a quarterly, which is esteemed a very valuable work by the profession. Their meetings are entertaining, and discussions useful.

#### MEDICAL WRITERS.

BENJAMIN RUSH, M.D., was one of the earliest, if not the earliest, of these. His principal works were collected into seven volumes, by his direction, and have been of much service to the medical world.

JAMES RUSH, son of the preceding, was noted for his work on "The Human Voice."

NATHANIEL CHAPMAN, M.D., published two octavo volumes, entitled "Elements of Therapeutics and Materia Medica;" also five volumes, octavo, of select speeches, &c.

PHILIP SYNG PHYSICK, M.D., was a student of the celebrated John Hunter, and a graduate of the University of Edinburgh. He published many articles in the various physical and medical journals of the day. His son-in-law, J. Randolph, M.D., published a biographical sketch of Dr. Physick, in 1839.

SAMUEL JACKSON published "Principles of Medicine," an octavo volume, in 1832, "Discourse commemorative of Nathaniel Chapman," and occasionally medical essays.

ROBLEY DUNGLISON, M.D., LL.D., was Professor of the Institutes of Medicine and Medical Jurisprudence in Jefferson Medical College, from 1836 to 1858. His contributions to medical literature were many and valuable; and his "Physiology" and "Lexicon" take rank as medical classics in our language.

RICHARD J. DUNGLISON, M.D., his son, has arranged and edited, and Lindsay and Blakiston have published, "A History of Medicine from the Earliest Ages to the Nineteenth Century," originally written by Robley Dunglison.

BENJAMIN SMITH BARTON, an eminent physician, botanist, and philologist, was born at Lancaster, Penn. He obtained his medical degree at Göttingen; became connected with the University in 1789, and continued to occupy the chair of Natural History and Botany until his death, in 1815. At the death of Dr. Rush, in 1813, he was appointed his successor to the chair of the Practice of Physic. He was taught to draw by Major

André, while that officer remained a prisoner in Lancaster. At the age of sixteen, he composed an essay on the "Vices of the Times." He published "Observations on Some Parts of Natural History," to which is added an account of several remarkable vestiges of antiquity which have been discovered in different parts of North America, "Papers relative to American Antiquities" in quarto, "Collections for an Essay towards a Materia Medica for the United States," "Fragments of the Natural History of Pennsylvania," "Memoir concerning the Fascinating Quality ascribed to the Rattlesnake," "Supplement to the Same," "Some Account of the Siren Lacertina and Other Species of the Same Genus of Amphibious Animals," "Elements of Botany." He furnished many "Contributions to the Transactions of the American Philosophical Society."

WILLIAM P. C. BARTON, M.D., nephew of the above named, and his successor as Professor of Botany in the University of Pennsylvania, published "*Floræ Philadelphię Prodrômus*," quarto; "*Vegetable Materia Medica of the United States, containing a Botanical, General, and Medical History of the Medicinal Plants Indigenious to the United States, illustrated by colored engravings*;" "*A Compendium Floræ Philadelphię*;" "*Flora of North America, illustrated by colored figures drawn from Nature*," three volumes quarto; "*Materia Medica and Botany*," two volumes; "*Medical Botany*," two volumes; "*Hints to Naval Officers cruising in the West Indies*;" "*Plan for Marine Hospitals in the United States*."

JOHN BARTRAM, M.D., born at Marple, Delaware county, Penn., became so famous in Botany, that Linnæus pronounced him the greatest natural botanist in the world. He was appointed botanist to George the Third, and held the office until his death, September, 1777. He published "*Observations on the Inhabitants, Climate, Soil, Divers Productions, Animals, &c., made in his Travels from Pennsylvania to Onondago, Oswego, and Lake Ontario*;" "*Account of East Florida on a Journey to St. Augustine*."

WILLIAM BARTRAM, M.D., inherited the botanical zeal of his father. He travelled through several of the Southern States

to examine the medicinal plants of the country. His collections were forwarded to Dr. Fothergill. These were published, embellished with copper plates, in 1792; translated into French in 1801, in two volumes.

JOHN SYNG DORSEY, M.D., an eminent physician of Philadelphia, published "Elements of Surgery," two volumes; "Cooper's Surgery, with Notes," and contributed largely to periodicals.

WILLIAM POTTS DEWEES, M.D., Professor of Midwifery in the University of Pennsylvania, published two editions of "Inaugural Essays," "Medical Essays," "System of Midwifery" (twelve editions), a "Treatise on the Physical and Medical Treatment of Children," a "Treatise on the Diseases of Females, and a "Treatise on the Practice of Medicine."

JOHN D. GODMAN, M.D., a distinguished practitioner for a time in Philadelphia, published an "American Natural History," "Anatomical Investigations," "Rambles of a Naturalist," "Bell's Anatomy with Notes," also many addresses, which were delivered on public occasions.

WILLIAM E. HORNER, M.D., Professor of Anatomy in the University of Pennsylvania, published "Special Anatomy and Histology," two volumes, with over three hundred illustrations, which passed through eight editions; "United States Dissector, or Lessons in Practical Anatomy," five editions.

J. M. ALLEN, Professor of Anatomy in the Pennsylvania Medical College, Philadelphia, published the "Student's Guide in the Dissecting-Room."

THOMAS C. JAMES, M.D., a native of Philadelphia, was appointed Professor of Midwifery in the University of Pennsylvania. He was an accomplished scholar, and contributed much to the Philadelphia "Portfolio."

JOHN EBERLE, M.D., published "Lectures on the Theory and Practice of Medicine," "Treatise on the Diseases and Physical Education of Children," "Treatise on Materia Medica and Therapeutics," two volumes.

GEORGE MCLELLAN, M.D., graduated at the University of Pennsylvania; was one of the founders of the Jefferson Medical College, and of the Pennsylvania Medical College. He



was Professor of Surgery in Jefferson Medical College; and he very frequently contributed to the medical journals; was the author of a work, published after his death, entitled "Principles and Practice of Surgery."

CHARLES DELUCENA MEIGS, M.D., was Professor of Midwifery in Jefferson Medical College. He was an eminent medical writer, and published a "Series of Letters to his Class," "Philadelphia Practice of Midwifery," "Science and Art of Obstetrics," "Spasmodic Cholera," &c.

JOHN FORSYTH MEIGS, M.D., published a "Treatise on the Diseases of Children," and has contributed papers to "The American Journal of Medical Sciences" and to "The Medical Examiner."

SAMUEL GEORGE MORTON, M.D., was Professor of Anatomy in the Pennsylvania Medical College. He published many valuable works on geology and palæontology, among which were "Analysis of Tabular Spar from Bucks County," "Crania Egyptiaca," "Crania Americana;" and to the latter he owes his rank among the most eminent physiological ethnologists.

HENRY STUART PATTERSON, M.D., was Professor of *Materia Medica* in Pennsylvania College. He published a "Memoir of Dr. Morton," also "Lectures Introductory to the course of *Materia Medica*." He promised to attain great eminence, but died young.

HENRY H. SMITH, Professor of Surgery in the University of Pennsylvania, published a "Treatise on Minor Surgery," an "Anatomical Atlas," "Principles and Practice of Surgery," "A System of Operative Surgery," "Treatment of Ununited Fractures by Means of Artificial Limbs," "A Professional Visit to London and Paris," "Syllabus of Lectures on the Principles and Practice of Surgery," "The Medical, Literary, and Social Influence of the Alumni of the University of Pennsylvania," &c.

ALFRED STILLÉ, M.D., is Professor of Theory and Practice of Medicine in the University of Pennsylvania. He published "Medical Instruction in the United States," "Elements of General Pathology," "The Unity of Medicine," "Therapeutics and *Materia Medica*," "Systematic Treatise on the Actions

and Uses of Medicinal Agents, including their Description and History," "Epidemic Meningitis, or Cerebro-Spinal Meningitis," &c.

W. W. GERHARD, M.D., is Lecturer on Clinical Medicine in the University of Pennsylvania. He has published "The Clinical Guide," "Lectures on the Diagnosis, Pathology, and Treatment of the Diseases of the Chest," and contributed much to "The American Journal of Medical Science," "Medical Examiner," &c.

THOMAS D. MITCHELL, M.D., is Professor of the Theory and Practice of Medicine in the Jefferson Medical College. He published a very valuable work on "Materia Medica and Therapeutics," "Elements of Chemical Philosophy," an edition of Dr. John Eberle's "Treatise on the Diseases and Physical Education of Children," with Notes.

JOHN BELL, M.D., a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, was a lecturer for many years on the Institutes of Medicine in the Philadelphia Medical Institute, and also Professor of the Theory and Practice of Medicine in the Medical College of Ohio. He published "Baths and Mineral Waters," "Regimen and Longevity," "Baths and the Water Regimen," "Mineral and Thermal Springs of the United States and Canada."

THOMAS MUTTER, M.D., late Professor of Surgery in Jefferson Medical College, was one of the best lecturers on Medical Science. He published an edition of Liston's Lectures with additions, and contributed to many of the leading medical journals of the United States.

ROBERT E. ROGERS is Professor of Chemistry in the University of Pennsylvania. He is the editor of George E. Day's translation of the second edition of C. G. Lehman's "Physiological Chemistry," two volumes octavo, with nearly two hundred illustrations.

SAMUEL D. GROSS is Professor of Surgery in the Jefferson Medical College. He has published many works, among which are "General Anatomy," "Anatomy and Diseases of the Bones and Joints," "Operative Surgery," "Obstetrics," "Wounds of the Intestines," "Pathological Anatomy," "Foreign Bodies in

the Air-Passages," "Diseases of the Urinary Bladder," "Results of Surgical Operations in Malignant Diseases," "A System of Surgery," &c.

PAUL B. GODDARD, an eminent physician of Philadelphia, published "Plates on the Arteries," also on the "Nerves," "The Anatomy, Physiology, and Pathology of Human Teeth." Edited Wilson's "Anatomy, Modified, and Arranged," by P. B. G.; also "Practical Treatise on Midwifery," and several other medical works.

FRANCIS D. CONDE, a graduate of the Medical University of Pennsylvania, published an abridged edition, with notes, of Thomas's "Practice of Medicine," "Course of Examinations for the Use of Medical Students," "The Catechism of Health," "A Treatise on Epidemic Cholera," "Practical Treatise on the Diseases of Children," &c.

FRANKLIN BACHE, M.D., great-grandson of Benjamin Franklin, was Surgeon of the United States army, Professor of Chemistry in the Franklin Institute of Pennsylvania, also in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy; in conjunction with Dr. George B. Wood, author of "The Dispensatory of the United States;" editor of "Ure's Dictionary of Chemistry," with many other works.

ROBERT HARE, M.D., an eminent chemist, Emeritus Professor of, in University of Pennsylvania, made some wonderful discoveries in chemistry when very young, contributed more than one hundred and fifty Papers to various publications.

JOSEPH LEIDY, M.D., studied with Prof. James McClintock and Paul B. Goddard. He is Professor of Anatomy in the University of Pennsylvania, and has contributed many essays to medical literature, among which are "Several Important Points on the Anatomy of the Human Larynx," "Researches into the Comparative Structure of the Liver," "On the Intimate Structure and History of the Articular Cartilages," "On Some Peculiar Bodies observed in the Human Subject." He has devoted much attention to science, and contributed much to the various scientific journals upon the literature of medicine, zoölogy, and botany.

GEORGE B. WOOD. We have only room to add the name of

this illustrious physician, last, but by no means the least, among the medical writers of Pennsylvania. For many years Professor of *Materia Medica* and Theory and Practice of Medicine in the University of Pennsylvania,—a man to whom the profession in America is probably more indebted for valuable medical literature than to any other writer. Among his works are “*The Dispensatory of the United States*,” “*Treatise on the Practice of Medicine*,” “*Treatise on Therapeutics, and Pharmacology or Materia Medica*,” “*Lectures and Addresses on Medical Subjects before the Classes of the University of Pennsylvania*,” “*Biographical Memoirs, Addresses*,” &c.

#### JOURNALS AND JOURNALISTS.

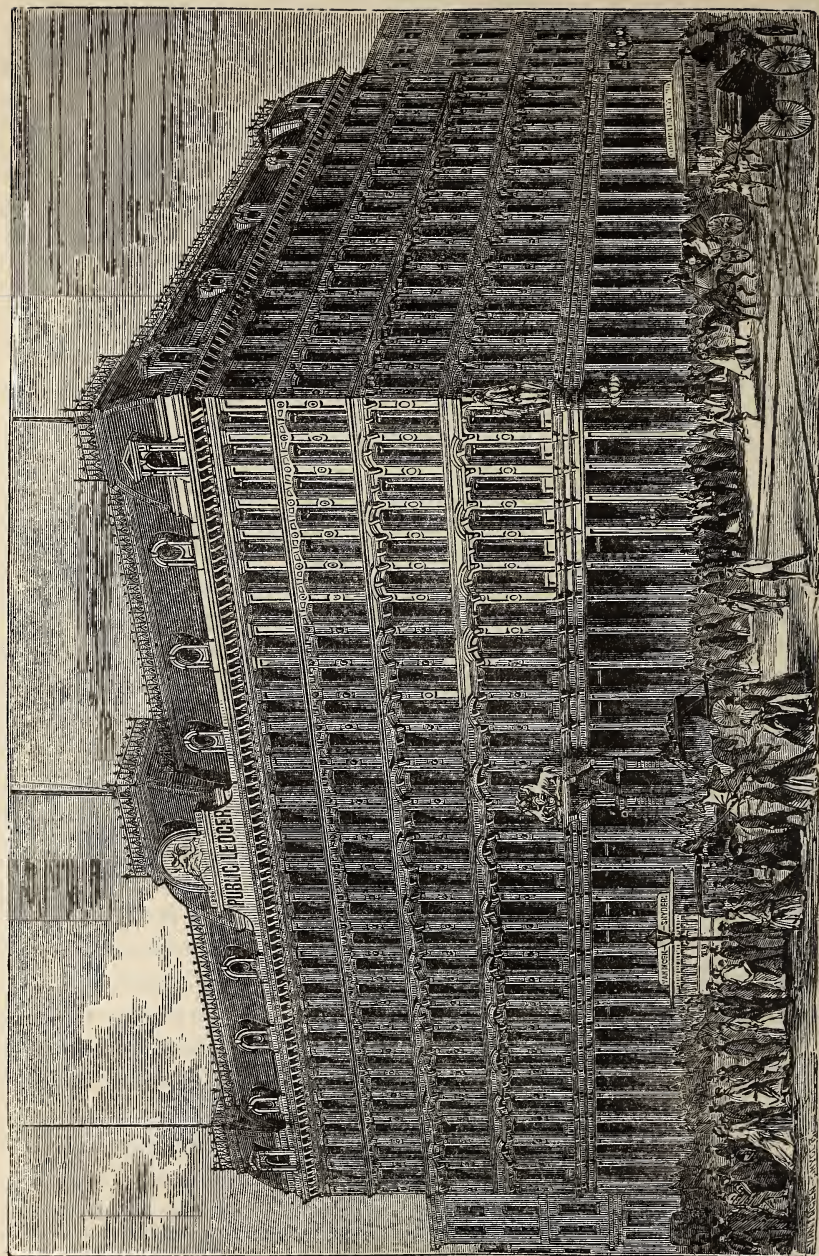
From 1719 and 1728, when the “*AMERICAN WEEKLY MERCURY, THE INSTRUCTOR IN ALL ARTS AND SCIENCES*,” and “*PENNSYLVANIA GAZETTE*,” the first two papers ever published in this Commonwealth, the last named edited by Benjamin Franklin—from that day to this, Pennsylvania has been fortunate in her journals and journalists. While it might be pleasing and instructive to give the names of all the newspapers and their editors, that have ever been published in this State, the limits of our history confine us to some of those of the present time; nor, indeed, can we give more than the names of many of these.

“*The North American and United States Gazette*” is perhaps the oldest as well as the largest newspaper in Philadelphia. Its archives are stored with much of the newspaper talent that has existed in our city. To turn over its numerous volumes, and read its enormous pages, is to become acquainted, not only with the local news of the City and State, but also with the vast transactions of our Nation. It is always dignified and decorous, never light and trifling. Its integrity and substantiality always remind us of the Golden Age of the Republic; and we rarely scan its vigorous columns without recalling the names of Washington, Jefferson, and other patriotic fathers of the nation. Hon. Morton McMichael, one of the best mayors of Philadelphia, and who has honorably filled many offices of trust in the State and the Nation, is the editor and publisher,



combining in one person both offices, as did Franklin, his illustrious predecessor. Our readers can have the daily for ten dollars a year.

"The PUBLIC LEDGER" (and "Daily Transcript"). In describing this paper, we are naturally led back to the period when the first penny paper of our city was started, about 1830. Dr. Christopher C. Conwell published a small sheet, entitled "LE CENT." He was an educated, enthusiastic young man, and a better poet than editor. His paper soon shared the fate which hundreds of others have since; viz., it failed. In 1835 William L. Duane, as he said, "for the purpose of feeling the pulse of the public on the subject of a daily penny paper," published a few numbers of "The Daily Transcript." March 25, 1836, Messrs. Swain, Abell, and Simmons published the first number of "The Public Ledger." This paper, though small in size, was bold in purpose, and from its first issue seemed to say, "I have come to stay." The gentlemen just named employed Mr. Russell Jarvis, a native of Massachusetts. He possessed every qualification necessary for a successful editor. He probed every sore in the city, uncovered every corrupt fountain, and opened its contents to the public gaze. In a single week after its birth, the "Ledger" had shown its teeth to such an extent, that a "villanous and cowardly attack was made upon its office, demolishing several panes of glass, and inflicting somewhat more serious injury to the interior." In a word, its independence has made "The Public Ledger" what it is, — the most popular paper, if we take into account its vast circulation, perhaps in America. If a man were arrested for the murder of his paramour, and through family influence and bribery went "unwhipped of justice;" if medical students became uproarious in the street, and committed deeds of atrocity at which desperadoes ought to tremble; if peaceable men could not assemble, and quietly discuss the subject of slavery, without having the building torn down over their heads by mobocratic violence; if Native Americans must be set upon by the minions of Popery; and if Catholic churches were to be burned by a mob, that vengeance might be reaped upon the transgressors, — in each and all of these misdemeanors, "The Ledger" publicly denounced the



PUBLIC LEDGER BUILDING.



mockery of justice, the heinousness of crime under college patronage, the insecurity of law-abiding citizens, and the total failure of our civilization.

Thus, from the start, "The Public Ledger" was a success; but under the ownership and supervision of George W. Childs, whose life has been so graphically described by Col. J. W. Forney, it was enlarged, expurgated of its objectionable advertisements, and every way improved, until it has become one of the most veritable and successful organs of the present age, as demonstrated by its daily circulation of a hundred and twenty-five thousand copies, the employment of three hundred and nine persons in its establishment (exclusive of the newsboys), and the erection of the splendid edifice, as seen in the accompanying illustration. Everybody bears testimony to the kindness, good character, enterprise, and success of George William Childs. No better proof can be given of the truth of this statement than is to be gathered from the fact that Col. Forney, the publisher of a newspaper in the same city (where too often, in such cases, rivalry shows itself in bitter words), paid the following tribute to him: "In his fifteenth year he came to Philadelphia, like Benjamin Franklin, without a friend or a dollar. His only capital was industry, perseverance, and a stout heart; and with these resistless weapons he fought his way through inconceivable obstacles, until he has become the living illustration of that noble characteristic, so rare among men of affluence, *the accumulation of riches, not for himself alone, but to make others happy during and after his life*. No charity appeals to Childs in vain,—no object of patriotism, no great enterprise, no sufferer from misfortune, whether the ex-Confederate or the stricken foreigner. He made his money himself, not by speculation or office, and got none by inheritance. He coins money like a magician, and spends it like a man of heart. He likes society, and lives like a gentleman. He is as temperate as ever Horace Greely was, and yet he never denies his friends a generous glass of wine. His habits are as simple as Abraham Lincoln's; and yet his residence is a gem bright with exquisite decorations, and rich in every variety of art. He gives a Christmas dinner to newsboys and bootblacks, and dines trav-

elling dukes and earls with equal ease and familiarity. He never seems to be at work, goes everywhere, sees everybody, helps everybody; and yet his great machine moves like a clock under his constant supervision."

**FORNEY'S PRESS.** Col. John W. Forney, a native of Lancaster, was born in 1817. He seems to have been born an editor and a politician, and has been equally successful in both of these professions. He first edited a newspaper in his native city, in 1838. In 1845 he removed to Philadelphia, where he edited the *PENNSYLVANIAN*, a daily Democratic journal. In 1857 he established the *PRESS* in this city. As *Minerva* came forth full grown from the brain of Jupiter, so this paper burst forth upon the community in full-orbed strength and vigor. During the late war, no newspaper in the city was more eagerly sought after, or more eagerly and carefully perused, than the *PRESS*. Col. Forney also established the *CHRONICLE*, an enterprising and successful paper, in Washington, D.C. As a writer, his style is lucid and strong: his biographical sketches exhibit great keenness and insight, and vivid description of character. His "Anecdotes of Public Men" are so amusing and instructive, that they have been, and will continue to be, read with zest and pleasure by coming generations. His personal appearance is fine, his eye bright and piercing, and his conversational powers admirable. As a political man, he has held many offices of trust and emolument, and always discharged the duties of them creditably to himself, and satisfactorily to the public.

The *PHILADELPHIA INQUIRER* is one of the old established, highly respectable papers of the city. William W. Harding is the editor and publisher; and its price is six dollars per annum. Under Mr. Harding's management, it has become so much improved, that the readers of the original specimens would scarcely be able to recognize their old friend and companion.

The *AGE*, the old and tried friend of the Democrats, fills the place in their families which the "Press" and the "North American" occupy among the Republicans, over whom it keeps a sharp watch.

The *BULLETIN*, the oldest of the evening papers, has enjoyed



a long career of merited prosperity, and been wisely and ably edited.

The *EVENING TELEGRAPH*. This paper, though of more recent date than the preceding, has, nevertheless, had a successful career. A Philadelphia publication says of it, "It is the most successful of modern attempts to render a double-sheet newspaper financially successful. By keeping its readers fully posted in the news, through facilities peculiar to itself in afternoon journalism, by the independence of its editorials, by the special feature of reproducing regularly the leading articles of important newspapers in other sections of the country, and by vigorous business management, it has gained a solid footing among its contemporaries, and a strong hold upon the public." — Well-deserved compliment.

The *ITEM*, a younger brother among the evening papers, than the preceding; a most indefatigable and industrious journal, is ably and brilliantly edited by Fitzgerald & Sons, and has achieved considerable success.

The *EVENING STAR*, a bright star indeed, is a penny paper, and has been very successful.

The *EVENING CHRONICLE*, *BEE*, and *HERALD* are also penny papers, and earnestly compete for their share of patronage.

The *DAY*, and *LETTER-SHEET AND PRICE-CURRENT*, are also in the field, suing for daily patronage.

The *PUBLIC RECORD*, published by William J. Swain, a son of the Swain who was one of the founders of the "Public Ledger," has reproduced almost a facsimile of the original "Ledger," published by his father and his coadjutors. It contains a less number of advertisements, and more news, than were to be found in the old "Ledger."

The *GERMAN DEMOCRAT* is under the control of Dr. Morwitz, and has achieved greater success than any other paper hitherto published by any of our citizens from the "Faderland." Its building is an ornament to the city. There are three other German papers in the city, — the *PHILADELPHIA ABEND POST*, the *PHILADELPHIA FREIE PRESSE*, the *PHILADELPHIA VOLKSBLATT*.

The Tri-Weeklies are the *NORTH AMERICAN*, and *UNITED*

STATES GAZETTE, and the PRESS; the former \$5.00 per annum, the latter, \$4.38 per annum.

The only semi-weekly paper is the LETTER-SHEET AND PRICE-CURRENT, which is \$2.00 per annum.

The Weeklies are the CHRISTIAN RECORDER, edited by Rev. B. T. Tanner, and published by Rev. W. H. Hunter; the COMMERCIAL LIST AND PRICE-CURRENT, published by Stephen N. Winslow & Son; the EPISCOPAL REGISTER, published by McCalla & Stavelly; the EPISCOPALIAN, edited and published by Rev. Charles W. Quick; the FRIEND, published by John S. Stokes; the FRIENDS' INTELLIGENCER, published by Emmor Comly; the FRIENDS' REVIEW, edited by W. J. Allison, and published by Alice Lewis; the GERMANTOWN TELEGRAPH, edited and published by Philip R. Freas; the HARNESS AND CARRIAGE JOURNAL, published by Dexter & Co.; the KEYSTONE, published by the Masonic Publishing Co.; the LOCAL INTELLIGENCER, published by J. M. Power Wallace; the L'ITALIA, published by L. G. Contri; the LITERARY SOCIETY, published by a society of the same name; the LUTHERAN AND MISSIONARY, published by the Lutheran Bookstore; the LUTHERAN OBSERVER, published by Rev. F. W. Conrad; the MEDICAL AND SURGICAL REPORTER, edited by Dr. D. G. Brinton; the METHODIST HOME JOURNAL, edited and published by Adam Wallace; the NATIONAL BAPTIST, edited by Rev. H. L. Wayland; the NEUE WELT, published by H. S. Grossheim; the PETROLEUM CIRCULAR; the PHILADELPHIA SONNTAGS BLATT, published by F. W. Thomas & Sons; the PHILADELPHIA SOUTHERN AND WESTERN TRADE JOURNAL, published by Southern and Western Publishing and Printing Company; the PRESBYTERIAN, published by Mutchmore & Co., which has been the standard paper of the denomination for many years, and has grown better and stronger, exerting a wider influence with its increasing age; the PRESS; the RAILWAY WORLD, published by the U. S. Railroad and Mining Register Co.; the REFORMED CHURCH MESSENGER, published by the Reformed Church Publication Board; the REPUBLIKANSCHER FLAGGE (German), published by F. W. Thomas & Sons; the SATURDAY EVENING POST, published by R. J. C. Walker, a very

able and successful journal; the SATURDAY NIGHT, published by Davis & Elverson; the SHOE AND LEATHER REPORTER, published by Dexter & Co.; the SUNDAY CITY ITEM, published by Fitzgerald & Sons; the SUNDAY DISPATCH, published by Everett & Hincken, an ably edited and widely circulated paper; the SUNDAY MERCURY, published by Messer & Co.; the SUNDAY PRESS, published by the Herald Publishing Company; the SUNDAY REPUBLIC, published by Dunkel, Hales, & Co.; the SUNDAY SCHOOL TIMES, published by John Wanamaker; the SUNDAY TIMES, published by J. H. Taggart & Son; the SUNDAY TRANSCRIPT, published by E. W. C. Greene; the SUNDAY TRIBUNE, published by William Moran; the UNITED PRESBYTERIAN AND CHRISTIAN INSTRUCTOR; the UNITED STATES JOURNAL, published by Z. Fuller; the VEREINIGTE STAATEN ZEITUNG (German), edited by Gottlieb Kellner, published by Morwitz & Co.; the WEEKLY NOTES OF CASES; the YOUNG FOLKS' NEWS, published by Alfred Martein.

The Semi-Monthlies are the CHILD'S WORLD, published by the American Sunday-School Union; the KNIGHTS OF PYTHIAS Journal, published by William Blanebois; the PETERSON'S COUNTERFEIT DETECTOR AND NATIONAL BANK-NOTE LIST, published by T. B. Peterson & Brothers; the PHILADELPHIA INTELLIGENCER, published by George C. Helmbold; the REFORMIRTE KIRCHEN ZEITUNG, edited by Rev. N. Gehr, and managed by C. J. Heppe; the YOUNG REAPER, published by the Bible and Publication Society; THE YOUTH'S EVANGELIST, published by James M. Ferguson & Co.

The monthlies are the AMERICAN EXCHANGE AND REVIEW, published by Fowler & Moon; the AMERICAN JOURNAL OF HOMŒOPATHIC MATERIA MEDICA, published by the Homœopathic Medical College; the AMERICAN LAW REGISTER, published by D. B. Canfield & Co.; the ARTHUR'S HOME MAGAZINE, published by T. S. Arthur & Sons; the BAPTIST TEACHER, published by the Bible and Publication Society; the BUSY BEE, published by the Lutheran Association; the CHILDREN'S HOUR, published by T. S. Arthur & Sons; the CHILD'S TREASURY, published by the Reformed Church Publication

Board; the CHILD'S WORLD, published by the American Sunday School Union; the ECLECTIC MEDICAL JOURNAL, published by the Eclectic Medical College; the GARDENER'S MONTHLY, published by Charles H. Marot; the GOOD WORDS, published by J. B. Lippincott & Co.; the GUARDIAN, published by the Reformed Church Publication Board; the GUARDIAN ANGEL, published by Gillin & McGuigan; the HOME CIRCLE, published by Jos. M. Horton; the JOURNAL OF APPLIED CHEMISTRY, published by Dexter & Co.; LADY'S BOOK, L. A. Godey publisher, Sarah J. Hale editor, "from the time that the memory of man runneth not to the contrary" almost, and as young still and vigorous as ever; LADY'S FRIEND, Deacon & Peterson, publishers; LIPPINCOTT'S MAGAZINE, published by J. B. Lippincott & Co., an excellent periodical; OUR MONTHLY, Alfred Martien, publisher; PETERSON'S LADY'S MAGAZINE, Charles J. Peterson, publisher; PRESBYTERIAN MONTHLY RECORD, published by Board of Presbyterians; SUNDAY MAGAZINE, published by J. B. Lippincott & Co.; SUNDAY SCHOOL WORLD, Rev. Richard Newton, D.D., editor, one of the best writers for children the world ever saw. Quarterlies, — BAPTIST, H. G. Weston, D.D., editor; DENTAL TIMES, Pennsylvania College of Dental Surgery. No space for the other Publications in the State.



## CHAPTER XXIX.

### STEPHEN GIRARD AND HIS ORPHAN COLLEGE.

Birthplace of Girard — Cabin-Boy — Capt. Randall — Begins to speculate — Comes to Philadelphia — Marriage — Removes to Mount Holly — Returns to Philadelphia — Partnership with his Brother — Dissolution — Wife's Insanity — Massacre in St. Domingo — Death of his Brother — His Nieces — Names of his Ships — Smoking — Service in the Yellow-Fever — Softens with Age — Capt. Guligar — One Cent — His Dress — Dr. Staughton — Gives to the Methodists — Cancels Donation — Widow's Visit — Girard Bank — Hardware Merchant — Rope-Maker — Iron Work — Noble Plan of his College — His Will — Explanation of Prohibitory Clause — Opening of the Will — Girard College — Note from Dr. Allen.

IT is well that Philadelphia should be fragrant with the name of Stephen Girard. We have Girard Street, Girard Avenue, Girard Bank, Girard Hotel, Girard Insurance Company, and last, but not least, Girard College.

The life of simply a rich man is not of much consequence. Many such die every year, and are soon forgotten, and it would apparently have been just as well for the world if they had never lived. Simple wealth may raise the unpleasant passion of envy, but there is nothing in it to cause veneration or esteem. Miser is his name, and miserable is the definition.

Stephen Girard was born in France, in the environs of Bordeaux, May 24, 1750. Of his parents we know nothing. It is reasonable to presume that his early education was very limited. Reading, writing, and some knowledge of arithmetic, comprised all his education.

He is supposed to have left France at about the age of ten years, in the capacity of a cabin-boy, in a vessel bound to the West Indies. What caused him thus early to leave his home, and come to a new country, is not known. Soon he came to

New York, and continued to sail from that port as cabin-boy, in the employ of Capt. James Randall. His conduct was so becoming, and he was so faithful, that Capt. Randall was accustomed to call him *my Stephen*. He never forfeited the esteem of the captain; and, when he ceased going to sea, he promoted Stephen to the office of mate, in which capacity he made several voyages to New Orleans and other ports, to the entire satisfaction of his employer.

We find a curious fact illustrated in the life of Girard; to wit, that those who are early made to rely upon *themselves* succeed the best in life's voyage. This fact was prominent in the case of Franklin, and in hundreds of others.

He was always grave, self-reliant, steady, and contemplative. Though a *Frenchman* by birth, yet he was republican in principle. The disposition ever to perform his duty was the secret of his fortune.

He was a *self-taught* man. I have already said his education was of a limited character. Soon after Capt. Randall's death, he began to *speculate*. He was always distinguished for his good fortune, or good judgment, or both. He always said he had a *lucky star*. After he grew rich, he was accustomed to say, "I began life with *sixpence*, and a man's industry, always his best capital."

He first came to Philadelphia in 1769. No one knew why he came, or what his business was. Indeed, no one knew him. Speculation or trade probably brought him here; for he soon established himself in Water Street, and was esteemed a thriving man. He was remarkably serious, and was no doubt then meditating on the banker he was afterwards to become.

As the sun of his prosperity rose higher, Girard showed that he was neither a monk nor a celibate. He was now twenty-four years of age; and, releasing himself from the cares of business, he became enamoured with a beautiful girl of sweet sixteen. This was the only passion, except a passion for wealth and fame, that ever entered his heart; and, from its unfortunate results, it is doubtful whether he ever really loved. She was the daughter of a calker, who had been an old ship-builder, of the name of Lum, living, at the time, in Water

Street, above Vine. Mary, or Polly, Lum, as she was called, was a most beautiful girl; and, when Girard first saw her, she was engaged as a servant in the family of Col. Walter Shee. He was first attracted by her charms in seeing her go to the pump barefooted, with her rich black and glossy hair hanging in dishevelled curls about her neck. She was a modest, rosy brunette. The visits of such a man, so much her superior in years and fortune, were suspected of not being honorable, and were forbidden. Whereupon, he immediately proposed to marry her; and the next year (1770) she became his wife. Her meek, modest, and exemplary deportment, added to her superior charms, soon introduced her into some of the most respectable families. This proved a most unhappy marriage, — whether from the fact that she was ignorant and vulgar, or from the domineering, intolerant, and arbitrary will of the husband, or both, it is not easy to decide. It is believed Girard was not guided in this choice by that wisdom and prudence which usually characterized his business transactions. He was, moreover, ill qualified by nature and by practice to brook opposition. On the other hand, the wife had but little of the grace, amenity, and polish of refined life; and though, in all probability, she was not inferior to him in most respects which render men and women comfortable in society, yet the two were so unequally yoked, that they could not be happy.

Had Girard had children, it might have changed the whole current and tenor of his life. But as he had no child, except a daughter which died in infancy, — no sons to establish in business, no daughters to educate and endow, and really no wife to love, she having spent the last twenty-five years of her life in the Department for the Insane in the Pennsylvania Hospital, — he had nothing to divert all his energies from the accumulation of wealth. It is more than probable that a family of children would have improved the virtues of the man, as, where the ordinary and natural course is broken up, human sympathy is apt to be more or less perverted.

The Revolutionary War drove him from commerce to store-keeping, and *with* his store he opened an establishment for *bottling claret and cider*. At this he made money, but soon

sold out in Philadelphia, and removed to a small farm which he had purchased at *Mount Holly*. Here he still carried on the *bottling* business. A gentleman who knew him at this time describes his personal appearance as any thing but prepossessing. He had but one eye; was ignorant, rough, and vulgar. Young merchants shunned him as a disgrace to the trade; but those who inspected him more closely were inspired with esteem for his worth. He seemed to understand that he was not prepossessing, and often bore taunts with the meekness and patience of a philosopher.

In 1779, as soon as the British left Philadelphia, he removed from *Mount Holly* to the city. He was never a fighting man; and the nearest he was ever known to come in aiding the Revolution was to assist on one occasion in raising a *liberty-pole*. He afterwards adopted the republican principles of Jefferson, and also his scepticism.

The real beginning of his fortune was leasing several buildings for ten years of a Mr. Stiles, with a proviso that he should have them ten years more if he wished to. He rented them low, had the lease renewed, and, near the close of his life, acknowledged that this was really his first *start* in business on the road to wealth.

About 1780 his brother, Capt. John Girard, came to this country; and the two brothers went into business in company. But two men were never less alike; and, although they made money, they were both uncomfortable, and soon separated. John was then found to be worth sixty thousand dollars, and Stephen thirty thousand dollars. But forty-one years after, Stephen died possessed of ten millions.

In 1790 his family trials came to a climax; and his wife was admitted, in May of that year, as a lunatic in the Pennsylvania Hospital. Here she gave birth to her only child, seven months after she was admitted; and here she died, and in the yard of the hospital she was buried. As soon as she was dead, he visited the hospital, gave directions about her funeral; and at the close of the day, when the sun had retired, the remains of the once beautiful Mary Lum were carried forward in silence to their last resting-place. The Friends had the management of



the hospital; and the funeral was conducted after their forms. Girard leaned over the grave, looked upon the coffin, and, as he turned to go away, said to Samuel Coates, "It is well." Upon the death of his wife, Girard gave to the hospital three thousand dollars, having previously given \$1,227.31.

It has always been alleged by some, that she was never insane, and never would have been confined in that institution if Stephen Girard had been a poor man. On the other hand, it is said that such men as Samuel Coates, and others who had charge of the hospital, could never have been bribed.

All the events of her life and death conspire to fill one with sadness. Her portrait, beautiful as she was in early life, can now be seen, and has been seen, among the effects of Girard, at Girard College. One may look at it, and say, Alas! what is human life! She was lovely, doubtless amiable. Had she married some poor man, in all probability she would have been as happy as is the ordinary lot of woman.

Now, freed from his brother, alone in business, Stephen Girard made rapid strides in wealth. His natural elasticity returned, and he prospered in all that he did. He continued the West India trade, in which he had previously been engaged. At the negro insurrection at St. Domingo, vast sums of money and valuables were put on board one of his vessels; and the owners of it, returning to their homes, were butchered by their slaves. Whole families were thus extinguished. It is said that at least fifty thousand dollars came into his possession, for which no heirs could possibly be found. No one blamed him for this; for all admitted that no pains were spared to find the heirs.

Some years after the dissolution of the partnership, John died in the West Indies, and made Stephen his executor. He left several daughters, who were educated by their uncle Stephen; and the same secrecy which characterized all his business matters was still kept up as it respected his nieces. They never knew any thing about their father's estate, and always supposed they were indebted to their uncle for their support. It was surmised that Girard kept them in this ignorance for their good, as he doubtless thought they would spend more,

and be more restless, if they were assured that their father had left them property. When the eldest was married to Mr. Hempwell, he gave her her fortune, which was sufficient to show that her father died rich. It was the motto of Girard to make every one about him wholly submissive to his will. His wife, his nieces, his captains, his clerks, all who had any thing to do with him, must implicitly *obey* him.

In 1791 and '92 he commenced building some splendid ships, the names of which sufficiently indicate his leaning towards French scepticism. They were "Montesquieu," "Helvetius," "Voltaire," and "Rousseau."

Now without a son, as was Absalom, like him, his whole object seemed to be to perpetuate a name. Ambition allows no rival to exist: so it was with him.

"This master passion in his breast,  
Like Aaron's serpent, swallowed up the rest."

His mind was energetic in its actings. His passions were powerful; his desire to live in posterity, all absorbing. His physical nature bowed to smoking, the then, as now, universal altar upon which the Philadelphians do sacrifice. But even this finally yielded in him to the one idea of his life,—the desire to live in posterity. His one ambition smote down every other feeling of his nature.

He pursued riches as an object of his life, with an industry that never tired, and a perseverance that never wavered. But it was not to do as most men do with their wealth. It was not to have a gorgeous palace, a retinue of servants, or a splendid equipage, or to decorate his wife with the gems of Eastern mines, or to adorn himself in purple and fine linen. He never boasted of his wealth, his ships, his bank-stocks. All he ever said upon such matters was, "*My deeds* must be my life. When I am dead, my *actions* must speak for me."

The general tenor of his life was never to be moved by the distress or suffering of his fellow-men. "Friends, relations, old companions, confidential agents, or the general family of mankind, might sicken and die around him, and he would not part with his money to relieve and save one of them, but stood

unmoved, like the eternal rock of death, with the waves of human misery beating at his feet."

His pity, his charity, his benevolence, were all for posterity ; and it will appear in the sequel, that never man succeeded better in this one ambition of his life. . But here it is but just to his memory to say, that, when the yellow-fever prevailed most terrifically in 1793, his habits entirely changed ; and no man in the city of Philadelphia was found more ready to do the kindest and tenderest offices to relieve his fellow-creatures than Stephen Girard.

The great plague in London did not produce more consternation than did this fever in the city of Philadelphia. Most of those who could fled from the city. Men who never smoked before, and women and children, smoked then, as a prevention of the disease ; and a stranger in the city would now judge, as far as smoking is concerned, that the yellow-fever had prevailed ever since, and just at this present raged terribly.

In the midst of such general consternation as I shall not attempt to describe, when none were found to care for or nurse the sick, Stephen Girard offered his personal service, was accepted, and, during the whole reign of terror, performed the most difficult and menial labors that any man could perform. Some of these more than heroic deeds would touch a heart of stone ; but time will not allow me to recount them.

Such were the discrepancies in the life of this wonderful man. The iron foot of the world had been upon him ; and he resisted it with an almost superhuman *stoicism*, and resisted till he threw it off. But nature had given him large and warm affections ; and, as he advanced towards the decline of life, he softened into the mildness of childhood. He had gained the summit of the hill which he strove to ascend ; and, when we take into consideration all the circumstances of his life, we are rather surprised that he gave away so much, than that it was no more.

He was the *Napoleon* of commerce ; and he must be *absolute* in his own way. It was of no manner of use to oppose him. This was seen in the following case. Capt. Guligar had been in his employ for many years as first officer. He sailed in that

capacity to Batavia. Here the captain died. Guligar brought the ship home, having made a good voyage. For some reason, he did not wish to return thither; and he said to Mr. Girard, "If he had no objection, he would prefer taking the command of such a ship, naming her, which Girard was then building for a port in Europe. Girard made no reply, but ordered Robenjot, his chief clerk, to make out the account of Capt. Guligar, and discharged him the same day, saying to him, I do not make voyages for my captains, but for myself." Surely every well-bred man would say he was no gentleman.

He never employed any man from a feeling of regard or friendship, but merely for his own profit; and, when he had paid him his stipulated wages, there all obligation with him ended. *Dollars and cents* were the Alpha and Omega of all his business dealings.

Girard was careful to get every cent that was his due. A gentleman from Europe who visited this country purchased in London a bill of exchange upon Girard to defray his expenses. The bill was duly honored, and *one* cent remained in favor of Girard. It so remained until the eve of his departure from this country, when Girard informed the traveller that he owed him one cent. The gentleman tendered him a fourpence halfpenny ( $6\frac{1}{4}$  cents), and demanded *the change*. Girard replied, that the Government had made no provision for the change of a quarter of a cent. "I demand it," said the traveller. Girard saw he was caught, and joined, for once, in the laugh.

Girard was a just man; but it was according to his own measure of justice. This was seen in his half-bushel. At one time he sold salt by the bushel, and conceiving that his half-bushel was too large, in order to regulate it himself, he took a half-gallon (liquid measure), went to the Delaware, put in the requisite number of gallons, made a chalk-mark, and had it cut down to meet it.

In his personal dress he was extremely frugal, and would wear one coat for five or six years. He was in the habit of boasting of one of his threadbare great-coats, that he had worn it fourteen years. A gentleman who saw him every day for twenty years says, "I never remember to have seen a new arti-



cle of dress upon him but once." He seemed to act upon the maxim, that "birds that sing the best are never gayly dressed."

On one occasion he sold poor hemp to a rope-manufacturer, who had it all made into cordage, which he sold to Girard. Thus, sometimes, was the biter bitten.

He was an early riser, and at one time, when building a large ship, was at the yard some time before any of the workmen. When they came, he broke out in such a tirade of abuse, that the workmen gathered up their tools and departed, saying they would never drive another nail into his ship; and, although Girard relented, they never did.

He was made for business; and he knew how to shorten visits. He gave nothing to beggars, said nothing; and they soon departed, and seldom returned. Of his donations, he was the sole judge. If approached aright, he would give largely; but if dictated to, or entreated unduly, he would not give at all, or even cancel what he had given. This peculiarity is illustrated by the anecdote related in Chap. xxiv. Rev. Mr. Staughton, in his day one of the most prominent Baptist ministers of Philadelphia, did not understand Girard as well as Mr. Coates did. When they were about building their meeting-house in Sansom Street, he called on Mr. Girard for aid. Girard received him, as he did others, coldly but courteously, and presented him a check for five hundred dollars. Dr. Staughton received it with a low bow, but, upon examining it, expressed his astonishment, and added, "*Only* five hundred dollars, Mr. Girard! Surely you will not give us less than a thousand dollars." — "Let me see the check, Mr. Staughton," said Girard. "Perhaps I have made one mistake." The doctor returned the check. With the utmost *sang froid* Girard tore it into fragments, observing, "Well, Mr. Staughton, if you will not have what I give, I will give nothing." The doctor left him exceedingly mortified.

He would give no more to one sect than to another. He gave to build churches merely for the improvement of the city, not to multiply churches; for he never visited them. The Methodists wished to build a church in Tenth Street, just north of Chestnut. Thomas Harking, a merchant, and a near

neighbor of Girard, called upon him, and urged his suit for aid in very modest terms. Girard replied, "I approve of your object," and presented him a check for five hundred dollars. The Methodist society failed; and the house was bought by the Episcopalians, who wished to alter it into the splendid Gothic house, now called St. Stephen's Church. A committee waited upon Mr. Girard, told him of their plan, and asked his aid. He gave them a check for five hundred dollars. They were disappointed, and said, "Why, you gave the Methodists five hundred dollars for their little church, and we are going to build a more splendid edifice; and you surely will give us something commensurate with the grandeur of our design. Have you not omitted a cipher?" They returned the check, asking him to make it five thousand. Girard tore it in pieces, and added, "I will not give you one cent. Your society is rich. The Methodists are poor. You remind me of the rich man in the gospel. He would pull down, and build greater. Profit by his fate. Gentlemen, I have nothing to give for your splendid church."

These anecdotes illustrate his character. He was inflexibly obstinate; and at this period of his life so morose and invincible was he, that few ventured to approach him for aid. A benevolent old widow, however, once ventured to do so for some private charity. She was one of those charitable ones who are ever doing good to others, and in this case, having exhausted her other means, went to Girard. She found him at home, but engaged. She waited patiently full two hours, and then saw him, and related all the minute circumstances of the case. Girard, as she proceeded, began to walk the room; and when, at length, she found a little pause, and looked him in the face, expecting to see the tear of compassion in his eye, without a throb of sympathy or agitation, he said, "If you will promise never to trouble me again, I will give you something. Will you promise me never to come again?" She replied, "Why, Mr. Girard, I will, if you say so." — "*Well, then, never come again, and I will give you thirty dollars.*" She kept her word, and never after asked charity for any one of Stephen Girard.

The Girard Bank was one of the important works of his life, and that by which he was, perhaps, the most useful to his

fellow-men. This bank originated in a *speculation* in the stocks of the United States bank, called in those days, familiarly, *Nick Biddles*, or *Old Nicks*. It was just before the old charter expired, when Gen. Jackson, the only man in America who had the daring to do so, peremptorily refused to renew the charter. At this crisis Girard established his bank, which was of incalculable value to commerce, and a large means of his wealth.

An old Quaker has given the following anecdotes: A man who had just set up in the hardware business, and who had been a clerk where Girard had traded, applied to him for a share of his patronage, which he bestowed upon him. And when the young man brought in his bill, Girard said, "Casks of nails, which I was offered elsewhere so and so, you have charged so much more for, and you must take it off." — "I can't do it," said the young merchant. "You *must* do it," said Girard. "I can not and will not," said the merchant. Girard rushed out of the store, apparently in a rage, but soon afterwards sent a check for the whole bill. The young man began to relent, and to say to himself, that "perhaps he was offered the nails at the price he said, and his trade would have been of great value to me. But it is all over now. I am sorry I did not reduce the bill, and get it out of him on something else."

By and by Girard came again, and gave him another order. The young man was very courteous, and said, "I am almost sorry I did not reduce your bill." — "*Reduce a bill*," said Girard. "If you had done it, I would never have traded with you again."

A ropemaker wanted two packages of hemp; but he had only money to pay for one. He went to Girard, and told him his wish. "No," said Girard: "I will let you have what you can pay for, and no more." The man paid for one package. "Where shall I send it?" said Girard. "You need not *send* it. I will come and take it to-night, after work." Accordingly he went with his wheelbarrow to get it. Girard saw him take it, and, stepping up to him, said, "I will trust you for any amount of hemp that you want."

He employed a man to do the iron-work for one of his large

stores, agreeing to pay him daily, as he put it up, at so much a pound for the iron doors. The man went on, and called for no pay until he had done. Girard said, "I won't pay your bill: you have cheated me in the weight of the doors." The man said, "I would have weighed them before you; but you see now I can't." — "But you shall," said Girard; and, calling his men and carpenters, he said, "Take out those doors!" It was done, and, upon weighing them, they fell short considerably. Thus, though at great expense to himself, he would not be cheated; and he was always sure to gain his point.

Girard was never heard to speak of or magnify his wealth. He was a wonderful exhibition of a silent, active man of business, a perfect contrast to the prattling, boasting, scheming, empty pretender. Flocks of such parrots fell around him every year without exciting any emotion, save that of silent contempt. Like the bird of yore, his course was always upward, and certainly onward to his fixed goal, — the accumulation of wealth to gratify his ambition.

The Philadelphians, generally, never understood Girard. They saw his littleness, his miserable exterior, the deformity and angularity of his person; but they knew little of the real object of his life. His plans were too big for them to comprehend. Apparently but the mere *shell* of a man, his mind soared to a great height, of noble virtue and benevolence towards those who had none to care for them.

In his grand plan of an *Orphan College*, there was an effort to correct the evils of society by educating poor children. His far-seeing mind would as soon have thought of erecting one of his vast granite stores by laying the first stone *aloft* in the air, as to correct social evils by commencing at the wrong end. Charity might furnish a momentary relief by donating to the poor. But he saw it was not money they needed to make them useful and happy, but education, and habits of industry.

The man who judges of Girard by the abstract, or upon some one general principle, will never appreciate his benevolent motives, and deep-laid scheme for benefiting the race, for elevating and improving society in Republican Government.



From the day that he touched our American shores, when a *cabin-boy* at ten years of age, until the day he died, in his eighty-second year, in a back-room of his humble dwelling in Water Street, he pursued his quiet, unobtrusive course of making money with the grand end of utility to his fellow-men in view. His last Will is a practical illustration of his noble life. His plan was as far superior to that of the benefactors who give their treasure to endow an *alms-house* or a jail, as is the soaring flight of the eagle to that of the will-o-the-wisp. In the former case, he opened a perennial fountain, sending forth streams to fertilize, in a moral sense, our land, and to improve and bless society until the end of time: in the latter, he would only have held out a premium to crime, and a temptation to laziness.

Suppose he had endowed with eight or ten millions some family, and thus established an aristocracy? But when he gave the greatest part of his property to promote the education, morality, and general well-being of the young, of the poor unfortunate orphan-child, who shall dare condemn that charity? Admit, that, in accumulating his immense fortune, he had in view the transmission of his own name to coming ages (and it is very probable this was a main object with him); yet who ought not to rejoice that he took this mode of letting the use of the money flow out to elevate and benefit the poor orphans?

The Will of Stephen Girard is one of the most carefully planned and well-drawn documents on record. It shows very conclusively that the one great object of his life was to endow the Girard College, and, while he thus did good to the world, to perpetuate his name to the latest posterity.

The following clause in his Will — “I enjoin and require that no ecclesiastic, missionary, or minister, of any sect whatsoever, shall ever hold or exercise any station or duty whatsoever in the said college; nor shall any such person be admitted for any purpose, or as a visitor, within the premises appropriated to said college” — has given a very different phase to the Will of the donor from what would otherwise have been given. But no one can say that he had not a right to give his bounty upon such conditions as he pleased.

The above-quoted article of the Will is immediately followed by this explanation: "In making this restriction, I do not mean to cast any reflection upon any sect or person whatsoever; but as there is such a multitude of sects, and such a diversity of opinion among them, I desire to keep the tender minds of the orphans who are to derive advantage from this bequest, free from the excitement which clashing doctrines and sectarian controversy are so apt to produce." Instead of finding fault with his Will, Christians ought to be more charitable, and less sectarian.

While the old man lay dead in his house in Water Street, the public out of doors were curious to learn what he had done with his money; but a greater curiosity raged among a smaller number within the house. They were the relatives of the deceased. They invaded the cellars, and, bringing up bottles of the old man's choice wine, kept up a continual carousal. They surrounded Mr. Duane, who was present at Girard's death, and remained to direct his funeral. They demanded to know if there was a Will. To silence their indecent clamor, he told them there was, and that he was one of the executors. On hearing this, the desire to learn its contents rose to a fury. In vain the executors reminded them that the Will would not be opened until after the funeral. They threatened legal proceedings if the Will were not immediately produced; and at length, to avoid public scandal, the executors consented to have it read. In the presence of these affectionate relatives, assembled in the parlor of the house in which their benefactor lay, the Will was taken from the safe by one of the executors.

As he opened it, before he commenced reading, he looked over the top of the document at the company before him. No artist that ever held a brush could depict the passion of curiosity, the frenzy of expectation, expressed in that group of pallid faces. Every individual among them expected to leave the apartment the conscious possessor of millions; for no one had dreamed of the probability of his leaving the bulk of his estate to the public. If they had ever heard of his saying that no one should be a gentleman on his money, they had forgotten or disbelieved it. The opening paragraphs of the Will all

tended to confirm their hopes; since the bequests to existing institutions were of small amount. But the reader soon reached the part of the Will which assigned to ladies and gentlemen present such trifling sums as five thousand dollars, ten thousand, twenty thousand; and he arrived ere long at the sections which disposed of millions for the benefit of great cities and poor children. Some of them made not the slightest attempt to conceal their disappointment and disgust. Men were there who had married with a view to share the wealth of Girard, and had been waiting years for his death. Women were there who had looked to that event as the beginning of their enjoyment of life. The imagination of the reader must supply the details of a scene which we might think dishonored human nature, if we could believe that human nature was meant to be subjected to such a strain. It had been better, perhaps, if the rich man, in his own lifetime, had made his kindred partake of his superabundance, especially as he had nothing else that he could share with them. They attempted, on grounds that seem utterly frivolous, to break the Will, and employed the most eminent counsel to conduct their cause, but without effect. They did, however, succeed in getting the property acquired after the execution of the Will; which Girard, disregarding the opinion of Mr. Duane, attempted, by a postscript, to include in the Will. "It will not stand," said the lawyer. "Yes, it will," said Girard. Mr. Duane, knowing his man, was silent; and the courts have since decided that his opinion was correct.

Girard College was designed by its founder for the gratuitous instruction and support of destitute orphans. It is one of the most beautiful structures erected in modern times, when considered only as a work of art; and when regarded in its beneficial results to the cause of education, and as a monument of private munificence, it surpasses any thing in the United States, and perhaps in the world. The corner-stone was laid on the 4th of July, 1833. The buildings were completed 1847; and the institution went into operation Jan. 1, 1848, with one hundred pupils. The general plan of the main building is that of a Greek temple; and the order of architecture of the exterior is the Corinthian.

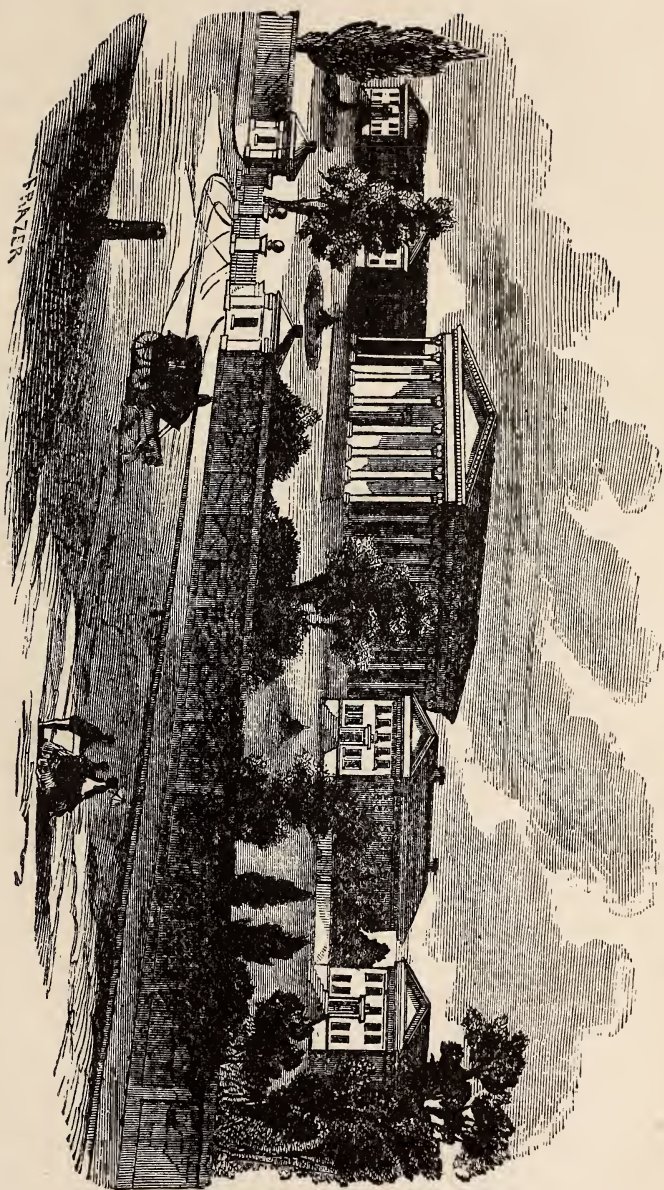
William H. Allen, LL.D., President of the College, has kindly furnished the following statement: "Applicants must be poor, white, male orphans (fathers) between six and ten years of age. Orphans born in the city of Philadelphia must be received before others. Next, those born in other parts of Pennsylvania. Thirdly, those born in the city of New York. Fourthly, those born in New Orleans. Heretofore all vacancies have been filled by orphans born in this city and State. The average time spent in the college is eight years. The number now present and under instruction is five hundred and fifty. Cost of board, clothing, lodging, and instruction, including books, stationery, apparatus, care of grounds, and repair of buildings, is about three hundred dollars for every boy each year.

"The value at the present time of the Girard estate, of which the city of Philadelphia is trustee, can only be estimated by the income derived from it. The revenue last year was upwards of seven hundred thousand dollars. I suppose this would represent, or be the exponent of, a value of from ten to twelve millions.

"Hon. Joel Jones was elected the first president, and held the office about a year and a half. I was president from Jan. 1, 1850, to Jan. 1, 1863 (thirteen years), and from Nov. 15, 1867, to the present time; in all, a little over twenty-one years. The presidency, after I resigned (Jan. 1, 1863), was filled by Richard Somer Smith, until Nov. 15, 1867, when I was re-elected."

I have given so much space to a sketch of the life of Stephen Girard and of his Orphan College, because no man has done so much for the welfare of Pennsylvania, and especially for the city of Philadelphia, as he through his munificent donation.





GIRARD COLLEGE.

## CHAPTER XXX.

### PHILADELPHIA.

Advantages of Philadelphia—Building and Loan Associations—Consolidation of the City—Topography of the City—Its Buildings—Manufactures—London Coffee-House—Carpenter's Hall—State House—Independence Square—United States Mint—Eastern State Penitentiary—County Prison—Houses of Refuge—Wills Hospital—Deaf-and-Dumb Institution—Institution for the Blind—Blockley Almshouse—Wagner Institute—Polytechnic College—Franklin Institute—Guaranty Trust and Safe Deposit Company—Hotels—Masonic Temple—Academy of Natural Sciences—City Hall—Callow-hill Street Bridge—Water-Works—Laurel Hill Cemetery—The Park.

WHAT ancient Jerusalem was to the Jew, what Mecca is to the Mussulman, what Paris is to France, and Boston to New England, Philadelphia is to Pennsylvania. Hither are brought her coal, her iron, her oil, and her agricultural productions, the latter especially rendering her markets the best and richest in the Union. Here, too, are brought the products of foreign climes. Here congregate her best artists, manufacturers, merchants, jurists, statesmen, and wisest philosophers.

The laying-out of the city has already been described. The place selected by her wise Founder was well suited for the site of a great city, which was constructed upon a grand scale, in which no improvement could well be made, except that some of its streets are too narrow. Especially is this the case with Chestnut Street, the great promenade avenue of the city. Unlike Boston, where half the land on which the city is built has been rescued from the Ocean, Philadelphia had an excellent territory on which to build, and enough of it. Unlike Boston, again, where millions have been spent to straighten and widen streets, Philadelphia, having been properly laid out,

has probably never expended a thousand dollars for that purpose. Her two great streets, Broad and Market, — the former running north and south, the latter east and west, — were the glory and beauty of the city, which have both been marred by the erection of the new county edifice. Another of the excellences in the plan of Philadelphia consisted in reserving breathing-spaces for her population, which comprise her numerous ornamental squares, such as Rittenhouse, Independence, Franklin, Logan, and others. Under the large and shady trees which adorn these squares, her citizens find comfort and shelter from the scorching rays of the summer sun, and are fanned by gentle zephyrs.

Another advantage which Philadelphia possesses over other cities consists in her having more dwelling-houses, according to her population, than any other large city in the United State. Although her population is less than that of New York, yet her dwellings considerably outnumber those of that metropolis; and while, in that city, several families occupy the same house, in Philadelphia nearly every family has a house to itself. This happy state of things resulted from the plan adopted early in the settlement of the city, called *ground-rents*. The plan was this: The proprietors at first, and afterwards societies called “Building and Loan Associations,” rented the land for building-lots. The person who rented the lot was to pay so much to the owner, annually, as rent-money; and, when he was able to pay for the land, he was to have it for a certain sum stipulated in the contract. Thus every individual who could raise a small amount was enabled to secure a home of his own. After the proprietary government ceased in the Province, some of the large land-owners pursued the same course. Then followed the plan of associations with the above name. They were not, however, building associations in any respect, as they erected no houses, but simply loaned money. They have been well termed “Banks without vaults, moneyed concerns without expensive buildings or highly-paid officers; and no stockholders, aside from depositors, stand ready to devour the lion’s share of the profits. There is no great fund of money to tempt the thieving president, or the burglars, his brothers.



A two hundred dollar safe will hold the company's assets and books; and a slender bank-account represents the capital." Each depositor becomes a shareholder by paying one dollar a month. The association becomes virtually to them a kind of savings bank, in which they place entire confidence. The middling class of people, both men and women, become shareholders in these associations. The money thus paid in monthly by the depositors is freely offered to the highest bidder, whether man or woman. Any member can borrow on his share, if he has been connected with the association but a single month. The system is carried on with great simplicity. Vast numbers of the houses that line the streets of Philadelphia have been erected by people of small means, through the instrumentality of these associations. This plan has generally worked well, and contributed largely to the comfort and health of the citizens of Philadelphia. In these days of extravagance and failure, when thieves creep into all bodies, occasionally one of these associations, through mismanagement, has become bankrupt; but, in the main, they have been safe and successful.

Philadelphia, as above described, steadily increased in growth until the limits fixed in the original charter had been overleaped, and the portions of country beyond filled with beautiful residences. Soon these became separate municipalities, possessed of regular charters, and entitled to all the rights and privileges of the original city, which was bounded on the north by Vine Street, and on the south by South Street, reaching from river to river. One of these new cities was on the south, divided from old Philadelphia by South Street; others on the north again, separated from the old city by Vine Street. This was unfortunate for all these cities, and led to many difficulties, mobs, and fightings, as the law-breakers in one city had only to cross a street into the next, when they became beyond the reach of the police of the municipality where the offence was committed. These quarrels prevailed especially among the firemen of the different cities, and gave an unenviable reputation to Philadelphia, especially abroad, as being a disorderly and mobocratic city.

These evils were remedied by Act of the Assembly, Jan. 1,



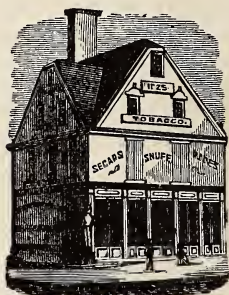
1854, which extended the boundaries of the city, so that they embraced all the other cities, suburbs, and districts in the county of Philadelphia. The present city extends from Darby Creek to Poquesink Creek, and is bounded on the north-east by Bucks County, on the north-west by Montgomery County, and on the south-west by Delaware County. The territory included within these boundaries comprises one hundred and twenty-nine and one-eighth square miles, or about eighty-three thousand square acres. It is twenty-three and a half miles in length; and its average breadth is about five and a half miles. Many creeks flow from it into the large rivers, as Pennypack, Poquesink, Frankford, Darby, Cobbs, and Wissahickon. Respecting the beautiful scenery and original inhabitants upon the latter, novelists have given us a number of romances. These streams afford much water-power, which has been utilized by many industrial establishments. The topography of the city is much diversified. The southern portions are nearly level, while the northern abound in hills and dales. The population of the city in 1780 was but thirty thousand, and it is now estimated at over eight hundred thousand. The assessed valuation of taxable property is more than six hundred million dollars, affording more than ten million dollars annual income. Its paved streets would reach more than six hundred miles in a straight line, and are lighted by ten thousand lamps, and underlaid by one thousand miles of gas and water mains.

To a stranger arriving in Philadelphia, the buildings present a very peculiar and unique appearance. His first idea would be, that they are magnificent and splendid police-stations, or miniature prisons. They are chiefly marble fronts, or of pressed brick, especially up to the second story, with marble steps. The windows have strong, heavy wooden shutters painted white, which are so constructed as to be securely barred on the inside. Thus the peculiarity of the exterior is more than compensated by the safety and protection afforded to the inmates against burglars and robbers. No city in the Union opposes such substantial barriers to the nightly depredations of these light-fingered and gentlemanly assassins as does Philadelphia. A short stay in the city convinces a stranger,

that the dwellings which line our long, straight streets, are very beautiful, as well as safe and commodious.

Philadelphia is essentially a manufacturing city; nearly every thing that can be produced by manual labor or machinery being made here. Especially is this the case with all the articles in which coal and iron are brought into requisition. More umbrellas and parasols are manufactured in Philadelphia than in all the rest of the United States. The numerous artistical and mechanical industries are a chief source of the wealth and rapid increase of her population, and account for her vast unprecedented number of houses, which are added to at the rate of six thousand annually. Vast quantities of woollen and cotton goods are produced in this city.

Having made the preceding remarks respecting the general characteristics of the city, this is the proper place to describe



COFFEE-HOUSE.

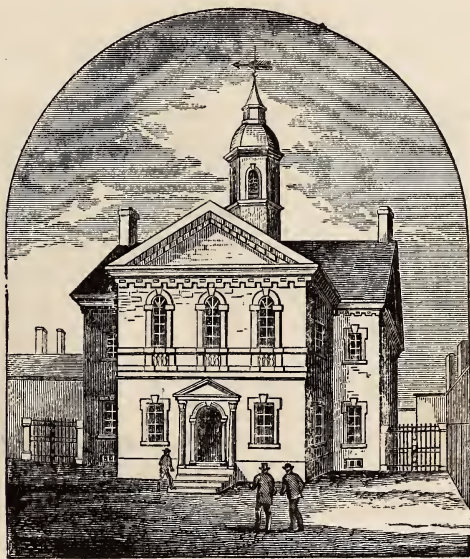
some of her public and associational edifices, ancient and modern, with Illustrations. Among the former is the LONDON COFFEE-HOUSE, on the corner of Front and Market Streets. It was erected in 1702, and occupied as a public house in 1754, and for many years was a noted place of resort for strangers. It was used as an auction-mart for horses, carriages, produce, &c.; and even men, women, and children

were sold into slavery here. It is now occupied, the lower story as a tobacco-store, and the upper as a barber's shop.

CARPENTERS' HALL, a plain, unobtrusive building, which must ever be cherished as a sacred relic, from being the place where the first Congress of the United Colonies was held, — that meeting of all those great souls who were then beginning to be fired with plans and resolves by which the yoke of British tyranny should be forever removed from the necks of our oppressed forefathers, — was originally erected by the Association of House Carpenters, in 1770. It is of brick, two stories in height, surmounted by a cupola. The façade is the Roman style of architecture. Its principal entrance leads directly to

the Assembly Room, in which Congress first met. The Carpenters' Association still retain it as their property, refusing either to sell it, or have any alteration made in it.

THE STATE HOUSE, OR INDEPENDENCE HALL, is, and must always be to every true American, a consecrated place; for it was here that the immortal Declaration of Independence was passed by Congress, July 4, 1776. This building was commenced in 1729, and completed in 1734. The two wings were erected in 1740. Although it has many times been renovated, in general appearance it is the same as in 1776. It was in the east room of



CARPENTERS' HALL.

the first floor that this Declaration was drawn up and signed; and some of the incidents connected with it have already been stated in a former chapter. The west room, on the same floor, was for many years occupied by the Court of Common Pleas, but is now a museum of national relics, among which are the ale-mug of David Paul Jones; a china cup, with Washington's effigy made previous to Braddock's defeat; a flag of the First Regiment Pennsylvania Militia, lost and recaptured at Brandywine. James Logan's chair, first owned by William Penn, on



which is inscribed, "Fruitful of recollections: sit and muse;" the chairs of the colonial justices; Franklin's bedside table; relics of the battle of Germantown; the original stamp imposed under the celebrated "Stamp Act" of Great Britain, in March, 1765; and William Penn's original charter of Philadelphia. In the next story is the "Lobby," which in colonial days echoed with the mirth and good cheer of many a feast. The large room toward the west was occupied by the first Senate. The rooms toward the east, fronting Chestnut Street, were used by the Committees of Congress of 1776, in preparing their



INDEPENDENCE HALL.

various reports. The Hall, in which the Declaration was signed, still presents, as far as has been possible to retain it, its original appearance. The walls are embellished by the portraits of the signers of the Declaration; and the portraits of these historic patriots are perpetuated by the skill of the eminent artists, — Stuart, Peel, Inman, and Sully. In a dais at the eastern end stands John Hancock's chair, and the table on which the immortal document was signed; the north-west corner contains Rush's fine statue of Washington; and from the centre of the ceiling hangs the old chandelier used by the



Continental Congress. It is hoped, that, when the new county buildings are finished, the whole of this ancient edifice, purified from its present desecration, as the Temple of Jerusalem was by the expulsion of the money-changers, will be restored to its primitive simplicity and grandeur, and preserved forever, not



LIBERTY BELL.

to Philadelphia only, but to the nation, as a valued relic of her pristine glory and patriotism.

The famous old bell, cast, and imported from England in 1752, purposely for the State House, was cracked in testing it. Isaac Norris, a member of the Colonial Assembly, recast it, and inscribed upon it, "Proclaim liberty throughout all the land, unto all the inhabitants thereof." This old bell did, on the

afternoon of the memorable 4th of July, 1776, proclaim that liberty which the Colonial Assembly had just declared. Subsequently this bell was fractured, and is now sacredly preserved as an invaluable relic of our early national existence, in the very room where the Declaration of Independence was signed.

Upon the eastern wall of the building is a tablet with this inscription:—

IN THIS BUILDING MET THE  
FIRST SENATE,  
AND THE  
FIRST HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES  
OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA;  
AND HEREIN GEORGE WASHINGTON WAS INAUGURATED  
PRESIDENT, MARCH 4, 1793.  
AND CLOSED HIS OFFICIAL CAREER;  
WHEN, HEREIN ALSO,  
JOHN ADAMS WAS INAUGURATED THE  
SECOND PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES,  
MARCH 4, 1797.

INDEPENDENCE SQUARE, in the rear of the State House, derived its name from the fact that here, on the 8th of July, 1776, the Declaration of Independence was read to a vast crowd of the citizens, by John Nixon, amid the loud shouts and plaudits of the people, who, roused to the highest pitch of patriotic enthusiasm, rushed into the building, tore down the King's Arms, and burned them in public, thus destroying every emblem of British authority.

In the burying-ground of Christ Church are interred many of the distinguished men of that day, among whom are Peyton Randolph, President of the First Continental Congress, Francis Hopkinson, and Major-Gen. Charles Lee, whose final resting-place cannot now be found. In the portion of the ground on Second Street may be seen the tombs of Robert Morris and Bishop White. At the corner of Arch and Fifth Streets is the resting-place of Benjamin Franklin, which was not visible from



FRANKLIN'S GRAVE.

the street until 1858, when a portion of the brick wall was removed, and an iron railing substituted. The inscription upon the tomb is according to the direction of his will, which was as follows: "I wish to be buried by the side of my wife, if it may be, and that a marble slab shall be made by Chambers, six feet long, four feet wide, plain, with only a small moulding around, and this inscription:—

"BENJAMIN	}	FRANKLIN."
AND		
DEBORAH		
178—		

The stone is carved, as he desired, save the date, which is 1790. The companion-stone to that upon the philosopher's grave covers the remains of his daughter Sarah, and her husband, Richard Bache. After the death of Franklin, this epitaph, written by himself, was found among his papers:—

"THE BODY  
OF  
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN  
PRINTER  
(LIKE THE COVER OF AN OLD BOOK,  
ITS CONTENTS TORN OUT,  
AND STRIPPED OF ITS LETTERING AND GILDING,)  
LIES HERE, FOOD FOR WORMS;  
BUT THE WORK SHALL NOT BE LOST,  
FOR IT WILL (AS HE BELIEVES,) APPEAR ONCE MORE  
IN A NEW AND ELEGANT EDITION,  
REVISED AND CORRECTED  
BY  
THE AUTHOR."

This would have been used, if his will had not provided for another.

**THE UNITED STATES MINT.** The nation has but one mint. This is located in this city, on Chestnut Street, near Broad. All the other so-called mints are merely branches of this one. The Act of Congress, establishing this institution, was passed April 2, 1792. In 1829, an additional act was passed, by which its operations were much enlarged; and in that year the corner-



stone of the present building was laid. It is built of brick faced with marble ashlar, and is of the Ionic order, copied from a Grecian temple at Athens. It has a front of a hundred and twenty-two feet, divided into a portico sixty-two feet long; and two wings thirty feet each. The portico is supported by six beautiful pillars, twenty-five feet high, and three feet in diameter. The act creating the mint, among other provisions, authorized the appointment of a Director as its chief officer, whose duty it was to direct and control its operations, manage its affairs, and superintend the officers and persons therein employed. In accordance with this provision, immediately upon its organization in July, 1792, Pres. Washington appointed David Rittenhouse, LL.D., as its first Director. The second Director of the Mint was Henry William Saussure, a native of South Carolina. Its third Director was Elias Boudinot, LL.D., born in Philadelphia May 2, 1740. The fourth Director was Robert Patterson, LL.D. He was born in the province of Ulster, Ireland, May 30, 1743. The fifth Director was Samuel Moore, M.D. He was born at Deerfield, Cumberland County, N.J., the 8th of February, 1774. The sixth Director was Robert Maskell Patterson, M.D., born in Philadelphia, March 3, 1787. The seventh Director was Dr. George Eckert. The eighth Director was Thomas M. Pettit, appointed the 4th of April, 1853, who died the 30th of May of that year. The ninth Director was Hon. James Ross Snowden. The tenth Director was James Pollock, LL.D., who still fills the office, though there has been an interregnum since his first appointment. A beautiful book was presented to the author, entitled "The Washington Medals," by Hon. James Ross Snowden. "It was proposed, during the administration of Washington, to place his effigy on the coins of the United States; and with that view, in 1791 and 1792, before the mint was regularly in operation, several experimental dies were prepared, with his portrait upon the obverse or principal side. It is said, that, when several specimens of that description were exhibited to him for his inspection and approbation, he indignantly ordered the dies to be destroyed, and expressed his desire that there should be placed on the coins an ideal head of Liberty. Al-



though the head of Washington does not appear upon the coinage, there seems a disposition everywhere to supply this omission, by placing it on a great variety of medals, medalettes, and tokens. The legends and inscriptions show, that for him, the vocabulary of affection and gratitude is well-nigh exhausted. The following are a few examples: 'The Hero of Freedom;' 'the Father of Constitutional Liberty;' 'the Pride of his Country;' 'the Ornament of Human Nature;' 'Millions yet unborn will venerate his memory;' 'Providence caused him to be childless, that the nation might call him Father;' 'Time increases his fame;' 'He is in glory, the world in tears.'"<sup>1</sup>

In describing the State institutions in a former chapter, we reserved some which the State owned or has aided, because they were located in Philadelphia. Principal among these is the —

EASTERN STATE PENITENTIARY, situated on Coates Street. It occupies an area of eleven acres, and is surrounded by a wall thirty feet high. The front is in castellated style, built of dressed stone, and contains the apartments of the officers of the prison. In the centre of the grounds is an octagonal building, from which radiate wings, with a row of cells on each side, and passage-ways which traverse the whole length of each wing.

THE PENNSYLVANIA INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB is located at the corner of Broad and Pine Streets. It was established in 1820, in Market Street, above Pine; the Rt. Rev. William White, D.D., being one of its originators. It was incorporated by the Legislature in 1821, and a certain sum was allowed for the students annually received. In 1824 the present site was purchased; and the original building, much enlarged, was completed in 1825. Two additional wings were erected in 1854. Its front is of cut stone, with a portico supported by pillars of the Tuscan order, and two wings, giving a length of two hundred feet on Broad Street. It has fine school and working rooms, and is surrounded by spacious yards.

It has a principal, thirteen instructors, a matron and two assistants, a steward, superintendent of shoe-shop, also one of tailor's shop. This is one of the neatest and best conducted institutions either in Philadelphia or in the State.

<sup>1</sup> James Ross Snowden's Washington Medals, p. 14.

THE PENNSYLVANIA INSTITUTION FOR THE INSTRUCTION OF THE BLIND, founded in 1833, is at the corner of Twentieth and Race Streets. It is a plain, large, and commodious edifice, and has recently had many improvements made in its interior. There is an average attendance of nearly two hundred pupils, many of them from other States, who pay liberally for their support. There are literary, musical, and work departments; and pupils are instructed according to their bent. They have a cabinet organ and sixteen pianos; and the Wednesday afternoon concerts exhibit the great skill of the students.

The officers are a principal, prefect, two principal instructors in literature and science, with eight assistants; one principal instructor in music, with seven assistants; a master and mistress of handicraft, with six assistants and two saleswomen; a matron and assistant; two attending physicians, and dentist.

THE PHILADELPHIA COUNTY PRISON is in the Moyamensing district, and is in the Tudor style of English Gothic. Its front is of Quincy granite, and exceedingly massive. Adjoining it is the female department, with a front of sandstone in the Egyptian style. The male department has four hundred and eight separate cells, and the female one hundred, besides an infirmary, and apartments for the keepers. It is used for a penitentiary, as well as a county-jail and work-house.

HOUSES OF REFUGE. These consist of two buildings, furnished with most of the improvements desirable in such edifices, situated near Girard College. One is for white children, and will accommodate five hundred: the other, for colored, has a capacity for two hundred and fifty.

WILLS HOSPITAL, in a recess from the line of Race Street, looks upon the south front of Logan Square. It originated from a donation of \$108,396, by James Wills, to found an institution for the cure of diseases of the eye and limbs. The building was erected in 1834, is of stone, forty by eighty feet. Since its erection, 51,440 patients have been treated. Its location is admirable, and it has fine grounds.

PENNSYLVANIA HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE has already been described in a former chapter. It is within the chartered limits of the city, and therefore we here insert the cut.

BLOCKLEY ALMSHOUSE is south of the University of Pennsylvania, consisting of four buildings, each five hundred feet long, and three stories high, so arranged as to enclose a square. Its main front faces the south-east, and has an elegant portico of the Tuscan order. It has a well-cultivated farm of one hundred and thirty acres. The inmates average three thousand; six hundred being in the insane department, and two hundred in the children's asylum. This institution costs the city of Philadelphia four hundred thousand dollars annually.



INSANE ASYLUM.

This vast number of paupers, costing the city this immense sum, is chiefly manufactured by and graduated from the dram-shops of Philadelphia.

There are several other benevolent and charitable institutions in the city, as, PRESTON RETREAT, HOUSE OF INDUSTRY, WIDOWS' ASYLUM, ORPHANS' SOCIETY OF PHILADELPHIA, TRAINING SCHOOL FOR FEEBLE-MINDED CHILDREN, &c.

The WAGNER FREE INSTITUTE OF SCIENCE well deserves a place among other educational and technological institutions.



Prof. Wagner is a gentleman of varied talent, great experience, and benevolent proclivities. A pupil in his youth of Stephen Girard, he afterwards travelled abroad, visiting Europe, Asia, Africa, and distant portions of America, during which time he collected vast quantities of minerals, shells, plants, and organic remains. On his return to Philadelphia, he conceived the plan of a scientific college, and commenced courses of lectures in a building on his own grounds. Having lectured here for several years, he, with other scientific men, completed his plan for a popular institution, which was incorporated by the State Legislature in 1854. The city recognized the importance of the movement, and placed at his disposal the spacious rooms of the Spring Garden Hall, where the Institute remained for four years. He has since erected a college edifice, to which he has contributed his collections, instruments, and several lots and houses, thus richly endowing the college. Six free courses of lectures are delivered every week, by six professors; Prof. Wagner himself occupying the chair of geology and paleontology.

THE POLYTECHNIC COLLEGE fronts the new City Hall, and is an elegant and spacious edifice. It is a private institution, established upon the plan of the industrial colleges of France and Germany, and has achieved a brilliant and well-merited success. The late Matthew Newkirk, one of the most successful "merchant-princes" of Philadelphia, was, for several years, both the patron and president of this College.

FRANKLIN INSTITUTE, the last to be named, but by no means the least, of the scientific and mechanical institutions, is on the east side of Seventh Street, above Chestnut. It was incorporated March 30, 1824, and named for the eminent statesman and philosopher, Benjamin Franklin. It was exceedingly prosperous from its commencement. Within a year after its incorporation, it had one thousand sixty-five members; and within two years it erected a building sixty feet front by one hundred feet deep, with ample accommodations for the Institute. In the second year of its existence, it commenced "The Franklin Journal," a volume of three hundred and eighty pages, which is said to be the oldest mechanical paper extant



in America. The course of instruction from its early start, consisted of regular lectures on chemistry, mechanics, and natural history. At that early period it established two schools, — one for mathematics, the other for drawing, both of which were well patronized. The first annual exhibition was only measurably successful; but the second gave a display of American manufactures of such a variety of splendid, tasteful, and well-executed goods, as had never before been exhibited on such an occasion in this country.

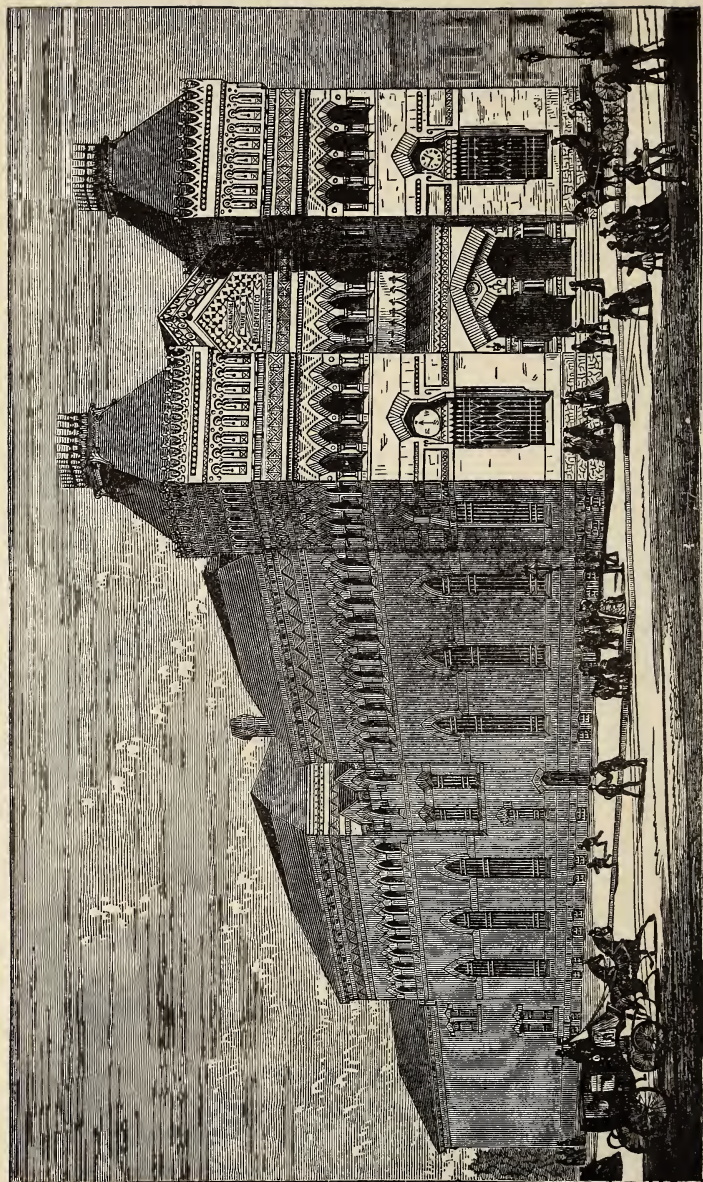
THE GUARANTY TRUST AND SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANY has a beautiful building on Chestnut Street, next above the Bank of North America. It has a front of fifty-seven feet, and a depth of one hundred and ninety-eight feet; is built of pressed brick, ornamented with Ohio stone and colored tiles. It was erected in 1874, and combines novelty and beauty of design with great security against fire and theft.

THE NEW YORK MUTUAL LIFE-INSURANCE COMPANY have a magnificent granite edifice on the north-west corner of Tenth and Chestnut Streets. The building is perfect in every respect; is entirely fireproof, and admirably arranged for its purposes. All the offices of the corporation are within its walls.

THE EXCHANGE is one of the old buildings, and the city long since should have had a new and better one.

HOTELS. The COLONNADE, the last erected, at the corner of Chestnut and Fifteenth Streets; the BINGHAM, at the corner of Eleventh and Market Streets; the venerable MERCHANTS, on Fourth Street, below Arch; the AMERICAN, fronting Independence Hall; the GIRARD, at the corner of Ninth and Chestnut Streets; the CONTINENTAL, on the opposite corner of the same streets, with several others, — are all substantial buildings, and admirably managed, at which travellers may always find good homes. For several years, the last-named stood at the head of the Philadelphia hotels.

The MASONIC TEMPLE, directly north of the new City Hall, thought to be the most imposing building of the order in this country, was erected in 1873; and it was judged that at least fifty thousand of the order were present at its dedication. Perhaps in no State of the Union has the Masonic fraternity been



GUARANTY TRUST AND SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANY BUILDING.



more prosperous than in the State of Pennsylvania. This imposing structure has two fronts,—the west one on Broad Street; the south, on Filbert. They are unlike any thing else in the



MUTUAL LIFE-INSURANCE COMPANY OF NEW YORK.

city, both being perfect specimens of Norman architecture. It is impossible to express in words the massive magnificence which the windows and lofty stories, the recesses and towers, of

this building exhibit. The stone of which it is built was so thoroughly and accurately quarried, and every part made to fit so exactly to its destined place, that it might almost be said of it, as was of Solomon's Temple, "There was neither hammer nor axe, nor any tool of iron, heard in the house while it was in building." The foundations for it were sunk forty feet below the pavement; and the grand tower is two hundred and fifty feet high. The temple is one hundred and fifty feet long (one Philadelphia publication says it is one hundred and fifty feet



EXCHANGE.

long: another declares it to be two hundred and fifty feet). The interior is thus described: "Within, the Temple presents a varied picture of architectural splendor. The grand staircase, the Grand Lodge Hall and Grand Chapter Hall, the Egyptian Hall, with its massive elephantine columns surmounted by the peculiar capitals of the ancient temples of the Nile, of Luxor, and of Karnak; the Ionic and Norman Halls; and the Oriental, with all the airy proportions and ornaments of the Alhambra, and Mosques of Arabia, — each apartment embodying a distinct





NEW MASONIC TEMPLE, PHILADELPHIA.

type of architecture, — form together a scene of magnificence which needs the brush rather than the pen to even imperfectly reproduce. The cost of the Temple was one million three hundred thousand dollars; and five years were occupied in its erection." Surely the external architecture, and internal finish and furniture, of this wonderful edifice, indicate that the Anti-Masonic excitement of 1828-30 is among the things of yore.

THE ACADEMY OF NATURAL SCIENCES was founded in 1812, and incorporated in 1817. The old building, nearly opposite



CONTINENTAL HOTEL.

Samson Street, on Broad, thought to be very large when it was erected, some thirty years since, became entirely inadequate to the necessities of the institution. It has the largest collection of natural curiosities in the United States, and has published eight octavo and seven quarto volumes, entitled "Journal of the Academy of Natural Sciences in Philadelphia;" also twenty-four octavo volumes, entitled "Proceedings of the Academy of Natural Sciences in Philadelphia." These volumes contain, on an average, four hundred pages each. The library has about twenty-five thousand volumes. The institution has six



thousand minerals, nine hundred rocks, sixty-five thousand fossils, seventy thousand species of plants, one thousand species of zoöphytes, two thousand species of crustaceans, five thousand species of myriapods and arachnidians, twenty-five thousand species of insects, twenty thousand species of shell-bearing mollusks, two thousand species of fishes, eight hundred species of reptiles, thirty-seven thousand birds, two hundred birds'



NEW ACADEMY OF NATURAL SCIENCES.

nests, and eggs of fifteen hundred species, one thousand mammals, and nine hundred skeletons and pieces of osteology. Most of these species are represented by four or five specimens each. The new building, at the corner of Nineteenth and Race Streets, a representation of which may be seen in the cut, is designed to contain all these, and more than have been described.

THE NEW CITY HALL, occupying the whole of what was once Penn Square, will, when completed, be the largest single permanent building on this continent. Its dimensions are four hundred and seventy feet from east to west, and four hundred and eighty-six feet and a half from north to south, covering an area, exclusive of the court-yard, of nearly four acres and a half.

The superstructure consists of a basement-story eighteen feet in height, a principal story thirty-six feet in height, and an upper story of thirty-one feet, surmounted by another of fifteen feet. The small rooms opening upon the court-yard are each

subdivided in height into two stories, for the purpose of utilizing all space. Access to the several stories will be by four large elevators, placed at the intersections of the leading corridors, making easy the approach to courts, public offices, and departments of city government.

There will be a grand staircase in each of the four corners of the building, and one in each of the centre pavilions on the north, south, east, and west fronts.

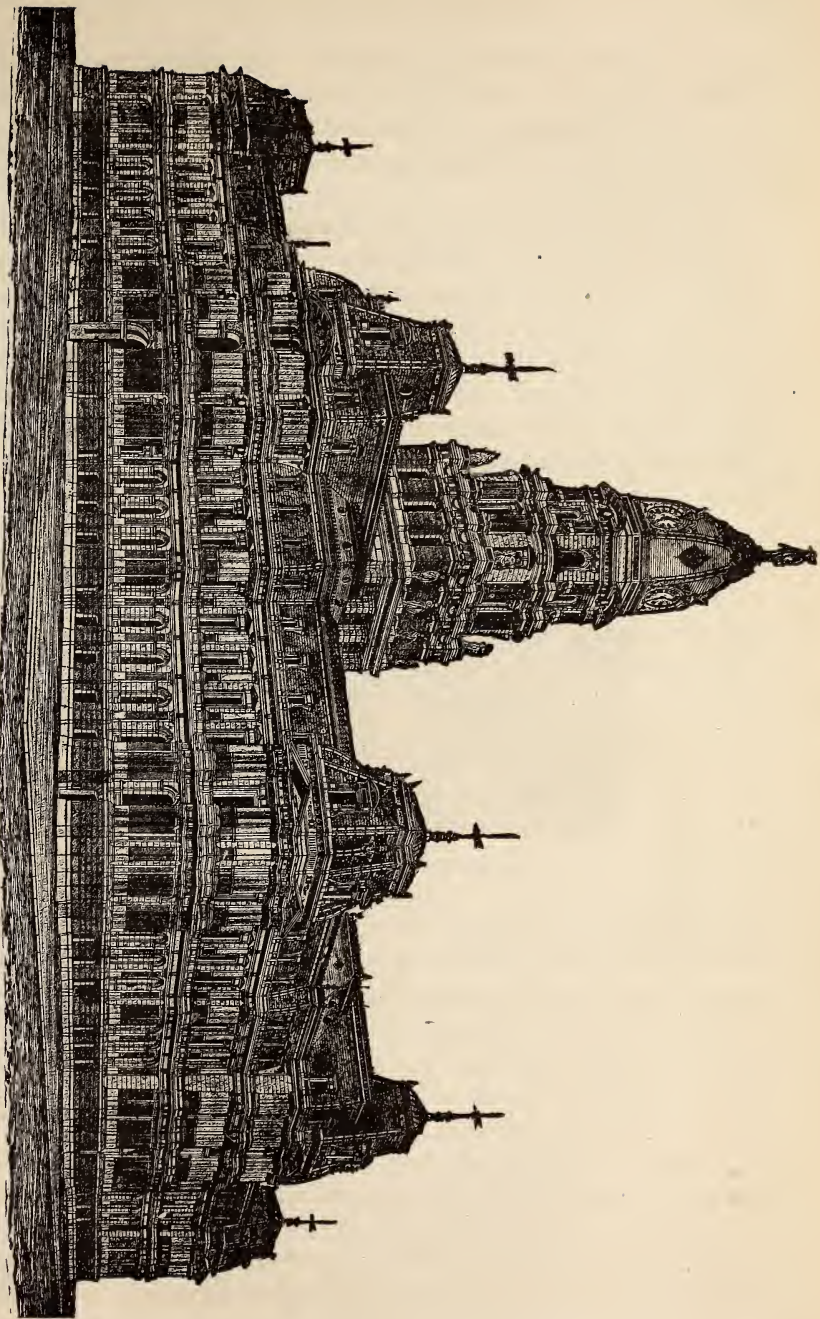
This structure is to be built of white marble; and the walls facing the yard are to be of light blue marble, which combination will be extremely pleasing. It will contain five hundred and twenty rooms, fitted with every possible convenience, including heat, gas, and ventilation; and it is said the whole will be fire-proof and indestructible. When ready for occupancy, it will contain the following offices: the mayor will require for his use, for his officers and for the police, at least twelve commodious rooms; the city council chambers and their officers, fifteen; city comptroller, five; city treasurer, three; law department, six; water department, seven; highways, bridges, and sewers, four; survey department, four; markets and city property, two; building inspectors, two; health office, six; fire department, four; receiver of taxes, five; police and fire-alarm telegraph, two; guardians of poor, three; port warden, two; city commissioners, six; coroner, four; Girard estate, two; comptrollers of public schools, six; gas-office, one; park commissioners, one; board of revision, four; collector of delinquent taxes, three; recorder of deeds, four; register of wills, four; sheriff, four; courts, thirteen, with accommodations for the prothonotaries and clerks, for the law library, witness and jury rooms, and district attorney.

It is computed the entire cost of this building will be upwards of ten millions of dollars.

The city of Philadelphia, in the construction and beauty of her bridges, may cherish a just pride. She has had some of the best bridge-builders in our country. For several years the Market Street Bridge was the only one leading across the Schuylkill from the old settled part of the city to West Philadelphia. This bridge was a strong, well-constructed, and per-



NEW PUBLIC BUILDINGS, PHILADELPHIA.



manent one, much used, but possessed few characteristics of beauty. Several other bridges have since been constructed across this river; the most elegant and costly one being the CHESTNUT STREET BRIDGE, a view of which may be seen in the illustration.

CALLOWHILL STREET BRIDGE has recently taken the place of the old celebrated "wire-bridge" at the Fairmount Water Works. It is what is termed "double-deck," meaning an upper and lower roadway and sidewalks; and is one of the most superb structures of its kind in the Union. It was designed by J. H. Linville, and built by the Keystone Company. The entire length of the superstructure is 1,274 feet; and the large span crossing the river, 350 feet. The upper roadway is thirty-



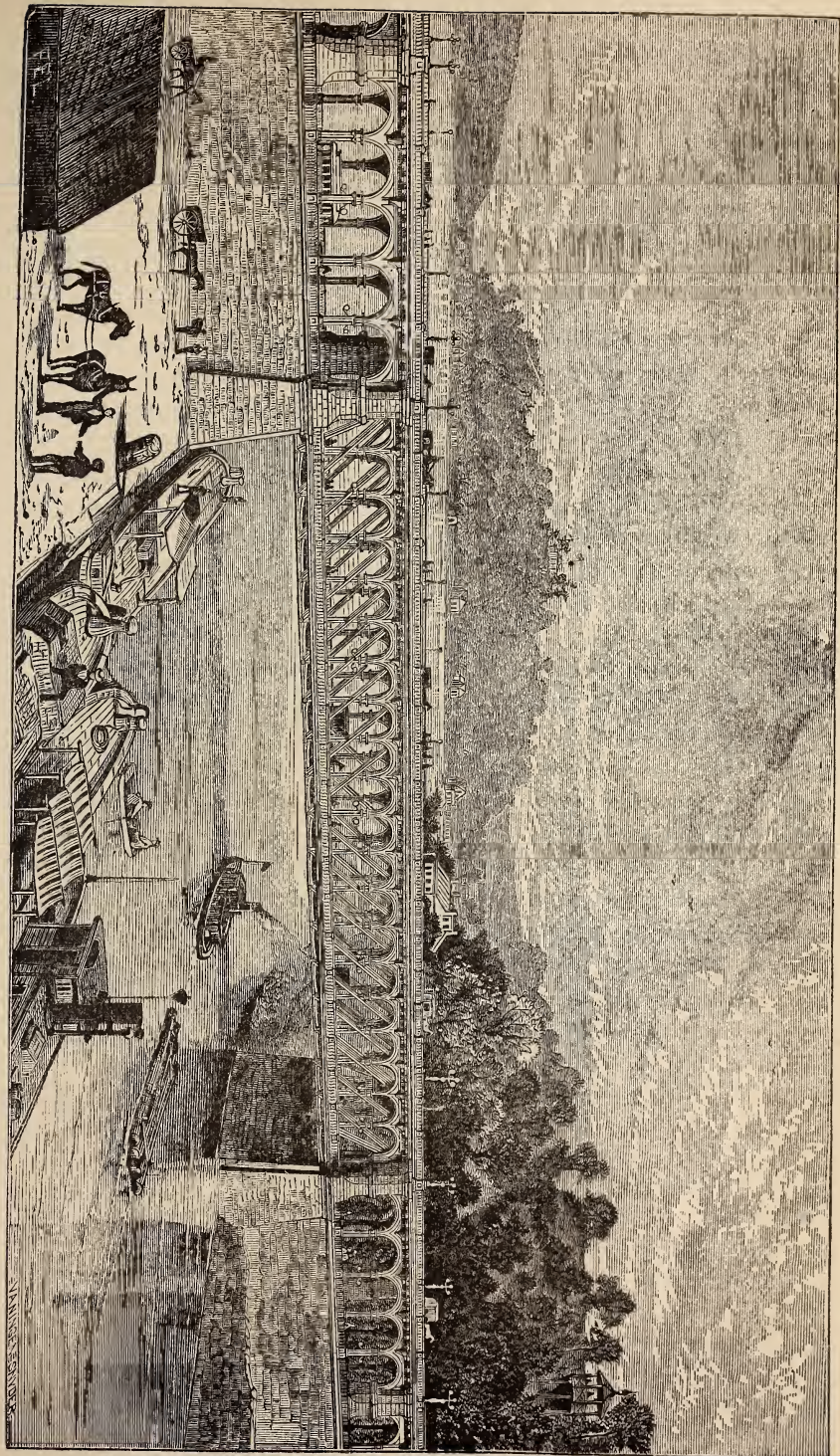
CHESTNUT STREET BRIDGE.

two feet above Callowhill Street, and connects Spring Garden Street with Bridge Street. The lower passageway unites Callowhill Street with Haverford Street.

THE FAIRMOUNT WATER WORKS, situated on the east bank of the Schuylkill, just above the old boundary line of the city proper, at which place a water-power was obtained by the erection of a dam in 1819, were planned by Mr. Fr derick Graeff. The dam is thirteen hundred feet long, and in some places sunk to a depth of thirty feet below low-tide mark. A range of marble pumping-houses was constructed at the foot of Fairmount; and breast-wheels were introduced, which, driven by water, raised the water to the basins upon the hills. A consid-



CALLOWHILL-STREET BRIDGE AT THE FAIRMOUNT WATERWORKS.



erable portion of this has been superseded by extended improvements, at a vast outlay to the city. Additional pumping-houses have been erected at Belmont, Roxborough, and other points on the Schuylkill and Delaware; and now the whole department is of huge proportions. The main pipes extend  $585\frac{1}{2}$  miles, and are being constantly added to. Some of the engines are of tremendous capacity and make; the leading one, at Spring Garden, throws up ten million gallons every twenty-four hours. During the year 1873, the amount of water pumped was over fourteen billion gallons, the average supply for the city being more than forty million gallons per day. The annual receipts from water-rents are about one million dollars, while the expenditures are half a million more. An immense storage reservoir, capable of holding seven hundred and fifty million gallons, is now being constructed in the East Park, which will cost two millions of dollars.

**LAUREL HILL CEMETERY.** This is the leading cemetery of Philadelphia, in size, location, and beauty. It is on the side of a hill bordering on the east bank of the Schuylkill. The grounds are very extensive, and skilfully laid out. They are divided into three sections, North, South, and Central. This site, so beautifully situated by Nature, has been adorned by an elegant entrance, constructed of brown stone in the Doric style; a Gothic chapel; a residence for the superintendent; a spacious receiving-vault; an observatory, commanding a charming view of the river and opposite shore; a hot-house, where plants, shrubs, and flowers, of every variety, are cultivated; a multitude of splendid monuments, and many other embellishments. This entrance on Ridge Avenue presents a bold, commanding, and rich appearance, as may be seen by the accompanying plate.

The **PARK** did lie on the north-west of the city; but the streets have already reached out on both sides of it, and so crowded upon its boundaries, that it is almost surrounded with buildings. It extends from the Fairmount Water Works on both sides of the Schuylkill, a little beyond the junction of that river with the Wissahickon; then, leaving the Schuylkill, it follows the course of the Wissahickon for six miles, occupying both banks of this stream. The larger portion of the park is



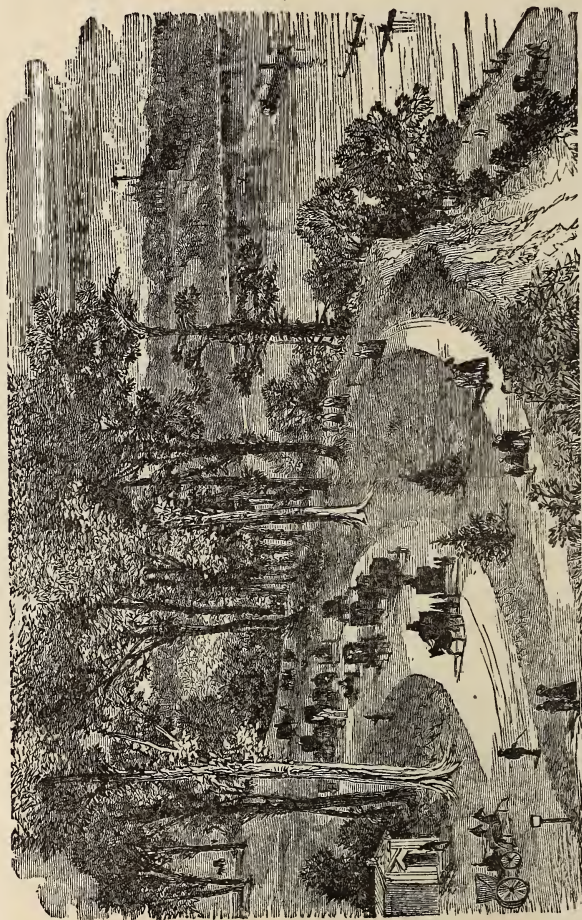
on the west side of the Wissahickon. It contains nearly three thousand acres, thus being the largest park in America. It received its name from "Faire Monte." For utility, health, and beauty, it might well have been considered the abode of



the fairies. It abounds with hill and dale, forest-trees, beautiful drives, &c.

An excellent view of the Park may be seen in the accompanying plate from the Pennsylvania Railroad Bridge connecting the two banks of the river, or the Park.

LEMON HILL, a beautiful eminence in the Park, was originally called "The Hills," and is celebrated for having been the residence of Robert Morris, the great financier in the early history of the country. Here the great men of those days



FAIRMOUNT PARK FROM PENNSYLVANIA BRIDGE.

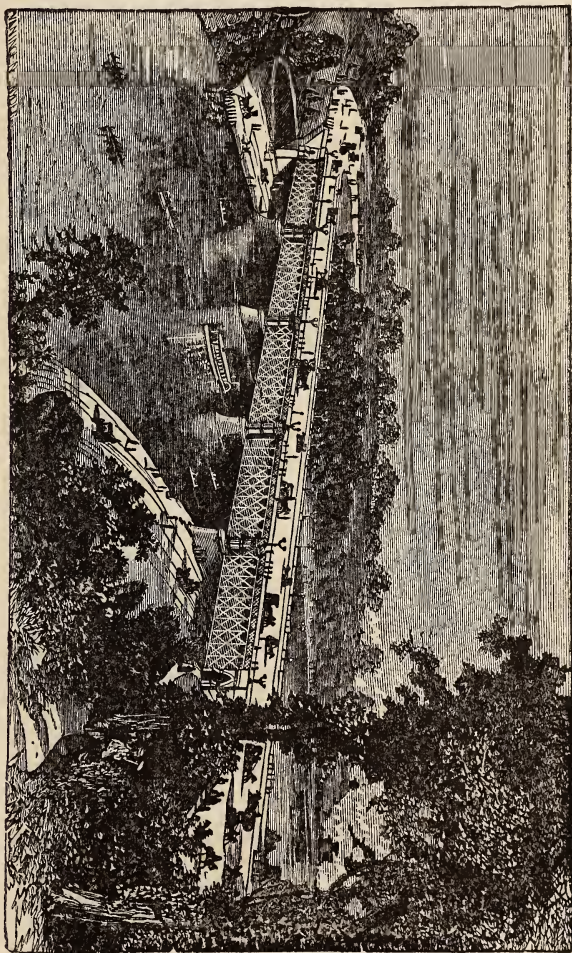
were received with lavish hospitality. The trees and shrubbery still exhibit the taste with which the old grounds were decorated.

At the foot of this hill is GIRARD AVENUE BRIDGE, which



connects the East and West Parks. This bridge was opened for travel July 4, 1874. It is a thousand feet long by a hundred feet wide, and fifty-two feet above mean water mark. It has five spans, constructed of Pratt trusses. The roadway is of

GIRARD AVENUE BRIDGE, FAIRMOUNT PARK.



granite blocks, and is sixty-seven feet and a half wide. The sidewalks, each sixteen feet and a half wide, are paved with slate, with encaustic tile borders. The balustrade and cornice

are ornamented with bronze panels, representing birds and foliage. Under this bridge passes a carriageway, leading to the north-eastern portion of the Park.

The Avenue, the two parts of which are connected by this bridge, like every thing else bearing the name of Girard, is one of the broadest and most magnificent in the city.



## CHAPTER XXXI.

### THE CENTENNIAL.

Our Republic — Small in the Beginning — How it increased — Planted by Noble Men — Slavery, a Rotten Plank in the Constitution — Its Fate — The Old "Thirteen" — Increase of Territory — Productions — Men and Women — Literature — Century — Pennsylvania and Philadelphia — Sister States and Cities — Foreign Nations — One Regret — The Change as to Knowledge and Discoveries — The Future of the Nation — History proclaims a Moral Governor — Perpetuity and only Safety of the Nation in Obedience to Him — The Centennial Grounds and Buildings.

WE now approach the grand Jubilee of our nation, the Centennial Celebration. What was the jubilee of the Hebrews, whose whole territory was comprised in a little garden-spot less in area than our State of Texas? what were the Greeks, their "games and olympiads," whose whole nation was less than our "Golden Gate," California? what was the kingdom of the Pharoahs,

"On the land of Nile"?

the glory of the Old World,—when contrasted with the dominion of the United States of America? These were great in their day, and figure largely in the history of our planet, but, when placed by the side of this Republic, dwindle into comparative insignificance.

What, indeed, were we, when, in 1776, "a nation was born in a day"? A little handful, some three millions only, a colony of poor, feeble people, scattered along the shore of the wide Atlantic, consisting of "Thirteen States," most of whose territory was a hard, rugged coast, and a sterile and barren soil. England, our unnatural mother, which was bound by every tie

of justice, religion, and consanguinity, to be our protector, had done her best and her worst to suck away our life's blood, and break every bone in our body-politic. All that lust of power, avarice, bribery, treachery, could do, she had done to strangle us in our cradle. Hessian mercenaries she hired to shoot down her American sons, the most docile and obedient children she ever had. The American savages she excited to tomahawk and scalp her truest sons and daughters.

Under this adverse and cruel treatment, how was it that the nation, born in yonder Hall, July 4, 1776, ever lived? The God of nations, "who ruleth among the kingdoms of earth," the God of justice, and the God of battles too, was on our side. He had reserved this territory "from the foundation of the world" for a chosen seed. He had sifted all the nations of the Old World for the choicest of the wheat, with which to sow it. In this field, thus preserved, he determined to plant a people, destined to supplant the aborigines, and fill it with a Christian nation. All his dealings with those who opposed this people have said to them, "Touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm." For the defence of this people, he raised up a Washington; and at the very time, and in the very place, where he was most needed, "and could do the most good," then, and there, He put him. In the same manner he raised up Witherspoon and Franklin and Adams and Henry, and sent them to that first Congress that assembled in our State, to usher into being a nation, at whose birth, and new accession to existence, if "the morning stars did not sing together," all the patriots of America "shouted for joy," and all the good men of the land praised the Lord.

There was one seed early planted in this country, not by God, but by England, which all good men abhorred, and which all the seers of America foresaw would prove either the destruction of the nation, or the nation the destruction of it. It was slavery. The forbearance of the Almighty was long, while the storm for its destruction was gathering; but the final bursting of the tempest was predicted by wise men and patriots as sure. It came. The shock was terrible, the sacrifice of blood and treasure vast. God said, "Let my people go: break every yoke, let the oppressed go free."

The nation even then said, "Nay. This is a war for the Union;" and the nation was beaten in battle. God repeated, "Let my people go." The nation said, "White men will not fight by the side of black men;" and the nation would not put them into the field, and we made no progress. Again God said, "Let my people go;" and the proclamation of the ruler came, declaring "liberty throughout all the land;" and the tide turned. The nation prevailed; and the Union was strengthened. Now the South, as well as the North, rejoices

"To see the curse removed."

And even Gov. Henry A. Wise, with thousands of other Southern statesmen, consider the destruction of slavery the best boon that Heaven ever bestowed upon the nation.

At the birth of this noble Hercules, we had thirteen States, many of them of small dimensions: now we have some forty, more or less; for one can scarcely keep count of the increasing number, so fast is their accession. Then, as said above, we merely lined the Atlantic coast: now we extend from Canada on the north to the warm Gulf on the south; now we have scaled the Rocky Mountains, and have stretched from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. Then we had some three, now forty millions. Then we were almost in a starving condition: now, by the acquisition of the rich farms of our broad prairies, we are the grain country of the world, not relieving Ireland alone in her famine, but supplying the market of nearly every kingdom of the Old World with "the staff of life." Now a single city in the interior (once the Far West) slaughters swine enough in a single year to supply a continent with pork; and Texas, in the "sunny South," produces beef enough for half the globe.

Then our manufactures were nowhere; and what our few and sparsely scattered citizens would have produced in this line were prohibited by England, our darling mother. Now the city of "Brotherly Love" alone, in which the nation first breathed, sends forth coal and iron enough for half the continent, makes locomotives sufficient for a hundred railroads, shows a market stocked with butter and cheese, meats, vegeta-

bles, and fruits, that call forth the admiration and astonishment of all who have visited her in time past, and will of the millions that are to worship at her shrine the present year; yea, more, she produces umbrellas, parasols, perfumery, oils, soaps, lotions, and all that ladies use to beautify and adorn their persons, sufficient for the world.

The grandest of all our productions has been that of men and women. The world has produced no nobler specimens for nearly six thousand years than has this nation in the century that closes this year. Washington, Franklin, Hamilton, Jefferson, the two Adamses, Henry Clay, Judges Marshall and Story, John C. Calhoun, Abraham Lincoln, Sargent, the Websters (not Noah only, but Daniel), Charles Sumner, Binney, David Paul Brown of our own city, and hundreds of others, which time would fail me to name — what country ever produced more able statesmen, more thorough patriots, more lasting monuments of greatness! Where will you find men that outshone these?

Our women, too, those of Revolutionary memory — first, though not greatest, Martha Washington, Mary Smith, the wife of John Adams, the daughters of Thomas Jefferson, Mrs. Sigourney, Sarah J. Hale, Lucretia Mott of this city, and a multitude of others, as true patriots, as excellent wives and mothers, as the world ever saw.

In literature, too, what has the last hundred years produced? Literature! We have been taunted as without a literature? “Who reads an American book?” has been flung at us by the same country that tried to strangle us when the cradle of liberty first rocked in Independence Hall. Yet we have a literature not to be laughed at or frowned down. Our colleges and our schools are planted in every commonwealth. Our statesmen, our clergymen, our physicians, yea, all our citizens, are educated. We have authors. Why, the whole world resounded with the praise of Dr. Samuel Johnson, who made a dictionary; but *that* bears no comparison with Noah Webster’s, or Joseph E. Worcester’s. As historians, we have Bancroft, Palfrey, Greeley, Goodwin, Stephens, Duponceau, Hildreth, Ramsay, and a host of others. Of authors, Jefferson, Webster, Carey, the Ed-



wardses, Emmons, Griffin, Day, Adams, Mrs. Stowe, Hale, Howe, and numerous others. Of poets, Bryant, Holmes, Longfellow, T. Buchanan Read, &c. Already I have given the names of the most prominent medical writers of Pennsylvania; and it must not be expected, that, in a history of this State, much can be said about all the authors of the United States. Those here named out of this State are referred to simply in connection with the Centennial, which is a national affair.

No nation in its first century ever produced so many eminent statesmen, generals, lawyers, physicians, clergymen, philosophers, inventors, artisans, professors, and educators, as have these United States. No people upon the face of the earth have given to the world so many works on Agriculture, Physics, History, Biography, Architecture, Fiction, Poetry, and Theology, with many other subjects, as has this American Union.

At the formation of the Government, there were prophets and Tories who predicted its speedy downfall. Their taunts, sarcasm, and ridicule were equal to those of Tobiah and Sanballat to the Jews, when about to reconstruct Jerusalem: "What do these feeble Jews? Will they fortify themselves? Will they sacrifice? Will they make an end in a day? Even that which they build, if a fox go up, he shall even break down their stone wall." Such were the predictions of Lord North and his co-adjutors in England. They were re-echoed by Benedict Arnold and his associate Tories in America.

But the patriots built. They framed a government for all time. They were wise, long-headed, and shrewd men. Franklin, Jefferson, Patrick Henry, the Adamses (Samuel and John), Washington, Witherspoon, all the throng who signed the immortal instrument in yonder Hall one hundred years ago, were such men of intellect and principle as the world had rarely seen. As there were croakers and false prophets then, so they knew they would continue to live, and propagate their ignoble species: hence they laid their foundation deep, and built the walls of this government strong. They expected every wind of sham patriotism to blow, and every tempest of demagogism to break, and every billow and sea of toryism to strike, upon the noble ship, the old Constitution, which they so strongly

and wisely built. They saw and felt that they had inserted a rotten plank, "not willingly, but by constraint," in this ship; but they hoped to so manage it by calking and mending it, that it would not sink her in coming time. Jefferson, who wrote the Declaration of Independence, and others, foresaw that slavery, if continued, would strand this ship, the Constitution. But what took place when the shock came? When it was intimated that a "Sovereign State could not be coerced," what was the response? The result of the late war tells the story; and the whole world was astonished at the strength and mighty power of our government. No other nation in the wide world could have put down such a powerful and well constructed rebellion; and now what a future is before us! Re-united North, South, East, and West, with a territory vast almost beyond conception, possessing every variety of climate, and capable of producing all that is beautiful to behold with the eyes, "and good for food" is ours.

On this grand Jubilee, Pennsylvania, long and justly called the "Keystone State," invites her numerous sisters, though not quite so many as "Hecuba's daughters," to come home, and make a household visit, and look into the old homestead, the original birthplace of the whole family. She says to this beloved sisterhood, "Come: from the snowy hills and pines of Maine, and the White Hills of New Hampshire, from the sunny vales of Florida and Texas, and the vast gold-fields of California, come." Philadelphia, always the city of "Brotherly Love," says to all her brothers and sisters, from Portland to New Orleans, and from New York to San Francisco, "Come!"

Do we of this State and city say, "Come and see our commonwealth and our city"? No: this is not it. We say, "Come!" only as being on the ground. Come and view *your* possessions, *your* birthright, *your* growth, *your* productions. They are all yours, as much as they are ours. As our commonwealth is but one arch in the great edifice of the Republic, as our city is but one of a numerous progeny, so you, one and all, are joint heirs and co-partners in every thing. The vast edifice — first constructed, it is true, on our soil, in one sense ours — are all yours, your own these buildings. These numberless contents, these speci-

mens of art, these utensils of husbandry, these wonders and beauties, are yours. They have been produced by your intellect, your brain, your hands. All of us, like the heads of Israel's tribes, are "one man's sons," and all born at once in Independence Hall, one hundred years ago.

Now, all united under one banner, we, the children of the Republic, assembled at home, invite our other relations, the nations of the earth, to come and share our hospitality and our family gathering, our old-fashioned Thanksgiving. England, with your laborers, your lords, your earls, your princes, above all, your illustrious Queen, come all. Yes,

"England, with all thy faults, we love thee still."

We have forgiven the past; and from the heart of America, assembled on this Centennial Jubilee, we bid thee welcome. Come also from your "Green Isle," ye Celts, and see how your sons and your daughters have improved and prospered on these shores. From Scotland, the land of Knox and Scott, come, and witness your Stuarts, Stewarts, your McCosh, your Blackwoods, with your ponderous theological lore. Come and see your brethren.

Come, ye Gauls, ye Frenchmen. You have been our friends from the first. Your Lafayette was the brother of our Washington. Your Napoleon sold us no inconsiderable part of our territory. Come, then, with your philosophers, your men of science, your fluent talkers, and graceful women. We welcome you as our earliest and tried friends.

Come, ye "Norsemen," ye "Scandinavians," ye subjects of King Olaf, once worshippers of "Thor" and "Odin," ye first discoverers of our country; come and behold what your "Vineland the Good" has produced. Ye were the original discoverers of this land of the Delaware. Come, then, and behold what specimens of men and women, what wonders in art, invention, and agriculture, your "Vineland" has to show you as the growth of a hundred years.

Come, ye Russians, ye dwellers near the "Northern Bear:" ye, too, have ever been our allies. We welcome you, not the son only, heir to the throne, but the Czar himself. We bid you

and yours a hearty welcome. Come, ye Germans: many of your sons are already here. They form the best of our merchants, our mechanics, our farmers, our literati, our statesmen. Come, then, Emperor William, Prime-Minister Bismarck, and Chief Gen. Moltke, with your numerous citizens: we welcome you all.

There is but one thing we have now to regret: that this nation has not at present more of the self-denying, patriotic feeling of Washington and his co-adjutors in integrity, unselfishness, and unwillingness to be eminent at the detriment and expense of the Republic. Too many of our public servants and private citizens have not exhibited that moral, high-minded, unimpeachable integrity and uprightness, which characterized the Fathers of the Nation. From this centennial year, it is hoped every voter, who is also a sovereign, will take a new departure toward that spirit manifested by those Fathers.

On retrospection, it has already been stated we were small in numbers, and poor in purse, though rich in principle, honor, and integrity; and much that we now possess was then unknown, undiscovered, and consequently unavailable. The vast quantities of coal underlying our fields were then concealed from our knowledge; and, if it had been discovered, we knew not how to use it to any good purpose. When "Black Hawk," the celebrated Indian chief, visited us, he said, among other strange things that he saw, "They burn stones for wood." A long time was it, however, before this was done. Then we knew not the power of steam. Not a steamboat navigated our waters; and within the memory of the writer, Dr. Lardner, as wise a scientific lecturer as some who now visit us, came all the way from England to tell us "a steamboat could never cross the Atlantic, *never*;" and an English lord had then just said, in closing a sagacious speech in his place in the House, "My lords, a steamboat can never compete with a canal-boat; never, my lords, never."

How is it now? How many of us have seen these predictions falsified? Then we had no telegraphs. How now? Who would then have believed that we should converse with men across this same Atlantic, almost as a man talks with his fellows face to face? Seeing what has been done during the



last century, who can predict what may transpire in the next hundred years?

Casting forward a look into this vast unknown, I seem to see, in vision, this whole Western Continent, one people, one vast Republic, under one government, and that the best on which the sun ever shone. I see a nation, consisting of five hundred States, inhabited by hundreds of millions of educated, intelligent Christian citizens, of all colors, races, and climes, a homogeneous, free people, possessing equal rights before the law, and equal privileges throughout the western world. Then, as England once was, —

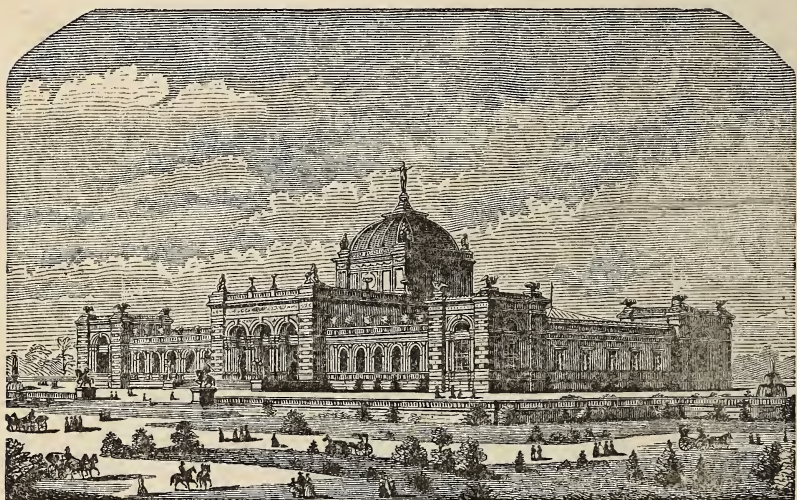
“’Ere her griefs began,  
When every rood of ground maintained its man,”

all our citizens shall sit, every one under his own vine and fig-tree, and none shall make them afraid. Yes, the time is to come in the future, when this country, comprising every degree of climate, and every variety of soil, shall outnumber the teeming millions of China and India.

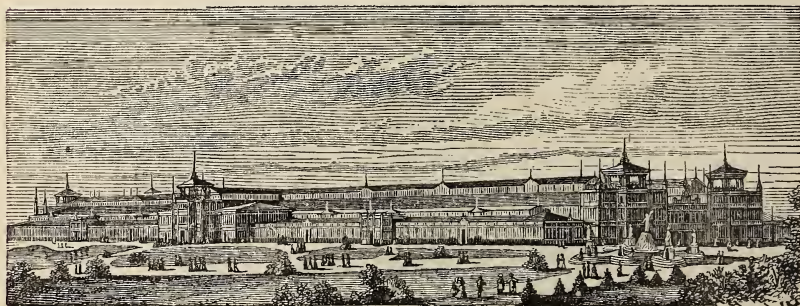
History, plainer than any thing else save revelation, proclaims the hand of an Almighty Ruler among the kingdoms of this world. “He setteth up and removeth kings. He planteth and plucketh up nations.” He judges nations as nations. The fate of the ancient nations is well known. Where are the Jews, under David and Solomon the wonder and admiration of the world? Where now is this once mighty kingdom? Where now these Jews? Scattered and peeled, and a by-word among all the nations of the earth. Why? Because her kings and their subjects rejected and disobeyed the good advice of David to Solomon: “Keep the charge of the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, to keep his statutes, and his commandments, and his judgments, and his testimonies.” “Know thou the God of thy Father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind.” “If thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but, if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off forever.” What overturned the Chaldæan empire, which, under Nebuchadnezzar, was the most powerful on earth? The impious feast of Belshazzar, his son, tells the story. What destroyed Rome, the



MAIN EXHIBITION BUILDING.



ART GALLERY.



MACHINERY HALL.

mistress of the world? Rottenness and moral corruption. "Pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness," have ruined, not Sodom only, but all the once flourishing nations of the world; and in their destruction is seen the very "finger of God."

If our nation, so prosperous for the past century, so glorious in this centennial year, is to continue and increase, and be the guiding-star of the world, if it is to be in the future, as in the past, the asylum for the oppressed of all lands, the freest, the best educated, the happiest, of republics, it will be only by acknowledging, reverencing, and obeying the statutes of the Most High, "the God of *our* Fathers."

#### THE CENTENNIAL GROUNDS AND BUILDINGS.

Passing up the Schuylkill from Columbia Bridge, on leaving the old Concourse Road, leading by the base of Belmont Reservoir, and winding up a steep ascent, we arrive at the summit of George's Hill, two hundred and fifty feet above tide-water. Here a tract of land, comprising eighty-three acres, was presented to the city by Jesse and Rebecca George, long the home of their ancestors. At the foot of this hill is a broad meadow or plain, on which it is proposed to hold the grand exhibition of a hundred years' progress of the United States.

Philadelphia, the birthplace of the nation, was the appropriate place selected for this anniversary; and the site chosen is well adapted to the purpose. These Centennial grounds cover four hundred and fifty acres, extending from the base of George's Hill almost to the Schuylkill River, and northerly to Columbia Bridge and Belmont mansion. Upon this level plain, known as the "Landsdown Plateau," at the intersection of Elm and Belmont Avenues, the principal exhibition edifices are erected.

The main building, in the form of a parallelogram, is eighteen hundred and eighty feet long, four hundred and sixty-four feet wide, seventy feet high, and has a central tower of a hundred and twenty feet in height. This building, with its towers and projections, covers an area of twenty-one acres and a half. It is built of iron and glass, and, in the interior, presents one grand hall seventy feet high, with a central pavilion ninety-six



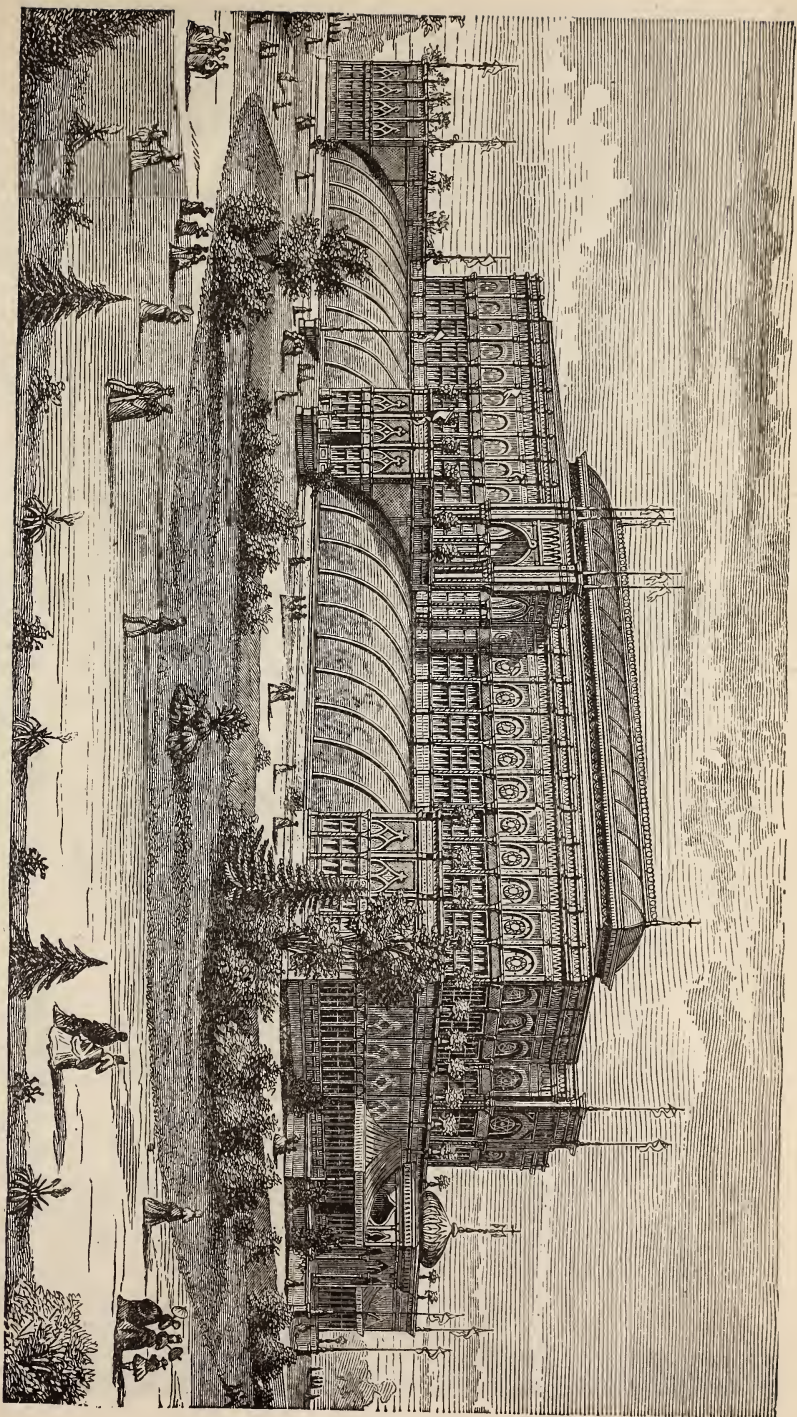
feet in height. Through the centre there is an avenue, a hundred and twenty feet wide, running the entire length of the building. There are also two side avenues of the same length, each a hundred feet wide. These are intersected by three cross avenues of the same width, dividing the plan into nine open spaces, free from columns; the whole covering an area of four hundred and sixteen feet square. There are smaller aisles, forty-eight feet in width. The arrangement of the goods is such, that all the products of this country are placed in a line, side by side with similar products of all other countries.

The Art Gallery, or Memorial Building, stands about three hundred feet north of the main building, on a parallel line. This is designed to be a permanent structure, and is built of granite, iron, and glass, being thoroughly fire-proof. It is three hundred and sixty-five feet long, two hundred and ten feet wide, and fifty-nine feet high. It has a central dome a hundred and fifty feet in height, on which stands a figure of Columbia. It has a bell of enormous size. At each corner of the base of the dome are colossal figures, typifying the four quarters of the globe. The interior has a central hall, with galleries extending east and west, the whole making one grand Hall two hundred and eighty-seven feet long, eighty-five feet wide, and thirty-five feet high, rising in the centre, at the dome, to eighty feet. This spacious hall will contain eight thousand persons. There are many other halls, galleries, and studios in this building.

The HORTICULTURAL BUILDING is designed to be permanent, and is a fine, ornate, and convenient one, and will be a lasting ornament to the Park. It is located just north of the Main Building and Art Gallery, affording a good view of the Schuylkill River, and of the north part of the city. The Conservatory, of which the angles are adorned with eight fountains, is 230 by 80 feet, and 55 feet high, with a lantern 170 feet long, 20 feet wide, and 14 feet high.

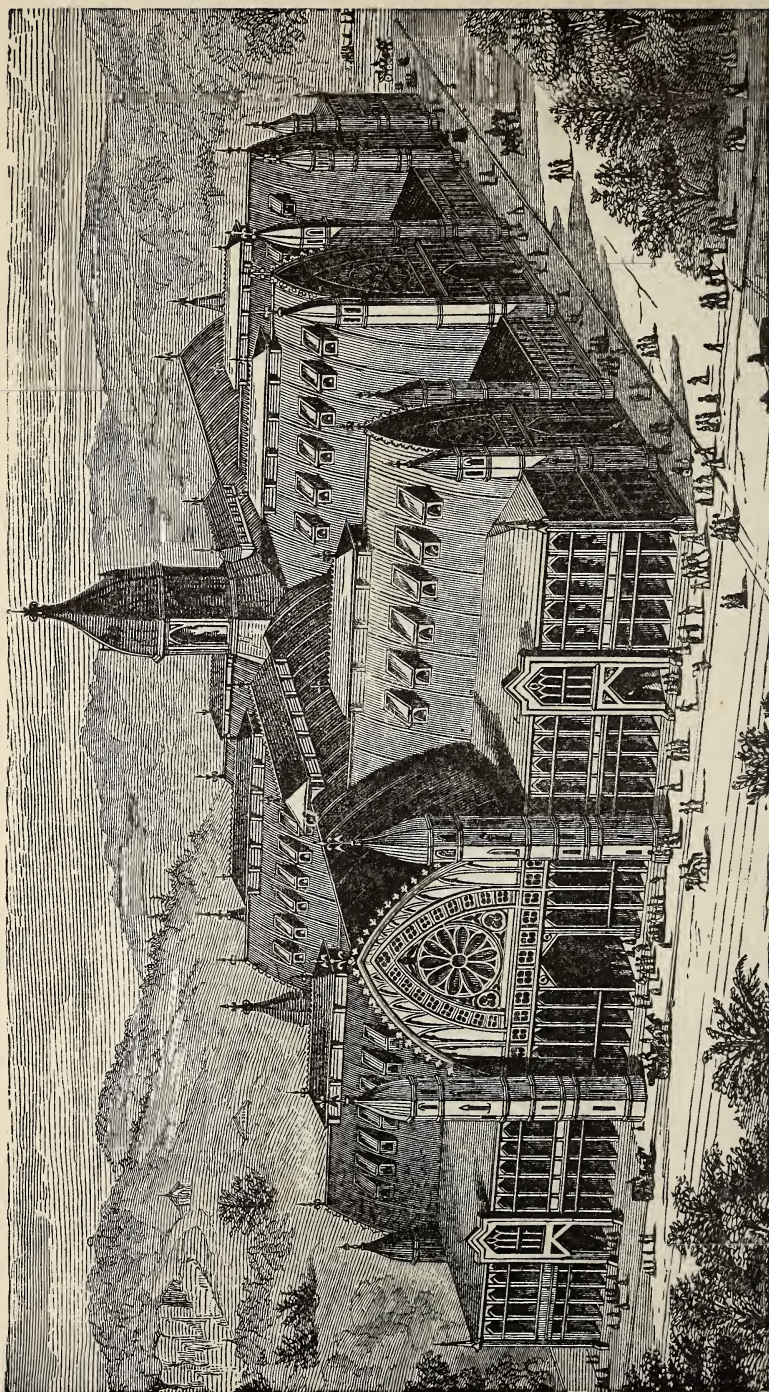
The AGRICULTURAL BUILDING is north of the Horticultural Building, and is made of wood and glass. The nave is 820 feet in length by 120 feet in width, with a height of 75 feet from the floor to the point of the arch. The central transept is of the same height, with a breadth of 100 feet; and the two end transepts are 70 feet high, and 80 feet wide.





HORTICULTURAL BUILDING.





AGRICULTURAL BUILDING.

The MACHINERY BUILDING is 542 feet from the west front of the main Exhibition Building. The north front will be upon the same line as that of the main Exhibition Building, presenting a frontage, in all, of 3,824 feet from the east to the west ends of the Exhibition Buildings.

Here we end our history for the first century of our existence as a nation, and also from the first discovery and settlement of Pennsylvania. If any State can show a better record, or any city, than Philadelphia, we shall rejoice on this Centennial that some members of our great family have been so prosperous and thriving, and hope, at the close of the next century, we shall be full sharers in the prosperity of our Republic.





FAC-SIMILE OF CENTENNIAL MEDALS.



# INDEX.

- Academy, Pennsylvania Military, 436;  
Canonsburg, 438; of Fine Arts, 481-  
483; of Natural Sciences, 540, 541.
- Adams, W. T., 288.
- Adolphus, Gustavus, 20.
- Agnew, Samuel, 463.
- Alleghanies, pure air of, 326.
- Alleghany Junction, 364.
- Alleghany City, 365.
- Allentown, 383, 391.
- Allen, William, Chief Justice, 411.
- Allen, J. M., 490.
- Allen, William H., 518.
- Almshouse, Blockley, 533.
- Altoona, 266, 325, 326.
- America, Discovery of, 15; description  
of country, 54, 55; measuring lands,  
102.
- America, Confederate States of, organ-  
ized, 251.
- Anne, Princess, succeeds to the throne,  
145; queen orders militia, 148.
- Apollo, city of, 363.
- Aqueduct, 315.
- Ararat, 327.
- Arnold, Benedict, 242.
- Arsenal, Philadelphia, 281.
- Ashland, 389.
- Assembly, Colonial laws passed by,  
95, 96; yields, 140; remonstrance to  
Fletcher, 141; answers Great Britain,  
180; appoints army officers, 188.
- Associations, Building, 521, 522.
- Assôciation, Anthracite Hospital, 421.
- Auburn, 386.
- Avenue, Girard, 503.
- Bache, Franklin, 493.
- Bald Eagle, 353.
- Baldwin, Matthias, 467.
- Baltimore, Lord, founder of Maryland,  
56, 150, 453, 456.
- Bank, Girard, 503, 512, 513.
- Baptists, the, 200.
- Barclay, J. J., 422.
- Barnston, 346.
- Barton, Benjamin Smith, 488.
- Barton, William C., 489.
- Bartram, John and William, 489.
- Beatty, Rev. Charles C., 442.
- Bedford, 351.
- Bell, John, 492.
- Bellefonte, 354.
- Belmont, 382.
- Bethlehem, 390, 391.
- Berkeley, Lord, patentee, 53.
- Black Lick, 359.
- Blackwell, Capt. John, 137, 138.
- Blairsville, 361.
- Bonaparte, maxim of, 35.
- Bond, Dr. Thomas, 409, 484.
- Boston port closed, 162.
- Boudinot, Gov., 16.
- Bouquet, Col., 156.
- Boyd, D. M., jun., 295.
- Braddock, Gen., defeat of, 153, 338.
- Bradford, Andrew, 459.
- Bradford, William, prayer-book of, 426.
- Brainerd, David, 315.
- Brenner, Prof., 18.
- Bridge, Chestnut-street, 544; Callow-  
hill-street, 544, 545; Girard-avenue,  
548, 550.
- Bristol, 34.
- British conquer the Hollanders, 456.
- Broadhead, Col., 340.
- Buchanan, James, 250; home of, 305.
- Buckingham, 104, 141.

- Bull Run, battle of, 252.  
 Bunker Hill, battle of, 177.  
 Burke, 457, 458.  
 Burlington, Quaker settlement, 53.  
 Butler, 365.  
 Byllynge, Edward, 53.  
  
 Cabot, Sebastian, discovers Virginia, 19.  
 Cameron, Simon, 251.  
 Cameron, 373.  
 Canal, Pennsylvania, 296.  
 Canasatego, speech of, 126.  
 Canon, Col., 438.  
 Carnahan, James, 442.  
 Carpenter, Samuel, 144.  
 Carpenter's Hall, 524.  
 Carroll, Bishop, 331.  
 Cartaret, Sir John, embraces religious freedom, 53.  
 Catasauqua, 392.  
 Catawissa, 379.  
 Catholics, Roman, abhorred, 199; gain a foothold, 200.  
 Cattell, Rev. William C., 430, 432.  
 Cemetery, Laurel Hill, 546.  
 Centennial, the, 551; grounds and buildings, 560, 562.  
 Chad's Ford, 254.  
 Chapman, John, 104; Nathaniel, 448.  
 Charles II., King, 38, 44, 61, 75, 76, 80-82.  
 Charter, when granted, 61; its clauses, 61-75; conditions of, 76.  
 Chester, why named, 95, 407; West, 408.  
 Chigwell grammar school, 37.  
 Childs, George W., 497.  
 Christ's Church, 38.  
 Christiana, the Swedish Queen, 23.  
 Christiana, 303.  
 Church, Donegal Presbyterian, 309.  
 Civil war, 248.  
 Claghorn James L., 481.  
 Claremont, 364.  
 Clarkson the biographer, 93, 100, 148.  
 Claypole, James, 129.  
 Clearfield, 356.  
 Clinton, Sir Henry, 241.  
 Cloud Point, 402, 405.  
 Coal, anthracite, 266; in Lehigh district, 367, 368; area of, 269, 270; how mined, 270, 278; bituminous, 278.  
 Coaquonnoc, 97.  
 Coates, Samuel, 414, 507, 511.  
 Coatesville, 302.  
 Coffin, Charles Carleton, 253.  
 College, Log, 301.  
 Colleges, Beaver, Alleghany, 433; Dickinson, Franklin, and Marshall, Haverford, Lebanon Valley, 434; La Salle, Muhlenburg, Pennsylvania, 435; Wittenberg, Roanoke, North Carolina, Newbury, and Carthage, Palatinate, St. Vincent's, Swathmore, 436; Thiel, Villanova, Westminster, 438; Washington and Jefferson, 438-444; Pennsylvania Medical, 486; Philadelphia of Medicine, 486; Homœopathic, Eclectic, Thomsonian, Female Medical, 486, 487; Polytechnic, 534; Business, 450.  
 Columbus, Christopher, discovers America, 18.  
 Columbia, 307.  
 Colwell, Stephen, 467.  
 Company, Girard Insurance, 503.  
 Company, Guaranty Trust and Safe-Deposit, 535.  
 Company, New York Mutual Life Insurance, 535.  
 Company, Pennsylvania R.R., 297.  
 Condé, Francis D., 493.  
 Congress, Continental, 168; resolutions of, 169, 175; adjourns and re-assembles, 175; appoints Gen. Washington, 175; appoints a committee, 177; resolves to raise an army, 183; removes to Lancaster, 235.  
 Connellsville, 366.  
 Conshohocken, 382.  
 Constitution, State, 211, 229; amendments to, 451, 452.  
 Cornwallis, Lord, 234.  
 Corry, 376.  
 Council, Provincial, disagreement in, 140.  
 Creek, Duck, 100.  
 Creek, Brandywine, 135, 234.  
 Creek, Little Chiques, 306.  
 Creek, Beach, 355.  
 Cresson, 266, 332.  
 Crisp, Stephen, 94.  
 Croasdale, Miss E., 481.  
 Croese, Gerard, an author, 39.  
 Currency, Continental, 243.  
 Curtin, Andrew J., 249.  
 Curtin, name of place, 354.

- Daddow, quotation from, 284, 285.  
 Daguscahonda, 374.  
 Danville, 379.  
 Darby, 407.  
 Davis, Jefferson, 251.  
 Day, Sherman, historian, 100.  
 Deaf-mutes, home for, 423.  
 Delaware Bay, 19; Water Gap, 406.  
 Democrats, 467.  
 Denney, Gov., 152.  
 Dewart, 368.  
 Dewees, W. Potts, 490.  
 Dickinson, John, 161.  
 Dispensary, the, 415.  
 Ditcher, Mary, 308.  
 Dod, Thaddeus, 438, 442.  
 Dorsey, John Syng, 490.  
 Douglasville, 384.  
 Downingtown, 301.  
 Doylestown, 390.  
 Driftwood, 372.  
 Duane, Mr., Girard's lawyer, 516, 517.  
 Dunkards, the, refuse to fight, 162; description of, 202.  
 Duncannon, 315.  
 Dunglison, Robley, 488; Richard, his son, 488, 489.  
 Duponceau, historian, 147.  
 Eagle, 299.  
 Eagleville, 355.  
 Easton, 405.  
 Ebensburg, 359.  
 Eberlee, John, 490.  
 Eckley, John, 128, 132.  
 Emporium, 373.  
 Ephratah, Baptists at, 280.  
 Erie, 377; Lake, settlements on, 246; battle of, 247.  
 Eriksons, the, discoverers, 16.  
 Etna, 365.  
 Evans, John, Deputy Gov., 145, 146.  
 Everson, 366.  
 Exchange, the, 535.  
 Fairmount Water-Works, 544-546.  
 Fall's Cave, 399; Chameleon, 398; Terrace, 399.  
 Fall's Village, 382.  
 Farrandsville, 371.  
 Federalists, the, 467.  
 Fenwick, John, 53.  
 Finney, William, 146.  
 Fletcher, Gov. George, 139, 140; reply to council, 141.  
 Flowing Spring, 359.  
 Forges erected, 281.  
 Forney, Col., press of, 497, 498.  
 Fox, George, when born, 28.  
 Franklin, Benjamin, emigrates to Philadelphia, 149; visits London, 150; returns to Philadelphia, and founds library, 150; publishes "Plain Truth," 151; anecdotes of, 210; replies to Lord Howe, 230, 231; states terms of peace, 243; assists in founding hospital, 409-411; his grave, 530, 531.  
 Frankstown, 359.  
 France acknowledges American independence, 241.  
 Freemansburg, 403.  
 Freeport, 364.  
 French, the, extend their posts, and build Fort Duquesne, 153.  
 French war, 150.  
 Friends, the, 28.  
 Furnaces, anthracite coal used in, 271; iron, 280; charcoal, 282; Conemaugh, 334.  
 Furness, Thomas, 103-105.  
 Gallitzin, 329.  
 Gem of the Valley, 406.  
 George, Margaret M., 481.  
 George, Jesse and Rebecca, 560.  
 Gerhard, W. W., 492.  
 Germantown, Washington encamped at, 235.  
 Gettysburg, battle of, 253, 261.  
 Gilpin, Henry D., 482.  
 Ginter, Philip, discovers coal, 267.  
 Girard, Stephen, his wife, 414; donation of, 415; his early life, 503; character, 504; marriage, 505; appearance, 506; insanity of his wife, 506, 507; increase of wealth, 507; his nieces, 507, 508; ambition, 508; inconsistencies, 509; his justice and dress, 510; anecdotes of, 511-514; his will, 515, 516.  
 Girard College, 518.  
 Girard, Capt. John, 506.  
 Glendon, 405.  
 Glen Moore, 346.  
 Glenolden, 407.  
 Goddard, Paul B., 493.  
 Godman, John D., 490.



- Gookin, Gov. Charles, 147, 149.  
 Gordon, Patrick, Gov., 149; dies, 150.  
 Gordon, the historian, 158.  
 Gordon, 389.  
 Goths, the, visit America, 16.  
 Government, proposed change in, 138.  
 Governors, council of, 144; portraits of, 312; names of council, 144.  
 Great Britain's debt, 160; sends commissioners, 241; war of 1812, 246.  
 Greenland visited by Erikson, 16.  
 Greensburg, 336; Greenway, Robert, captain ship *Welcome*, 94.  
 Grenville, George, prime-minister, 160.  
 Gross, Samuel D., 492.  
 Grotius' belief upon the discovery of America, 18.  
 Growdon, Joseph, 144.  
 Guest, John, 146.  
 Gwynedd, 390.
- Hall, Independence, 175, 525, 526.  
 Hall, City, 541-544.  
 Hamilton, Andrew, 145; James, lieutenant-governor of Pennsylvania, 150; James, artist, 480.  
 Hancock, John, signer of Declaration, 178; General, 256.  
 Harding, William W., 498.  
 Hare, Robert, 493.  
 Harking, Thomas, 511.  
 Harrisburg, 310; manufactures of, 313.  
 Hartranft, J. F., governor of, 418, 432.  
 Hellertown, 390.  
 Henrietta, 358.  
 Henry, Patrick, quotation from, 160.  
 Henry, Mr., mayor of Philadelphia, 248.  
 Hill, Richard, 146.  
 Hill, Chestnut, 466.  
 Hill, Lemon, 548.  
 History, lessons of, 559, 560.  
 Hites, 364.  
 Hokendauqua, 392.  
 Hollanders, the, visit America, 19; conquer the Swedes, 453.  
 Hollidaysburg, 357.  
 Holm, a Swedish historian, 16.  
 Holme, Thomas, surveyor for Penn, 101.  
 Homer, 359.  
 Hook, Marcus, 135.  
 Hooker, Gen., 252.  
 Horner, W. E., 490.
- Hospitals, the Pennsylvania, 409-416; of University of Pennsylvania, 416; Lunatic, Harrisburg, 416; Insane, at Danville, 416; Lying-in, 415; Insane, at Warren, 418; Insane, at Dixmont, 419; German, Lackawanna, and Wilkesbarre, 420; United States, in Philadelphia, 464; Wills, 532; Pennsylvania, for Insane, 532, 533.  
 Hotel, Girard, 503.  
 Hotels, the, 535.  
 Howe, Lord, offers peace, 229; confers with committee, 233.  
 Howe, Sir William, commands British army, 234; possesses Philadelphia, 235; returns to England, 235.  
 Howard, 354.  
 Hyner, 372.
- Independence, Declaration of, 177, 525; Hall, 177, 525, 526.  
 Indiana, 360.  
 Indians, describe land, 53; welcome to whites, 54; their corn, game, buffalo, deer, 54; one custom, 97; agree with Penn, 100; complaint of, 106; plan of measuring lands, 106, 107; described by Penn, 111-113; their religion, 115; feasts and government, 116; origin of, 118; food and children of, 119, 120; employment of men, 121; diseases of, 122, 123; of remedies, 123-125; trouble with, 150; eastern treaty with, 154; worship of, 285.  
 Indies, West, 412.  
 Institute, Emmaus, 307.  
 Institute, Franklin, 480, 534, 535.  
 Institute, Military, 408.  
 Institution, Pennsylvania, for Deaf and Dumb, 531; Instruction of the Blind, 532.  
 Iron, production and deposits of, 279, 280; manufactured by coke, 283.  
 Irvineton, 376.  
 Irwin, 338.
- Jackson's, 377.  
 Jackson, Samuel, 488.  
 Jackson, Gen., 250, 513.  
 James II., King, 139.  
 James, Dr., 267.  
 James, Thomas C., 490.  
 Jennings, Solomon, 106.

- Jersey, West, 52, 53.  
 Jersey Shore, 370.  
 Johnstown, 332.  
 Johnson, David, 438.  
 Jones, Hon. Joel, 518.  
 Jordan, John, jun., 463.  
 Junkin, Rev. George, 430.  
 Jury, verdict of, in Penn's trial, 50, 51.  
  
 Keating, 372.  
 Keimer, printer, 149.  
 Keith, George, 139.  
 Keith, Sir William, made governor, 149.  
 King, Indian, 136.  
 Kingsail, town and fort, 34.  
 Kinzers, 304.  
 Kirkbride, Dr. Thomas, 416.  
 Kittanning Point, 326.  
 Kittattiny Mountain, 386.  
 Knox, John, 178.  
 Kuhn, Dr. Adam, 484.  
  
 Lafayette arrives in America, 234.  
 Lafayette College, 430.  
 Lancaster, 154; manufactures of, 305.  
 Lansdale, 390.  
 Lardner, Dr., 538.  
 Latrobe, 336.  
 League, Union, 466, 467.  
 Ledger, Public, 495, 496.  
 Lee, Gen., retreat of army of, 252.  
 Leechburg, 363.  
 Lehigh Gap, 393.  
 Leighton, 393.  
 Leidy, Joseph, 493.  
 Lewisburg, 378.  
 Lewistown, 318; beautiful situation, 322; Narrows, 323.  
 Lincoln, Abraham, inauguration of, 248; his call for troops, 249, 251.  
 Lloyd, Thomas, 129, 133, 134; dies, 142.  
 Lock, John, 38.  
 Lock Haven, 371.  
 Locomotives, construction of, 296.  
 Loe, Thomas, 38, 40.  
 Logan, Janies, 145; did not escape odium, 147; governs the colony, 150; contributes to war, 151; dies, 153.  
 Logan, the Mingo chief, 319; family butchered, and his revenge, 320; his plea for prisoner, 321; invited to council, 321; his letter, 321, 322; is shot, 322.  
  
 Logan House, 325; name of place, 351.  
 London Coffee-House, 524.  
 London Company, 19.  
 Lord's Committee, petition to, 56-58; petition favored, 59.  
 Lum, Mary or Polly, 505-506.  
 Lutherans, creed of, 201; their belief in education, 435.  
  
 Madoc, discoverer of America, 18.  
 Mahanoy Plane, 389.  
 Malcolm, Rev. Howard, 463.  
 Malvern, 300.  
 Mann's, 351.  
 Mann's choice, 353.  
 Manor, 338.  
 Manyunk, 382.  
 Marietta, 309.  
 Markham, Col. William, sails for America, 92; lands at New Castle, 94; appoints governor, 142.  
 Marshal, Edward, makes the famous walk, 106.  
 Martha, 353.  
 Martinsburg, 358.  
 Marysville, 314.  
 Masonic Temple, 535-538.  
 Mason and Dixon's Line, 155.  
 Mass meeting held, 162; recommends Continental Congress, and appoints committee, 162; resolutions of deputies, 163; instructs the assembly, 166, 167.  
 Mauch Chunk, coal of, 299; described, 393.  
 McKee's, 358.  
 McLellan, 490.  
 McMichael, Hon. Morton, 494.  
 Meade, Gen., 241.  
 Media, 422.  
 Meigs, Charles Delucena and John Forsyth, 491.  
 Menewe, or Minuit, Peter, 21.  
 Menonists, the, refuse to fight, 152, 203.  
 Merion, 299.  
 Methodists, the, 511.  
 Middletown, 306.  
 Mifflin, 317.  
 Mifflinburg, 378.  
 Milesburg, 353.  
 Millerstown, 317.  
 Mill Hall, 355.  
 Miller, Prof. Samuel, 442.

- Millroy, 351.  
 Milton, 368.  
 Mint, United States, 529-531.  
 Missionary, French, 318.  
 Mitchell, Thomas D., 492.  
 Mompesson, Roger, 146.  
 Monmouth, 241.  
 Montgomery, 368.  
 Moore, Nicholas, 95, 128, 130.  
 Moravians, the settlements of, 156; described, 235; of Wyalucing, 304; missions of, 390-393.  
 Morgan, Dr. John, 484.  
 Morris, Robert, 152; plan of bank, 243.  
 Morristown, army quarters at, 234; troops of, 243.  
 Morton, Samuel George, 491.  
 Mount Joy, 306.  
 Mount Union, 323.  
 Mount Dallas, 351.  
 Mount Carbon, 387.  
 Mount Pisgah, 393.  
 Mountain, Nesquehoning, 396.  
 Muncy, 369.  
 Munster, 34, 559.  
 Mutter, Dr. Thomas, 487, 492.  
  
 Nassau, Fort, built, 20.  
 Natrona, 364.  
 Neagle, John, 480.  
 Neshaminy, the river, 101.  
 New Castle, fort erected at, 147.  
 New Jersey, province of, 53, 54.  
 Newkirk, Matthew, 354.  
 Newport, 317.  
 Newspapers, 494-503.  
 Newton, Hamilton, 223.  
 Norris, Isaac, 529.  
 Norristown, 382.  
 North America, bank of, 243.  
 North, Chief Justice, sets bounds, 59; draws up Pennsylvania's charter, 61; his measure in parliament, 180.  
 Northmen visit America, 16.  
 Northumberland, 367.  
 Nottingham, place where George Fox was imprisoned, 28.  
  
 Oil, description of, 283; where found, 284; speculations in, 285-287, 293, 294; boring for, 287, 292; transportation of, 292, 293; production, 293.  
 Oil Creek, 287.  
 Onoko Glen, 398.  
  
 Osceola, 355.  
 Owen Griffith, 144.  
  
 Packer, Hon. Asa, 391, 435.  
 Packerstown, 393.  
 Paoli, 299.  
 Paper money issued, 152.  
 Pardee, Mr. A., 430, 432.  
 Pardee Hall, 430, 431.  
 Park, Fairmount, 546, 547.  
 Parliament exports tea, 162.  
 Paxton Boys, the, 156.  
 Peale, Charles Wilson and Rembrandt, 476.  
 Pearson, a friend of Penn, 95.  
 Pemberton, Phineas, member of council, 144.  
 Penitentiary, Eastern State, 531; Western State, 423.  
 Penn, Admiral, Sir William, 34; a death-bed request, 42; dying-words, 43.  
 Penn, Mrs. Hannah, mother of William, 35-37; talk with the admiral upon William, 41; removes the governor of the province, 149.  
 Penn, William, birth of, 34; enters Oxford, and is expelled, 38; is sent to Paris, 39; to Dublin, and meets Loe, 40; works of, 40; trial of, 46; sent to Newgate, 52; petition to king, 56; petition granted, and charter given, 61; receives deed for land, 75; astonishment at name of territory, 76; wishes to change it, 76, 77; characteristic letter, 77; his publication, 78, 80; farewell to king, and fitting out ships, 80; colloquy with king, 80, 81; leave of family, 83; letter to family, 83; letter to be read on arrival of colony in America, 92, 93; death of mother, 93; goes to America, 94; takes formal possession, 95; speech to Indians, 99, 100; returns to England, 109; leaves letter, 129, 130; improves Philadelphia, 142; mortgages the province, 148; death of, 148; will of, 149; statue of, 415.  
 Penn, John and Thomas, sons of William, 102.  
 Penn, John, grandson of William, 107; arrival in province, 156; opinion of congressional resolutions, 179; favors the crown, 180.



- Penn, William, jun., goes to province, 146.
- Penn, Thomas, goes to province, 150; leaves for England, 151; applied to for assistance, 410.
- Pennsylvania, town of, 338.
- Penn Haven Junction, 400.
- Pennsburg manor, 108.
- Pennsylvania, administration of government in, and religious toleration in, 199; financial system, 207, 208; literature of, 208; first school, printing press and newspaper in, 209; constitution of, 211-228; part in Revolution, 229; warfare with Indians, 245; quota of troops, 251; face of country, 262; geology of, 263; lakes and rivers, 264; climate, 265; politics of, 467; governors of, 467-469; artists of, 471; medical colleges, 484; journals and journalists, 494; invitation to nations, 557, 558; regret of, 558.
- Peringskiöld, John, the antiquary, 16.
- Perry, Commodore Oliver H., victory of on Lake Erie, 247.
- Philadelphia, relation to State, and laying out of, 520, 521; advantages of, 520, 521; her squares, 521; increase in growth, 522; extent of, 523; her buildings, 523-527; old bell in, 527, 528.
- Phillipsburg, 355.
- Phoenixville, 383.
- Physick, Philip Syng, 488.
- Pilgrims, the, 453.
- Pittsburg, 339; institutions of, 344; Western University of, 345.
- Plough, introduction of the, 311.
- Pollock, Ex-Gov., 432, 433.
- Pontiac, the Indian sachem, 155, 336.
- Portage, 332.
- Port Clinton, 386.
- Pottstown, 383.
- Powtaxat, or Delaware River, 23.
- Pownall, Gov., 304.
- Priestley, Dr. Joseph, residence of, 368.
- Printz, John, 23.
- Prison, Philadelphia county, 532.
- Prospect Rock, 401.
- Proud the historian, 135.
- Province and territories divided into counties, 109; judges of, 128.
- Puritans, the, 456.
- Pusey, Caleb, 144.
- Quakers, the, description of, 28; tenets of, 29; abuse of, 45; purchase land, 53; schism among the, 139; refuse to fight, 152, 183; German protest, 196; liberty of, 198; in the minority, 200; views of war, 250.
- Queen Anne orders militia, 148.
- Railroads, introduction of, 295, 296; first in America at Quincy, 296; Pennsylvania finished, 298; Pennsylvania branches, 298; Philadelphia and Erie, 379; Philadelphia and Reading, 382; Pickering Valley Branch, 383; Chester Valley, 383; Lebanon Valley Branch, 389; Northern Pennsylvania and Lehigh Valley Branch, 390; Beaver Meadow, Hazleton, and Mahanoy, 400; Nescopee Valley, 401; Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western, 406; Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Baltimore, 407.
- Rankin, Dr. D. M., 425.
- Ravino Gap, 358.
- Raymond, Rosseter W., 432.
- Read, Thomas Buchanan, 480.
- Reade, Charles, groundwork for novels, 308, 309.
- Reading, town of, 385.
- Recorder, the, in the trial of Penn, 47; charge to the jury, 49.
- Redington, 403.
- Reedsville, 351.
- Renovo, 372.
- Republicans, the, 467.
- Revolution, war of, foreshadowed, 163, 301.
- Ridgeway, 374.
- Ridge, Landis, 390.
- Ridley Park, 407.
- Riots, the, of 1851, 303.
- Roaring Spring, 358.
- Rob Roy of Pennsylvania, 301.
- Rochester, Lord, 141.
- Rockville, 314.
- Rockport, 401.
- Rodman, 358.
- Rogers, Robert E., 492.
- Rothermel, Peter F., 481.
- Round Island, 372.
- Rush, Dr. Benjamin, 118, 119, 125, 484, 488; James his son, 488.

- Sachem, a speech of a, 127.  
 Saltsburg, 363.  
 Sandy Ridge, 355.  
 Saxonburg, 365.  
 Schools, Reform, 421; for Feeble-Minded Children, 421; Normal, Juniata Valley, 361; Edinborough, Mansfield, Kultztown, Bloomsburg, 444; West Chester, 445, 446; Shippensburg, 445, 448; Sagamore, 445; High at Pittsburg, Central at Philadelphia, Allentown, Carbondale, Chester, Harrisburg, Lock Haven, Norristown, Pottsville, 447; Reading, Scranton, Titusville, Williamsport, York, 449; Private, 449, 450; of Design, for Women, 481; systems in cities, 452-455; Evening, 453, Medical, 483, 484.  
 Schooley's Mountain, 397.  
 Schuylkill Haven, 386.  
 Schwenkfelders, the, refuse to fight, 152; description of, 204.  
 Scotch-Irish, 310, 319, 369; Presbyterianians, 454.  
 Scottdale, 366.  
 Scott, Thomas A., 481.  
 Sellersville, 390.  
 Seminary, Crozier Theological, 408.  
 Sergeant, 375.  
 Servants, provision for, 78.  
 Shackamaxon, site of Kensington, 97.  
 Shamokin coal region, 367; town of, 389.  
 Sharon Hill, 407.  
 Sharp Mountain, 387.  
 Sharpsburg, 365.  
 Sheltering arms, 423.  
 Shippen, Edward, 144, 145; Dr. William, 484.  
 Shunk, Gov., 297.  
 Sidney, Lord, 141.  
 Simcoe, Gen., spares the treaty tree, 244.  
 Simcock, F., 129.  
 Sinnemahoning, 372.  
 Sipes, William B., 295, 307.  
 Skralingaland, 16.  
 Slatington, 393.  
 Smith, Timothy, sheriff of Buck's county, 103, 105; Dr. George, 264; Dr. William, 324; Rev. William, 427; Joseph, 438; Henry H., 491; Richard Somer, 518.  
 Snowden, Hon. James Ross, 530, 531.  
 Societies, Pennsylvania Historical, why delayed, 456; original members, and resolutions of, 459; place of first meeting, 460; next meeting-place, 461; bequest to, 461; art galleries of, 481; Presbyterian and Baptist, 463-481; American Philosophical, 153.  
 Somers, Lord, 141.  
 Sonman, 332.  
 South Carolina, under Gen. Jackson, 250.  
 Spencer, Robert, friend of Penn, 38.  
 Square, Independence, 528.  
 Stamp Act, 160; repealed, 161.  
 Stanwix, Fort, 369.  
 State House, 525.  
 Staughton, Rev. Mr., 511.  
 Steigel, William Henry, 280, 281.  
 Stephens, Alexander H., 251; Thaddeus, 251; home of, 305.  
 Stephenson, George, 296.  
 Stillé, Alfred, 491.  
 Stirling, 373.  
 St. Mary's, 373.  
 Stony Creek, 400.  
 Story, Thomas, 144.  
 Street, Girard, 503.  
 Stuart, Gilbert, 477.  
 Sullivan, Gen., taken prisoner, 232; destroys Indian towns, 242.  
 Sully, Thomas, 476-480.  
 Summit Hill, 397.  
 Sumter, Fort, 251.  
 Sunbury, 366.  
 Susquehanna, settlements on the, 155.  
 Swedes, the, visit America, 16; their first church, 24; their manners and customs, 25, 26; drinks of the, 27.  
 Switchback, the, 396.  
 Tamanend, 399.  
 Tannery, 401.  
 Taxation resisted by settlers, 53.  
 Tarentum, 364.  
 Taylor, Charles, 129.  
 Tea, tax on, 161; fate of all sent to Philadelphia, New York, Boston, and Charlestown, 162.  
 Thomas, Gov. George, offends the Quakers, 150.  
 Tomhickon, 379.  
 Tom Moore's cottage, 382.  
 Tories, the, 189; join with Indians in fighting, 242.

- Treaty of peace, 244.  
 Trenchard, Sir John, 142.  
 Trumbull the poet, 25.  
 Tunnel, the Alleghany Mountain, 229, 363.  
 Turner, Robert, 128, 129.  
 Tyrone, 324.  
  
 Union, 376.  
 Unionville, 353.  
 United States, mint of, 531; original number of States, 551; slavery, 552; increase of States and territory, 553; manufactures of, 553, 554; men, women, and literature of, 554, 555; patriots, and their government of, 555, 556; invitation sent by Penn to the, 556; retrospective view of, 558; prophecy, 559.  
 Universities, Pennsylvania, 153, 427-430; Lehigh, 391, 435; Lincoln, 434; Lewisburg, 438; Western Pennsylvania, 430.  
 Usseling, William, 20.  
  
 Vail, 353,  
 Valley Forge, 241, 383.  
 Van Buening, a Dutch ambassador, 204.  
 Vermont, boys of, 223.  
 Vespucius, Americus, 19.  
 Vessels sent out by Penn, 53.  
 Vineland the Good, 16.  
  
 Wagner Free Institute of Science, 533, 534.  
 Wallace, John William, 457, 461, 462.  
 Wallacetown, 356.  
 Waynesburg, 346.  
 Wanstead, town of, 34.  
 War, Mexican, 312; the grasshopper, 317.  
 Warren, 375.  
 Washington, Gen., sent on mission, 153; appointed commander-in-chief, 175; letter to Congress, 175; pew of, 199; replies to Lord Howe, 230; gains victory, 234; meets Lafayette, 234; retreats to Chester, 235; his mission, 552.  
 Watson, John, 105, 442.  
 Watsontown, 368.  
  
 Wayne, Anthony, 300.  
 Wayne, 370.  
 Weber, Paul, 480.  
 Weems, the historian, 100.  
 Weinport, 393.  
 Welch, William, 128.  
 Welsh, settlements of the, 330.  
 Werelius, Prof. O., 18.  
 Wertmuller, Adolph Ulric, 480.  
 West, Benjamin, the painter, birth, 471; first attempt at his art, 472; his first school, 472; improvises a paint-brush, 473; is presented with all materials for painting, 473; visit and criticism in Italy, 474; death of wife, followed by his own, 475.  
 Wharton, Thomas L., 458.  
 Whigs, the, 189, 467.  
 Whiskey Rebellion, 245.  
 White, Rev. William, 193.  
 Whitefield, George, 150, 310.  
 White Haven, 401.  
 Wickersham, Dr., report of, 447.  
 Wilcox, 374.  
 Wilkinsburg, 339.  
 William and Mary, 139.  
 Williamsburg, 359.  
 Williamsport, 369.  
 Wilson, a trader, 104.  
 Wineland, the Good, 16.  
 Wise, Gov. Henry A., 553.  
 Witherspoon, John, 177, 552.  
 Wolfsburg, 353.  
 Wood, Dr. George B., 493; William, 128.  
 Worden, Sir John, agent for the Duke of York, 56; speech of, 56-58.  
 Woman in the Wilderness, 204.  
 Wright, Susanna, 308.  
 Wrightstown, 103; meeting-house at, 106.  
 Wrightsville, 347.  
 Wyoming Valley, massacre at, 242.  
  
 Yates, James, 103; employed by the governor, 106.  
 Yellow-fever at Philadelphia, 509.  
 York, Duke of, 34, 94.  
 Y Switches, 357.  
  
 Zinzendorf, Count, 205, 390.



## AUTHORS CONSULTED FOR THIS HISTORY.

---

- ACRELIUS, ISRAEL. "History of New Sweden."  
ADAMS, W. T. "Petrolia."  
ALLIBONE'S "Dictionary of Authors."  
ALLEN'S, THADDEUS, "Inquiry into American Union."  
BANCROFT'S "History of United States."  
BOWEN, ELL. "Pictorial Sketch-Book of Pennsylvania."  
CHILDS, GEORGE W. "Ledger Almanac."  
CLARKSON'S "Life of William Penn."  
COFFIN, CHARLES CARLETON (Carleton). "Four Years of Fighting."  
CUNNINGHAM, ALLAN. "British Painters."  
DADDOW'S "Practical American Miner."  
DAY, SHERMAN. "Historical Collections of Pennsylvania."  
DUPONCEAU. "Memoirs of Historical Society of Pennsylvania."  
FERRIS'S "Original Settlement of the Delaware."  
FRANKLIN INSTITUTE, Journal of.  
GALT, JOHN. "Life, Studies, and Works of Benjamin West."  
GORDON'S "Life of William Penn."  
GREELEY, HORACE. "American Conflict."  
HARRIS, SAMUEL.  
HAZARD, SAMUEL. "Annals of Pennsylvania."  
JUMEAU'S "History of the United States."  
LOSSING, BENJAMIN. "Civil War."  
PROUD'S "History of Pennsylvania."  
SIPES, WILLIAM. "Pennsylvania Railroad."<sup>1</sup>  
SNOWDEN'S "Washington Medals."  
"Statistics of Public Charities of Pennsylvania," 1870-71-74.  
"Statistics of Board of Education of Pennsylvania," 1874.  
SYPHER'S "School History of United States."  
VAN BUENING, a Dutch ambassador. Extract from Work.  
WALLACE, JOHN WILLIAM. "Address before Historical Society of Pennsylvania."  
WEEMS'S "Life of William Penn."  
WHARTON, T. I. "Notes on Literature of Pennsylvania."  
WOOD, GEORGE B. "Historical and Biographical Memoirs."

ANNIE E. GIFFORD has been the amanuensis, and given the author much assistance in compiling this History.

<sup>1</sup> The author has been much indebted to this book in preparing this History. See p. 295.













